

ML

My CENEALOGY COLLECTION





CHARLES ROSCOE HOWLAND BROTHERS AND FOREBEARS

Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2019





The Author
The late Charles Roscoe Howland, Brigadier-General, U. S. Army, Retired.

A BRIEF

GENEALOGICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL RECORD

of

CHARLES ROSCOE HOWLAND BROTHERS AND FOREBEARS

By
CHARLES ROSCOE HOWLAND

Late President of
The Pilgrim John Howland Society

THE TUTTLE PUBLISHING CO., INC. RUTLAND, VERMONT



This Book is Dedicated
to the Memory of
MY PARENTS
WILLIAM PERRY HOWLAND

and

ESTHER ELIZABETH (LEONARD) HOWLAND

with reverential love



PREFACE

by the EDITOR

In General Charles R. Howland's approach to the English ancestry of the three Howland brothers, emigrants to New England, he uses the meager and unsatisfactory report of Col. Joseph Lemuel Chester—in the "New England Historical & Genealogical Register," Vol. 34—and attempts to bridge the gap with more or less imaginative data, but suggests his story as merely a basis for further investigation.

Tracing his own ancestry, back to Pilgrim John, General Howland runs counter to Franklyn Howland's "Genealogy" and to the opinion of the "General Society of Mayflower Descendants." He offers family tradition and certain data which do not give actual proof of his descent from Pilgrim John. It has been thought best to leave his account as the General wrote it, hoping to cause discussion which is often preliminary to solution.

In the April, 1888 issue of "The New England Historical & Genealogical Register" Mr. L. M. Howland, Esq. of New York City writes:

"Previous to 1830, nothing had ever been done to connect the family of Howland in this country with those of the same name living in England during the period in which Plymouth Colony had its foundation; but a few years later a descendant of Henry Howland (brother of Pilgrim John) brought over a copy of a genealogy which had been discovered among the records of the Heralds' College of London. This memorandum has since been extensively circulated, and accepted as bearing a positive relation to John Howland of the 'Mayflower.'

"The record began with John Howland, citizen and salter of London, and claimed that it was through his son John, who married Emme, daughter of Nicholas Revell, that Pilgrim Howland was descended."

In this compilation, extensive use has been made of the "Genealogical Notes" of Mr. Lewis M. Howland, which in 1945 were in the possession of Mr. William Howland, President of the "Pilgrim John Howland Society," and which were generously made available to General Charles R. Howland.

EMMA BOUTELLE HAWLEY

Cleveland, Ohio



TABLE OF CONTENTS

											Page
Howlands in Engla	nd	٠	•				•				1
Howlands in Ameri	ica	•	•	•		•		•			13
Other Ancestral Li	nes:										
Bacon .								•			167
Baker .											168
Bulkeley											173
Burgess			•						•		177
Ellis .											179
Emerson									•		192
Firestone						•		•			197
Freeman											199
Kimball		•		•	•	•	•				201
Leonard						•	•	•		••	203
Long .			•			•					220
Perry .				•			•	•			222
Pierce .								•			228
Porter .			•		•	•		•	•		232
Prudden							•				237
Seamans					•			•		•	246
Shove .				•				•		•	248
Thatcher (T	hach	er)						•	•	•	254
Ward .	•							•			256
Yeats .			•				•				261



LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

The Author, Charles Roscoe Howland			•	v	ø	v	Front is piece	
								Page
The Ancient Arms of Howland		n	٠	4	d	**	•	1
John Howland House	•	-	•	•	•	•	٠	13
Fort Hill Map		4	•	ü	•	2	•	17
The House of Jacob Mitchel .	•	•	*		•	•	•	39
The Mitchell House	•	•	•	•	•	v	•	43
The Author with His Brothers			ø	9		ø	٠	73
The Author with Father, Mother, I	Broth	ers	٠	9	à	•	۵	7 5



ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I am greatly indebted for assistance by the following:

NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL & GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY, Boston, Mass.

CONGRESSIONAL LIBRARY, Washington, D. C.

WESTERN RESERVE HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Cleveland, O.

Public Library, Boston, Mass.

ROSALYN S. NASH, Washington, D. C.

CLEVELAND PUBLIC LIBRARY.

G. B. SPAULDING, Washington, D. C.

Francis Richmond Sears, Swansea, Mass.

LEON CLARK HILLS, Washington, D. C.

JOHN H. PAINE, Harwich, Mass.

EMMA BOUTELLE HAWLEY, Cleveland, O.

JEROME A. RINGROSE, 4 Harrington Square, London, N. W., Eng.

C. B. MUELLER, Cleveland, O.

MISS P. W. SHIELD, 27, West Side, Wandsworth Common, London, S. W. 18, Eng.

MARY J. HEATON, Cleveland.

McClure M. Howland, New York, N. Y.

HOWLAND F. ATWOOD, Hartland, Vt.

G. W. HOWLAND WHITE, Liverpool, Nova Scotia, Can.

C. R. H.



INTRODUCTION

Upon retirement from active service in the Regular Army, the request of my beloved parents, that in such an event I publish our Howland and Leonard Lines, took precedence over all other desires or requests, and that activity has occupied my full time.

It was soon apparent that other Lines joining our two were limbs on our Family Tree. Those other Lines had their Forebears, and research became exceedingly attractive.

Libraries and able professional research agents assisted.

Soon the limited vision was replaced by a broader vision, and we became aware that such Forebears were a part of the Group which through the generations had brought the spark of civilization through Europe and England to early New England, where it blazed into full brilliance in the "Pilgrim Compact" and constitutions of other British commonwealths in New England, and continued to grow in brilliance through the Federal Constitution in 1787.

We are very modest about this because undoubtedly a large part of immigrants that came to New England during that time, from England and Holland, and many since, were also a part of that trend carrying the spark of civilization to the West.

Our References show the successive trends, stopping places, and continued trends by that Group to the West, and we hope that the data in this Book will assist some of them in compiling the record of their Forebears on those broad lines.

CHARLES ROSCOE HOWLAND

University Club 3813 Euclid Avenue Cleveland 15, Ohio Aug. 15, 1946







THE ANCIENT ARMS OF HOWLAND

HOWLANDS IN ENGLAND

AND

AMERICA

1. John Howland, Lord of the Manor of Newport Pond, Co. Essex, evidently a descendant from "Monsire" Richard Howland; d. between Nov. 8, 1546 (date of his will), and Apr. 12, 1550 (date his will was proved); m. Annes ().

In addition to the Manor of Newport Pond, with St. Leonard's Hospital there, he owned two messuages on Friday Street, Parish of St. Marguerite Moyses, that were on lease to Thomas Berthelett, a citizen and stationer of London. (In-

quisition October 24, 1555.)

In his will he made a bequest to the "hygh altare" in the church yard of New port; under the law of primogeniture he willed his estate to his eldest son, with life tenure to his wife; he directed that his body be buried in the church yard of Newport; he nominated his "faythfull" wife executrix and his eldest son assistant to her in that duty. In the probate record of the will the Latin name of his wife is "AGNETE." Under the custom in use of the law of primogeniture the name of the eldest son and heir is the only one given in the will. There was a John the younger, but we do not know the names or number of other children.

(2) I. John, (the elder)

II. John (the younger) is known as John Howland, Senior of Wyckin Bonant, d. at Wyckin Bonant between Aug. 1, 1567 (date of will) and Nov. 18, 1567 (date will was proved); m. Elizabeth (), who survived John and as his widow d. at Wyckin Bonant between Mar. 12, 1574 (date of will) and Nov. 25, 1576 (date will was proved).

JOHN (the younger) named his children and gave small bequests to them and certain household goods to his wife. But under the law of primogeniture he willed his estate to his eldest son John with life tenure to his wife, who in her will named the children then living. Both wills were proved at Stortford.

Children: The eldest son only is mentioned here.

i. John, of Wyckin, b. before 1566; d. Apr. 15, 1593 at Newport, Essex, and was bur. there April 19, 1593 as Johes Howland, yeoman; m. July 15, 1576 at Newport, Blanche, dau. of William and wife Gunnora (Thorowgood) Nightingale of Newport. Blanche survived John and m. 2nd, May 20, 1596, at Newport, Peter Wyke of Middle Temple, and d. Oct. 13, 1624. She was bur. Oct. 19, 1624 at Newport. Peter, surviving Blanche, m. 2nd, Frances (probably) Erlington, and d. in 1648.

John of Newport, yeoman, made his will Apr. 10, 1593, which was proved June 12, 1593 by the relict. Oct. 19, 1624, at Stortford, Peter Wike was commissioned to administer the above goods not administered by Blanche.

In his will John mentioned all of his children except Geoffrey who, born soon

after John's death, was baptized July 29, 1593.

Children of John and Blanche: Only the 7th and last child is mentioned here. vii Geoffrey, posthumous son: bapt. July 29, 1593 at Newport; d. between Jan. 25, 1677 (date of will) and Oct. 7, 1680 (date will was proved); m. Grisogan, dau. of John Langley of London, who, surviving Geoffrey, d. as his widow between Aug. 24, 1680 (date of will) and Oct. 7, 1680 (date will proved).

The statement in Vol. IV, "History of County Surrey," that Geffrey How-LAND was a brother of Sir John Howland is not correct. He was a cousin of Sir John Howland and wife Cecely, and Cecely called him cousin when she selected him to be sole executor of her will dated "2. Jan. 1655." The record of proof of the

will is as follows:

"Proved P. C. C. 24 May 1656 by Jeoffrey Howland the sole Exor." Recorded 181 Berkeley.

JEFFREY HOWLAND made his will Jan. 25, 1677. He made his wife Grisogon with his two sons Samuel and John executors of his will. The will was proved in the P. C. C. Feb. 6, 1679-80 by Samuel and John Howland with power reserved for Grisogon to petition.

"Dec. 13, 1686. Administration granted to Elizabeth Howland the relict and administratrix of the goods of John Howland Esq., whilst he lived son and surviving Exor. and residuary legatee named in the will of Jeffrey Howland Esq., dec'd. to administer the goods according to the tenor of the will, for the said John Howland and Samuel Howland Esq. the sons and two of the Exors. died without fully administering Grisogon Howland the relict of the said Jeffrey died without taking up execution." Recorded in 21 and 70 Bath.

In 1648 Geoffrey purchased the Manor of Tooting Beck from his cousins, Sir John and wife Cecely Howland.

Geoffrey and his descendants were strict Conformists, and ample recorded genealogical data on them are available in the public archives of England. A brief of those genealogical data is stated by Col. Chester, in table form, in his report to Mr. L. M. HOWLAND.

2. John Howland, Lord of the Manor of Newport Pond, citizen and salter of London; b. at Newport Pond; d. between July 28, 1568 (date of will) and July 28, 1570 (date will was proved); m. Agnes called Anne, dau. of John Greenway of Cley, Co. Norfolk, or of Wiveton, Co. Norfolk, and sister of Ralph Greenway, Alderman of London, Master of the Grocers Company. Agnes (Anne) survived John and m. 2nd, Aug. 7, 1571 at St. Peter le Poor, John Quarles, citizen and draper of London, who d. and was bur. there Nov. 25, 1577. Agnes (Anne) d. between Feb. 24, 1586 (date of will) and May 6, 1588 (date bur. at St. Peter le Poor). Her will was proved June 1, 1588.

JOHN bur. a servant (employee) or family client named ROBERT ROUKE (RUCK) July 27, 1550.

In addition to his title with accompanying estate he owned property at Newport and at Widdington, Co. Essex. In London he owned property on Friday Street, on Seething's Lane in the Parish of Alhalos Barking, and on Distafe Lane. In Co. Hertford he owned Lyttle Haddam.

He appointed his wife Agnes (Anne) executrix of his will, and gave to her his plate. In that period, education by apprenticeship was the custom, and he charged his executrix to "put and set forth by said children in good and honest places, usages, and government, to honest persons for their good education and preferment in her lifetime, as my especial trust is in her."

After providing for burial expenses, etc., he directed that the remainder of his estate be divided into three parts. He reserved the first part to himself and executrix, with which she was to pay his debts, legacies and bequests. The second part was to go to his wife Agnes for her own use. The third part was to be divided equally among his children on arrival of each at the age of 21, and if any should die before arrival at that age, such portion should be divided among those remaining.

John was a pronounced Non-conformist. Under his views and beliefs he omitted mention in his will of his eldest son Richard, because Richard abandoned Non-conformism, adopted Conformism and became a priest of the ritualistic church. John refused the law of primogeniture in making his will and left his exceedingly profitable business of salter to his second son John, and trained him in that work.

By bequeathing his Manor estate at Newport Pond to his second son John, with life tenure in his widow Agnes, John deprived Richard, his eldest son, of the family title and arms associated therewith. That was the basis upon which Queen Elizabeth, taking sides with Richard, created in his honor a new coat-of-arms.¹

Children of John and Agnes (Anne):

I. RICHARD. not mentioned in his father's will; mentioned by his brother William the elder, by Queen Elizabeth, by Burke, and by George Smith's "National Biography;" b. 1540 at Newport Pond near Saffron, Walden, Co. Essex; d. unmarried June 23, 1600 and was bur. in the cathedral at Peterborough.

He chose the priesthood as a career and was admitted pensioner at Christs College, Cambridge, 18 March 1557-8, from whence he went to St. John's College, where he was graduated B. A. 1560-1. He was elected a fellow of Peterhouse, Nov. 11, 1562, where he was given the degree of M. A. in 1564. He was incorporated M. A. of Oxford July 9, 1567, and became Rector of Stathern, Leicestershire in 1569. His theological degrees were B. D. 1570 and D. D. 1578.

His rejection of Non-conformism and adoption of ritualism, contrary to the trend in England at that time, offended his father who, by omitting RICHARD's name from his will and by bequeathing all his estate to other children, and by be-

¹ "Howland, Richd., D. D. Cambridge, son and heir of London, gent. Arms confirmed and crest given by patent 20, Jan. 1584-5, and to descendants of his father by Cook. Harl M. S. 1359, fo. 120; loth San. in Add. M. S. 14295, fo. 45. See Harl. M. S. 5887, fo. 2b, for Howland Counsellor of Gray's Ihn, Sir Giles; the three brothers knighted by King James".

queathing to John, his second son, as though he were the eldest son, disowned Richard and cut him off from inheritance of rightful estate.

Queen Elizabeth welcomed Richard as a convert from Non-conformism to ritualism, and took measures to reward him. She took action to restore his right to family arms by recognizing him as son and heir of John of London, Gent. She took further action to attract the other descendants of that Non-conformist John, to ritualism, by using Richard's right to family arms, as restored by her, as a suitable base for bestowal of special arms on him, which was accomplished not by discontinuing the family arms but by variation as follows: a change in color from Sable to Argent, and in the crest a change from the Lion to a Leopard. Her action here did not displace the family arms. She was seeking converts to ritualism, and her hope was that some of the descendants would abandon Non-conformism and family arms, and adopt ritualism and use the special arms granted by her to Richard, as shown by language in her grant of those special arms as follows: "Howland, Richd, D. D. Cambridge, son and heir of John of London, Gent., arms confirmed and crest given by patent, 20, Jan. 1584-5, and to descendants of his father."

Some of the descendants remaining in England did abandon Non-conformism and the family arms and adopt ritualism and use the special coat-of-arms granted to Richard, but other descendants, and more especially those through John, second son of John, citizen and salter, quite generally continued as Non-conformists and used the more ancient coat-of-arms.

Queen Elizabeth went further in rewarding Richard for adopting ritualism. In 1584 she disapproved a proposed assignment of Richard as Dean of Peterborough, and raised him to be Bishop of Peterborough, accompanied by the remark that he was "worthy of a better place."

- (3) II. John
 - III. WILLIAM, bapt. Nov. 3, 1542; d. before 1548.
 - IV. Robert, bapt. Sept. 7, 1545; d. between Apr. 20, 1606 (date of will) and July 28, 1607 (date will approved); no record of m.; was Counseller of Gray's Inn, Middlesex, Esq.
 - V. RALPH, bapt. Dec. 16, 1546; d. before 1558.
 - VI. WILLIAM the elder, bapt. Aug. 24, 1548; d. between Oct. 11, 1585 (date of will) and Jan. 5, 1587 (date will was proved); no record of m.; was a mercer of London. In his will he made bequests to each of his living brothers, to relatives and friends. He bequeathed a nest of silver and gilt bowles to his mother. He made bequest in his will of 100 marks to his brother RICHARD.
 - VII. Giles, bapt. Sept. 20, 1549; d. between July 9, 1608 (date of will) and Aug. 31, 1608 (date will was proved), and was bur. at Streatham July 11, 1608; m. 1st, Feb. 16, 1573-4, at St. Bartholomew Exchange London, Anne, dau. of Sir John Hart of London, knight, who was bur. Jan. 10, 1581-2 at that Exchange; m. 2nd, in 1582-3, Elizabeth, dau. of Sir John Rivers, knight and lord mayor of London in 1573, who was bur. Apr. 30, 1605, at Streatham, without issue.

GILES was a citizen and grocer of London. In 1599 he received by alienation the Manor of "Tooting Bec" in Streatham, Co. Surrey. July

23, 1603 he was knighted and is referred to as Sir Giles Howland, Lord of the Manor of Tooting Bec.

Children of Giles and Anne:

i. John, bapt. Dec. 5, 1583, at St. Bartholomew Exchange, London; d. between Mar. 12, 1649 (date of will) and Nov. 13, 1649 (date will was proved), and was bur. Nov. 7, 1649, at Stretham; m. May 3, 1608. at St. Helens Bishopgate, Cecily, dau. of John Suzan of London, Gent. who survived John and d. between Jan. 2, 1656 (date of will) and May 24, 1656 (date will was proved), and was bur. Apr. 18, 1656, at Streatham.

John as eldest son under law of primogeniture inherited the Manor of Tooting Bec, which he and Cecily sold in 1648 to cousin Jeffrey Howland.

John was knighted March 1, 1616-17; High Sheriff of Co. Surrey 1619; and Justice of the Peace 1623.

Children of John and Cecily: i John, bap. Aug. 28, 1617; bur. Aug. 30, 1617 at Streatham. ii John, age 6 months in 1623; bur. Apr. 12, 1627, at Streatham. iii Giles, bur. Apr. 28, 1625, at Streatham. iv Susanna, bapt. May 3, 1621, at Streatham; m. Nov. 20, 1637, Henry Noel Esq., younger brother of Baptist 3d Viscount Campden.

ii. Matthew, bapt. Feb. 1, 1585-6; d. Jan. 7, 1648-9; m. Frances, dau. of Edward Fossett, Esq. of Marybone, Co. Middlesex, who survived Matthew and as his widow d. between April 25, 1668 (date of will) and May 18, 1668 (date will was proved) at Stepney, Co. Middlesex and was bur. in her 77th year at Marlebone (Marybone).

Sir Matthew, gentleman, knight, of Holborne, Co. Middlesex, and wife Frances had children. i Edward, d. in infancy. ii Elizabeth, bapt. Oct. 18, 1615, at Streatham; d. between Dec. 26, 1657 (date of will) and Dec. 23, 1658 (date will was proved); m. 1st, Aug. 10, 1632, Thomas Roberts, son and heir of Sir Walter Roberts, of Glasonbury, Co. Kent, Bart; m. 2nd, Dec. 11, 1658, Humxrey Scott of Hawkhurst, Co. Kent, Esq.

- iii. ELIZABETH, bapt. Nov. 27, 1586, at St. Bartholomew by the Exchange, London; m. Sept. 7, 1603, at Streatham, George Fitzwilliams, knight, of Marglethorpe, Co. Lincoln.
- iv. Mary, bapt. Jan. 28, 1587-8; bur. Apr. 19, 1623, at Streatham. No record of marriage was found.
- v. Anne, bapt. Apr. 27, 1589; d. before 1595.
- vi. Alice, bapt. Jan. 17, 1591-2; d. in 1609 and bur. at Streatham. No record of marriage was found.
- VIII. Benjamin, bapt. June 20, 1550; d. before 1558.
 - IX. WILLIAM the younger, bapt. Aug. 20, 1552; d. between Aug. 2, 1598 (date of will) and June 10, 1601 (date will was proved); was citizen and haber-dasher of London; he and brother Robert were executors of will of brother William the elder. No record of marriage was found.

- X. James, bapt. July 24, 1554; d. between March 31, 1598 (date of will) and May 20, 1598 (date will was proved); was Prebendary at Peterborough, and in 1587 Archdeacon of Northampton. No record of marriage was found.
- XI. Nicholas, bapt. Aug. 25, 1555; d. in Ireland; administration of his estate was granted to his brother John Apr. 24, 1607. No record of marriage was found.
- XII. CHRISTINA, bapt. Apr. 10, 1544; d. before 1658.

3. John Howland, Lord of the Manor of Newport Pond and salter of London, bapt. Aug. 10, 1541; d. intestate before Jan. 31, 1611-12; bur. in Church of St. Mary, White Chapel, Co. Middlesex; m. Emme, only dau. and heir of Nicholas Revell, citizen and grocer of London, who surviving John d. as his widow between Nov. 13, 1613 (date of will) and Sept. 10, 1614 (date will was proved).

Jan. 31, 1611-12 the court appointed widow Emme to administer the goods of her late husband John. Emme d. before she completed that duty and the court appointed son John Sept. 10, 1614, to administer the goods thus left unadmin-

istered by his mother EMME.

Under his father's will John inherited the Estates of Newport Pond and Widdington, after completion of life tenure by his mother Agnes, which carried the Lordship of Newport Pond, as Richard was not recognized in that will.

EMME made a will bequeathed "Residue to son John Cit. and Salter of London." John and Emme were pronounced Non-conformists, and one of the witnesses to the will of Emme was Ralph Thickens, a manufacturer of mirrors in London who m. Jane White and thus became brother-in-law of Rev. John Robinson, and also of Deacon John Carver.

There is a genealogical record of the Howland Family in the Heralds College in London, in which it is stated that Pilgrim John Howland was descended through John and Emme (Revell) Howland from John Howland, citizen and salter of London, and Agnes.

Children of John Howland and Emme:

- (4) I. John
 - II. Nicholas, citizen and salter in London; d. between May 13, 1612 (date of will) and May 19, 1612 (date will was proved); no evidence of marriage was found.

NICHOLAS made bequests: to his mother; to his sister MARGARET, wife of USSABIE CASBYE, he gave "the lease of my farm by Castor" Co. Northampton; to friends; and the residue to his brother John whom he appointed sole executor of his will.

- III. Margaret, bur. Dec. 14, 1624, at Castor, Co. Northampton; m. Ussable Casbye (Catesbie) of Castor, Co. Northampton. There was issue.
- 4. John Howland, Lord of the Manor of Newport Pond, citizen and salter of London in his will—April 21, 1651—identified himself as "Gentleman"; d. at St. Saviour Southwark, London, between Apr. 13, 1655 (date of codicil to his will) and March 21, 1656-7 (date will was proved); m. A—— who d. before May 28,

1646, as her son Humphrey who made his will on that date bequeathed to his dau. Anne "all the pewter marked with A. H. which was her grandmother's". Her death was well before her husband John made his will Apr. 21, 1561. He did not mention her.

The black death plague epidemics struck down great numbers of persons in his generation and in the generation of his children who remained in England. On his line it took his wife and all his descendants in England, as also it did in many other families. During those epidemics fear of public contact practically stopped the filing of vital statistics data and the keeping of such records. The great London fire in 1666 destroyed many of the records that were filed, including parish church registers kept by the Vicar General and by Bishop of London's registry.

As all of John's descendants in England had died and as free bequests by will in England were, with very few exceptions if any, not made to descendants who had gone to Plymouth Colony to set up a better government and more acceptable religious belief, John was limited in bequests in his will to the heirs of his sister

MARGARET.

John's father John d. intestate before Jan. 31, 1611-12, probably a victim of the black plague. On that date, Jan. 31, 1611-12, his mother Emme was appointed to administer the goods of her late husband John.

EMME made her will Nov. 13, 1613, which was proved Sept. 10, 1614. On that day, Sept. 10, 1614, her son John was appointed to administer the goods in his

father's estate left unadministered by his mother EMME.

Just there the situation, for some reason unknown, unless it was fear of contracting the plague or grief over loss of his wife, became most unusual, as John the son did not complete the administration of his father's goods. In fact he did not even start it, and the settlement of his father's estate, for which he was responsible, lay untouched and dormant for more than 11 years, when the court, June 21, 1626, appointed Robert Catesbie of Barnard's Inn, St. Andrews Holborn, as administrator of those goods of John Howland, "left unadministered by Emme the relict."

Such an act of omission by John explains his failure to record genealogical data associated with his life, unless he did so file and such data were destroyed by the great London fire in 1666. In any event it forces the genealogist to search elsewhere for necessary data.

The above omission is the more incomprehensible as this John, preceding that omission, was executor of the estate of his brother Nicholas and proved his will

May 19, 1612.

The Howland pedigree in the Heralds College in London states that Pilgrim John Howland was descended from John and Emme (Revell) Howland. It does not state that Pilgrim John Howland was a son of John and Emme. That generation was too early by one generation for Pilgrim John Howland. So the son John born from this marriage of John and A—— () was on the right line in that pedigree, of the right age, and a brother of Humphrey Howland.

Children of John and wife A—— () Howland, not necessarily in order of birth. It is not known what children they may have had, and who died, before Humphrey established his residence in St. Swithin in 1625.

George, d. intestate and was bur. Feb. 14, 1643 at St. Dunstans.

GEORGE was a merchant of St. Dunstans in the East, London. He and seven other householders were indicted for receiving into their dwelling houses, inmates with families as tenants from Feb. 24, 1623 until Apr. 8, 1623, to the great peril of infecting divers of those dwelling there, at Chancery Lane, Co. Middlesex, with the plague.

George's brother Humphrey was appointed to administer the goods left by George, but Humphrey died before completing that duty, and his widow Anne was appointed 11 July, 1646 to administer the goods of

George, left unadministered by Humphrey.

Humphrey, of the Parish of St. Swithin, London, was citizen and draper of London; bur. July 9, 1646 'in ye quire under ye 2d stone from ye bread pew ground, at the Parish church;" m. 1st, before 1626 and before he became resident of St. Swithin, MARGARET (); m. 2d, MARY (); m. 3d, Anne (), who, surviving Humphrey, d. between Dec. 10, 1653 (date of her will) and Nov. 22, 1654 (date will was proved), at Barking, Co. Essex.

HUMPHREY was a draper. It is interesting in connection with identifying the family from which his mother came, that members of the Nightingale family were drapers of London, which increases the probability that his mother was a NIGHTINGALE as shown in visitations of London in 1663, 1664 and 1665.

He was apprenticed to the Draper's Company in London in 1613. The influence needed to secure that desirable apprenticeship was evidently furnished by his father.

He was appointed to administer the goods left by his brother George, but d.

in 1646 before completing that duty.

Humphrey made his will May 28, 1646 which was proved by his 3d wife Anne, July 8, 1646. That will gives us sufficient additional data for completion of statement of genealogical record of English forebears of Pilgrim John Howland.

He informs us in that will that his mother's first name began with "A"; that she had died; that he received her pewter (plate) from his father as a gift; and that by his own use of the word "appoint" in bequeathing that pewter (plate) to his daughter Anne, certain family recognition and rights were associated with ownership of that pewter (plate). It may very well be that the mother of HUMPHREY was named Anne. Another idea of the importance of that gift may be that the pewter may have been in the family since it was bequeathed by John, citizen and salter, to his wife Agnes. The language that Humphrey used in making that bequest is as follows:

"Item. I give and appoint unto my said daughter Anne, all the pewter marked A. H. which was her grandmother's."

The above-quoted bequest also gives us accurate data that Simon and Henry HOWLAND, sons of HENRY and MARGARET HOWLAND of Fenny Stanton, Hunts, which two sons were apprenticed to the Draper's Company London in 1622 and 1623 respectively, were not his brothers, as their mother's name was MARGARET, which does not begin with "A".

The Simon mentioned above married in 1632 Ann Uster, a sister of 1st or 2d wife of Humphrey, and had Simon and Hanna. Simon made his will in 1634. The children were left to the widow An(Hanna) who d. before Humphrey made his will, as her children, and not she, were mentioned in his will as nephew and niece. Humphrey brought those two orphan children to his home, where they were when he made the following bequest:

"Item. I give unto my nephew Simon Howland five pounds to be paid unto him at his age of one and twenty years. And I give unto his sister my niece Hanna Howland five pounds to be paid unto her at her age of one and twenty years or day of marriage first happening".

The bequests to his brothers: ARTHUR £8, JOHN £4, and HENRY £4, from a debt owing to him by Mr. Ruck (Rouke) of New England, indicate a partnership among those four brothers in a loan (probably in kind from Humphrey's store) to Mr. Ruck (Rouke) a merchant of Salem, Mass., as bequests by those remaining in England to those who left England as Separatists and even only Non-conformists were exceedingly rare. This Mr. Ruck (Rouke) may have been and probably was of the family of Robert Rouke (Ruck), a family client whom John Howland the salter buried July 27, 1550.

HUMPHREY made and ordained his 3d wife ANNE as sole executrix of his will, which she proved July 10, 1646.

July 11, 1646, Anne, widow of Humphrey, was appointed by the court to administer the goods of Humphrey's brother George Howland left unadministered by Humphrey.

Anne made her will Dec. 10, 1653, which was proved Nov. 22, 1654. She made bequests to her daughters Mary and Sarah Howland, and to a 3d daughter Hanson by a previous marriage whom she introduced into Humphrey's home when she married him.

Humphrey and all his children died before April 13, 1655, probably because of the black plague.

Children of Humphrey and his first wife Margaret:

- i. Susan, named by her mother, probably after her own mother; bur. Oct. 4, 1626 in the churchyard at St. Swithin.
- ii. Margaret, bapt. March 17, 1629; bur. Dec. 27, 1637 in the church-yard.
- iii. Nathaniel, bapt. Apr. 9, 1634; bur. Jan. 8, 1640 in the cloister.

Child of HUMPHREY and second wife MARY:

iv. Anne, error in record states Mary; may have been named after mother of Humphrey; bapt. Dec. 25, 1637; was living May 28, 1646 when Humphrey made his will; d. before Dec. 10, 1653 when Anne, Humphrey's widow, made her will.

Children of HUMPHREY and third wife ANNE:

v. Mary, bapt. Oct. 23, 1638; was living Dec. 10, 1653 when her mother made her will; d. before Apr. 13, 1655, date Humphrey's father John made a codicil to his will.

- vi. Sarah, bapt. March 21, 1640; was living Dec. 10, 1653, when her mother made her will; d. before Apr. 13, 1655, date Humphrey's father John made a codicil to his will.
- III. MARGARET, was living in 1646, as her brother Humphrey in his will made bequest to her; d. before Apr. 13, 1655, the date of codicil to his will by her father; m. Apr. 26, 1623, Richard Phillips of Fen Stanton, Co. Huntingdon.

Children of MARGARET and RICHARD PHILLIPS:

- i. Thomas, bapt. 11 Sept. 1623.
- ii. SARAYE, bapt. 14 Apr. 1625.
- iii. MARGARET, bapt. 17 June 1627.
- iv. William, bapt. 23 Aug. 1629; bur. Nov. 11, 1654.
- v. Ann, bapt. 19 Feb. 1631-2.
- vi. Benedict, bapt. 23 Apr. 1637.
- vii. RICHARD, bapt. 8 Aug. 1641; bur. 3 June 1642.
- viii. John, bapt. 19 March 1642-3.

A careful search of the records in England, and in this country, discloses no data to show that either MARGARET or any of her children were alive Apr. 13, 1655. Undoubtedly the line RICHARD and MARGARET, like many others, became extinct because of the black plague raging during that period in England.

- (5) IV. John
 - V. Henry, d. at Duxbury Jan. 17, 1671; m. Mary Newland, who survived him and as his widow d. June 17, 1674. Lord Winston Churchill, the former prime minister of England, is descended from this marriage.

Henry was a pronounced Non-conformist and for that reason came to New Plymouth, probably with his brother Arthur, in 1623-4. After arrival he joined the Society of Friends, possibly following his brother Arthur there. He had a good education and was liberal in rendering public service. He was selected to be Surveyor of Duxbury for several years, and served as a member of the Grand Inquest (grand jury) in 1636, 1637, 1639, 1640, 1649, 1651, 1652, 1653 and 1656.

He received a conditional bequest from his brother Humphrey, based on payment of a debt by Mr. Ruck (Rouke) of Salem, Mass. (See statement on Humphrey Howland above.)

He made his will Nov. 28, 1670, which was approved by the court at Plymouth March 8, 1671 (O. S.). Mary made her will May 8, 1674, which was proved Apr. 8, 1675 before Governor Winslow.

Children of HENRY and MARY:

- i. Joseph, b. at Duxbury; d. June 15, 1692; m. "4,3,1683" Rebecca, dau. of John Huzzey of Hampton, N. H., who survived him and m. 2d "6,3, 1695" Samuel Collins of Lynn.
- ii. ZOETH, b. at Duxbury; d., slain by Indians, Jan. 21, 1676 at Pocaset in King Philip's War; m. Abigail () "in the tenth month of the year

- one thousand six hundred and fifty-six", who survived him and m. 2d, "2,12,1678" RICHARD KIRBY, Jr.
- iii. John, m. Mary Walker.
- iv. Samuel, b. at Duxbury; d. between Feb. 4, 1714-15 (date he made his will) and May 7, 1716 (date will was proved); m. 1st, Mary () who d. before Aug. 11, 1698; m. 2d, (as a resident of Freetown, Bristol Co. Mass.) Mary Merehew.
- V. SARAH, m. Nov. 16, 1672, ROBERT DENNIS of Portsmouth, R. I.
- vi. Elizabeth, m. in 1691 Jedediah Allen.
- vii. MARY, m. JAMES CUDWORTH of Duxbury.
- viii. Abigail, m. Sept. 2, 1678, John Young.
- VI. ARTHUR, d. and was bur. Oct. 30, 1675 at Marshfield, New Plymouth; m. widow Margaret Reed, who, surviving Arthur, as his widow d. and was bur. Jan. 22, 1683 at Marshfield.

ARTHUR was a pronounced Non-conformist and for that reason came to New Plymouth, probably with his brother Henry, in 1623-4. Lydia, a dau. of Margaret by a previous marriage, m. John Walker, a pronounced Quaker. Probably that led Margaret and Arthur to join the Society of Friends, in which they became very active. Arthur received a conditional bequest from brother Humphrey, based on payment of a debt by Mr. Ruck (Rouke) of Salem, Mass. (See statement on Humphrey Howland above.) Arthur was an educated man.

ARTHUR made his will July 3, 1674, which MARGARET as his appointed executrix proved before Governor Winslow of Plymouth Colony.

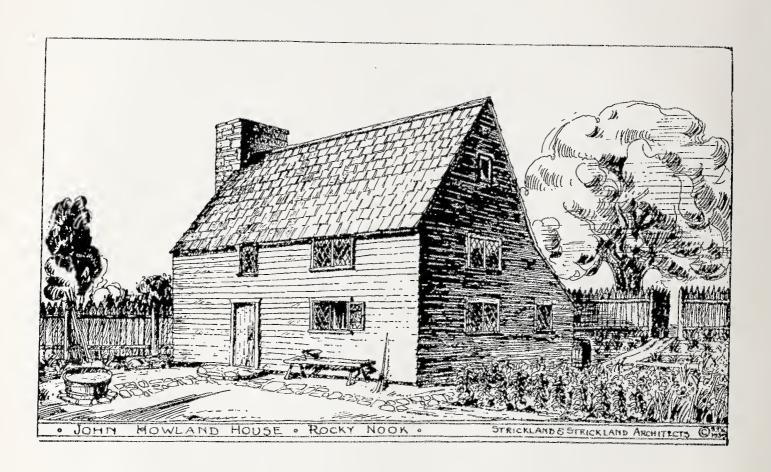
MARGARET made her will which was proved March 5, 1683-4 (O. S.) before the court at Plymouth.

Children of ARTHUR and MARGARET:

- i. Deborah, m. Jan. 4, 1648-9, John Smith, Jr. of Plymouth.
- ii. Mary, m. 1st, June 6, 1653, Timothy Williamson; m. 2d, Jan. 22, 1679, Robert Sandford.
- iii. Martha, m. Jan. 15, 1659, John Damon of Scituate.
- iv. Elizabeth, m. John Low.
- v. Arthur, m. Dec. 9, 1667, Elizabeth, dau. of Governor Thomas Prence and wife Mary.







HOWLANDS IN AMERICA

1. PILGRIM JOHN HOWLAND, gent., b. 1592-3; d. Feb. 23, 1672-3 at Plymouth, Plymouth Colony; m. about March 25, New Year's day, 1623, at Plymouth, Pilgrim ELIZABETH TILLEY, who survived him as his widow d. Dec. 21, 1687 at the home of her daughter Lydia (Howland) Brown, in Swansea, Plymouth Colony; and was bur. in the Brown lot in what is now Little Neck Cemetery, Riverside, off Bullock's Cove, East Providence, R. I.

John was a well-educated gentleman on general lines, and especially well in commercial business, in statecraft and in religion. He was a Non-conformist.

Under the family custom he was apprenticed, probably at an early age, to Mr. John Carver, who was a successful overseas trader between England and Holland, with business contacts in London. Later Carver became a brother-in-law of Ralph Thickens, a Non-conformist friend of this Howland family, who was a witness to the will of John's grandmother Emme.

He evidently did so well that at the end of apprenticeship Mr. Carver offered him the position of secretary and assistant in his business. Howland rendered loyal service of such value that the relation between them became almost that of father and son. This is emphasized as the business was between English and Dutch ports. That trust and confidence in Howland was increased still more when Mr. Carver, deacon of the church, gave almost all his time to the needs of the church. At such times Deacon Carver evidently entrusted the conduct of his business to Howland. Carver lived and traded at several ports. When living at Leyden he still maintained business contacts at other ports, and so it is not surprising that Dexter did not find the name of Howland recorded as a member of the Robinson Church at Leyden.

Preceding the pilgrimage to America, Deacon Carver as an expert business man on overseas shipments was in England as the principal agent of the church, engaged in making the necessary preparations, while his manager Howland was closing out Deacon Carver's business. Evidently when the time came for the Pilgrims to proceed to the embarkation port in England for the pilgrimage, Howland with Deacon Carver's family (and proceeds from closing out his business) left Leyden with the other Pilgrims for Delfthaven on a canal boat, and about August 1, 1620 left Delfthaven on the ship "Speedwell" for Southampton, the pilgrimage embarkation port.

The Carver family was united at Southampton. The ship "Mayflower," on contract, brought other Pilgrims and supplies from London. The total number of Pilgrims was one hundred and twenty. The plan was to use both ships in crossing the ocean, to retain the "Speedwell" at their new settlement home, and to return the "Mayflower" to the Adventurers Company that was financing the colonization venture.

¹ Bradford's "History of Plymouth Plantations."

After listening to a farewell letter from their pastor, Rev. John Robinson, in which he notified them that they had become a "body politic" and should select and obey the lawful administration of civil governors, 90 passengers were assigned to the "Mayflower" and 30 to the "Speedwell." The passengers on the "Speedwell" selected Christopher Martin as their Civil Governor and Robert Cushman as his assistant. The passengers on the "Mayflower" selected Deacon John Carver as their Civil Governor. But although there were three times as many passengers on the "Mayflower" as were on the "Speedwell," there was no selection of an Assistant Civil Governor. Deacon Carver did not want an elected Assistant. He evidently wanted John Howland to assist him; so he waived such an election and announced and used John Howland as his Assistant.

The pilgrimage sailed August 15, 1620 from Southampton in the two transports, the "Mayflower" and the "Speedwell." After two delays due to unseaworthiness of the "Speedwell," because of leakage, that ship was sent back to the financing Adventurers at London. Twelve of her passengers, including her Governor Martin, crowded into the "Mayflower." Civil Governor John Carver of the "Mayflower" assigned Martin, who was Treasurer, to duty on the "Mayflower" as Assistant for storage and supply, and John Howland remained on duty as Executive Assistant.

At about mid-voyage the ship entered the area of equinoctial gales, and under instructions of the ship's master, Governor Carver directed that no one without official authority would go on deck. The ship was in danger and Howland, carrying some emergency message from the Governor to the ship's master, was washed overboard from the deck. In the twinkle of an eye he saw the coil of the top-sail halyards also go overboard. With life at stake he reached the rope. He grasped it and climbed it hand over hand, even when under water, and approached the ship. The alarm had been given and sailors with courage risked their lives while they pulled in the rope until he was alongside, and then with boat-hooks and ropes they lifted him to the deck.

On the morning of November 20, 1620 the end of Cape Cod was sighted. The Governor rejected the plan to sail south to the mouth of the Hudson River, in order to come under the jurisdiction of the Virginia Company, and decided that they should settle at a suitable place on or near Cape Cod. The moment the passengers should leave the ship and land, the authority of Carver as Governor over the passengers of the ship would cease. If they should land there north of the jurisdiction of the Virginia London Company, they would become waifs except for the holding influence of their church. Governor Carver, as always after conference with others, decided that the approaching emergency of being on land without any recognized government must be ended by action while they were still under his authority as Governor over them as passengers, by adopting, while under that government, the successor government necessary for them after they should land. He prepared a draft of a plan for the new government which was to become effective after they should land. He assembled the male Pilgrims on the "Mayflower" November 11, 1620, and submitted the plan to them. They adopted it and signed it. John Howland signed the first written constitution for a representative government "of the people, by the people, and for the people."

Immediately after the adoption of that "Compact," to prevent confusion as between two governments they confirmed Carver as Governor over them as passengers on the "Mayflower" and also elected him to be Governor over the newly created independent state.

They did not elect an Assistant to the Governor in his new office as chief executive of the new independent government that would be born as soon as they should land. Evidently Carver did not want them to select his Assistant, probably having in his mind to name again John Howland, whom he had found loyal and efficient, assistant to him as Governor over the passengers on the "Mayflower."

He had governed the passengers to their entire satisfaction. Now his election as Governor over the successor government to be organized later, placed an obligation on him to find a suitable place for settlement, and then to prepare that settlement for occupancy. Those obligation duties placed squarely on his shoulders the responsibility for plans to discover the suitable place for settlement, and later plans for laying out such settlement and construction of suitable and ample buildings under the conditions that confronted them. He was the oldest man among them, and had been under continuous strain for a long time in his public work for them. This added obligation evidently was met by his successive decisions, as the situation progressed toward solution, which he turned over to his Assistant for preparation of plans to make such decisions effective. Thus Carver and Assistant Howland did not participate in actual reconnaissance for discovery of a suitable place for settlement until the last such reconnaissance, when the Governor and Assistant did go, and the Governor clearly intended to make a selection for a place of settlement. It was then that the records showed that Howland was from Leyden.

After his decision to settle at Plymouth was approved, he evidently solved the remaining problem of laying out the town, and of construction of necessary suitable buildings by successive decisions, as the situation progressed toward solution, which he turned over to his Assistant for preparation of plans to make such decisions effective.

January 16, 1621, word came to Governor Carver that Treasurer Christopher Martin was sick unto death on the "Mayflower" and wished to see the Governor regarding his "accounts" as Treasurer. The Governor visited Martin on Sunday, and Martin died the next day.

Having completed the construction of the new town sufficiently for occupancy, the Governor designated Wednesday, March 31, as the day for the last of the passengers on the "Mayflower" to come ashore. At the moment when the last passenger from the "Mayflower" stepped on the shore, the office of Governor over the passengers ceased and determined, and the office of Governor over the independent state created under the compact came into being. At that instant John Howland ceased to be Assistant to the Governor over the passengers, and became Assistant to the Governor over the new independent state created under the compact.

The act of Governor Carver in making a treaty with the great Indian Sachem Massasoit was an exercise of sovereign power, and John Howland was his assistant.

¹ Bradford's "History of Plymouth Plantations," pp. 377-380.

March 23, 1621 was two days before the end of the year, and thus it was two days before the end of his term as Governor of the new independent state under the compact. That day all the citizens in session as a general court re-elected Carver as Governor of the new independent state for another year, and added to that action of election the following appreciative words: "A man well approved amongst us." That approval of the administration of Governor Carver made John How-

LAND very happy and was to him a reward for all his work of assistance.

Having removed all personal property from the ship to sheltered cover in Plymouth, having initiated planting for maintenance, and having made ample preparation to defend their settlement without assistance from the "Mayflower," Governor Carver released Captain Christopher Jones from any further service for the Pilgrims and cleared the ship "Mayflower" April 15, 1621 for the return voyage. Captain Jones offered return passage but the Pilgrims declined. That decision not to return to comfortable living in England, but to remain in New Plymouth as citizens under the administration of the new Pilgrim Republic by Governor John Carver, is probably the most outstanding vote of confidence that any

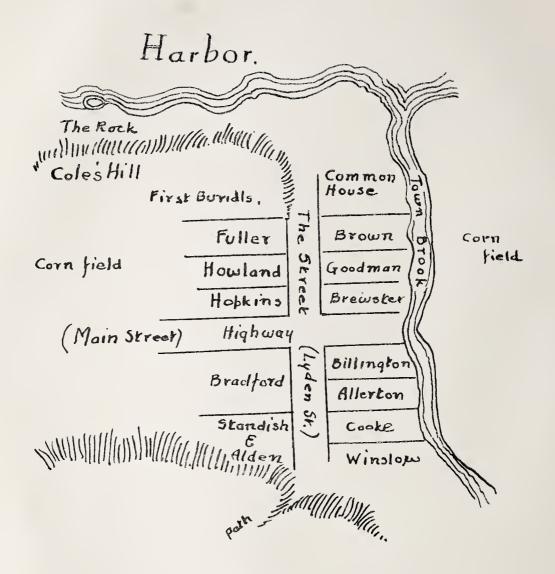
ruler, president or governor has ever received.

Then the Governor gave priority to the planting of the crop and under his leadership all concentrated on planting the land in their respective smaller family garden plots. The governor instructed the storekeeper to issue seed corn on an allotment basis and led them to work in the field. Later, when working on his smaller garden plot, on a hot day, he became ill. Nearby John Howland, working on his smaller garden plot, rushed to his assistance and helped him to the common house. He complained of a great pain in his head and soon became unconscious. Some days later he ceased to breathe. The Pilgrims were overcome with grief by that most unexpected great loss. They bore his body with unconcealed anguish and sorrow to Cole's Hill and buried him there, using the English ceremony for burial of great men. He died intestate and no record of administration of his estate has been found. Undoubtedly what was left of his personal estate passed to his widow with common consent. Also John Howland continued as secretary and manager in respect of that personal estate for her as he had done for her husband JOHN CARVER. KATHERINE evidently was older than her husband and she followed him before Summer to her eternal place of rest beside him on Cole's Hill.

Katherine also died intestate and no record of administration of her estate has been found. There is no doubt that either before she died she gave her estate to her granddaughter Elizabeth Tilley or that after her death Elizabeth received it as next of kin. Under those circumstances an exception was made and JOHN HOWLAND, although not married, was recognized: as head of the remainder of the family brought by John Carver on the "Mayflower" to Plymouth; as head of that family for garden plot purposes; and as heir of the smaller garden plots in that family garden plot, except such smaller garden plots as had been turned back to the town; and as best friend trustee of the estate of ELIZABETH TILLEY, a minor, and granddaughter of Katherine and orphan member of the family of John and KATHERINE CARVER.1

¹ John Goodwin, "Pilgrim Republic," pp. 323, 333.





Fort Hill (Now Burial Hill)
165 Ft. High.

PLYMOUTH

As the above was what was done, with the approval of the community, it undoubtedly is a fact that Katherine before her death gave those instructions and made those gifts. We go further and believe that she brought her dearly beloved granddaughter Elizabeth and the loyal and faithful friend of herself and her husband, John Howland, before her, and possibly as her last act, charged him to guard and care for Elizabeth, as her whole trust was in him.

WILLIAM BRADFORD was elected as first successor Governor, and Isaac Allerton was elected as the first elected Assistant to the Governor of the Pilgrim Republic. Bradford by re-elections was Governor during the rest of his life, except for five years during which he was Assistant Deputy to the Governor. Allerton

was honest but a careless and neglectful man and official.

Due to Bradford's sickness, Howland, after the elections, turned the records and public documents of Carver's administrations since his election at Southampton over to Allerton, who may have misplaced or lost such as were not woven into Bradford's "History of Plymouth Plantations." Having devoted all of his time and energy as Assistant to completion of the adventurous settlement at Plymouth, Howland continued to his death in the same crusading spirit, to do everything, little or big, to help to build their independent state, the Pilgrim Republic, without tincturing his effort with any desire for private advantage, or hope of exercising more power through holding high office.

Governor Carver and Assistant Howland were so occupied in service for the people that they did not have time to build the Governor's dwelling house. Although there was no blood relationship between the Carvers and Howland, they had both learned to love and trust him as a member of the family since the time when he came to them as an apprentice and was, in all things, faithful to them.

John Carver, the man of most wealth among the Pilgrims, brought with his wife Katherine her maid, a female house girl Desire Minter, a male house boy William Latham, a business employee Roger Wilder, and his secretary and assistant John Howland; also a child named Jasper More who "was put to him." That group is called the Carver family that came on the "Mayflower." That family was decreased December 16, 1620 by the death of child Jasper More and later by the death of Roger Wilder. It was increased to seven shortly after the passengers came ashore by Elizabeth Tilley, the orphan granddaughter of Katherine, as her father John and her mother Catherine had died. After the death of Katherine the decrease in the Carver family continued as follows:

DESIRE MINTER reutrned to England and died soon. She married, as his 2nd

wife, Pilgrim Francis Eaton.

That left John Howland, loyal and trusted friend of John Carver, the successor to his two small garden plots, and Elizabeth Tilley, granddaughter of Katherine, the heir to her personal estate.

Because of failure of crops, and sickness, Carver's building plan was not resumed until February, 1622, when there was some evidence of Indian hostility. The dwelling house intended for the Carvers was built then as the dwelling house of John Howland. John and Elizabeth were in love and decided to marry.

¹ No authority for such relationship—ED.

ELIZABETH was sixteen, the same age as was Dorothy May who married WILLIAM BRADFORD in 1613 in Holland.

The date when John and Elizabeth married was before the day in April, 1623 when John drew four acres on Watson's Hill (one for himself and three for his wife Elizabeth and her parents John and Catherine Tilley) under the first grant that gave one acre to each Pilgrim who came on the "Mayflower," and after the day in February 1622 when the dwelling house was completed. The period between those dates was a little more than thirty days. It is probable that they were married New Year's Day, March 25, 1623, and then moved from the Common House to the Howland dwelling house, located in Pilgrim Colony by the accompanying map.

In 1627 John Howland's company of 13 received a heifer named Raghorn in the division of cattle. As he had a wife and two children, he received 4 of the 13 shares.

John Howland's temporary allotment of 80 acres for himself, his wife and two children on the Duxborough side of Island Creek, January 3, 1627-8 was made permanent in 1632. Without permanent allotment of meadow land, we have the record that he mowed hay in 1635, 1636, and that December 4, 1637 there was granted to him 40 acres of marsh land on the west side of Island Creek Pond. He improved his lands and built there a messuage. April 2, 1640 he sold to Mr. William Kempe of Duxborough for 140 pounds sterling that estate, including at that time or later all of the 40 acres of marsh land. Samuel Seabury of Duxborough, who married Patience, the only child of William Kemp (who died in 1641), in his will, September 1, 1680, bequeathed those 40 acres of marsh land at Island Creek Pond to his eldest son Samuel.

We do not know when John Howland and family moved from their Leyden Street home to their Duxbury home. It was of course after 1632, when he received permanent title there, and before 1635, as he harvested hay there for his stock in 1635. He probably moved from his Leyden Street home to his Duxborough home about 1633.

Under the contract between the Pilgrims and the Merchant Adventurers the result of labor was held in common, but land was not so held. The smaller garden plots became private property. After marriage, John Howland's real estate in Plymouth Colony included his own smaller garden plot, the two which he inherited from the Carvers and the three which his wife brought to him (one for herself and one for each of her deceased Pilgrim parents). So John's landed estate in New England at that time consisted of a dwelling house and six parcels of land each three rods long and half a rod wide.

November 5, 1638 the general court granted to Mr. John Howland the island called "Spectacle Island" near Great (Green's) Harbor in Marshfield. November 30, 1640 it granted further to him the marsh meadow in that vicinity. November 3, 1671 he, recorded as "gentleman," exchanged with William White, son of Resolved of Marshfield, the above properties and all housing thereon built or to be built, under contract with the tenant John Branch, and about 5 acres of salt

¹ "History of Plymouth Plantation" (Bradford); "The Pilgrim Republic" (Goodwin).

marsh on the west side of Green Harbor River, and with all appurtenances, profits, privileges and "enumities" belonging thereto:—for all his upland and meadows at or near Namassakett in Middleborough, which was sometime in the occupation and improvement of his father, Mr. Resolved White, which is further described as "all that share of land which is divided, allotted and layed forth lying and being at the wading place so called at Namassakett River and is in number the fifteenth lot being bounded with the path and the beaver dam, and lyeth in half the length of the former Lots, with all and singular the appurtenances belonging thereto." The Plymouth court decided March 7, 1673-4 that the title of William White to a swamp in Major Purchase also passed to Mr. Howland. June 10, 1667, Thomas Southworth, Assistant, approved for the record two surveys of Mr. Howland's above uplands in Middleborough, made by WILLIAM CROW, which show that he had 20 acres abutting a swamp at the south end of his Namassakett meadow, and 80 acres abutting a swamp at the north end of that meadow. He bequeathed that property to his youngest son Isaac in his will.2

December 26, 1638 Mr. John Howland paid to Lieut. William Holmes 15 pounds and 10 shillings sterling, for about 30 acres on Duxborough side with 3 acres of marsh meadow belonging thereto. Later, but before July 31, 1646, he exchanged with Joseph Rogers of Duxbury that lot of 30 acres for 20 acres of land on the north side of Jones River just opposite Rocky Nook, and 3 acres of marsh meadow at the north side of Jones River at the bridge, and just east of the public road. He sold the 3 acres of marsh land acquired from Lieut. Holmes, called "Musketo Hole," March 14, 1649, to George Partridge of Duxborough, for satisfactory price, with approval of his wife Elizabeth, which sale was acknowledged September 3, 1649, before MYLES STANDISH. In her will December 17, 1686, John's widow, Pilgrim Elizabeth, bequeathed the 20 acres and 3 acres of meadow acquired from Joseph Rogers to her grandson Nathaniel Howland.3

February 2, 1638-9 Mr. John Howland bought from Mr. John Jenne, with 82 pounds sterling and 3 acres on Watson's Hill, the Rocky Nook estate of 120 acres, consisting of messuage, lands, woods, and all appurtenances belonging thereto. He established his residence there and lived there during the remainder of his life. December 14, 1661 he and neighbor John Cook agreed on the boundary between their estates. In his will be bequeathed that estate to his son Joseph with

tenure to his loving wife.

Under the act of the General Court March 3, 1639-40 Mr. Howland was entitled to purchase new land in three areas. The first was in the general Yarmouth-Eastham area on Cape Cod. He chose land there. He disposed of it as follows: June 4, 1668 he sold to John Winge of Yarmouth, for 16 pounds of good and lawful money of New England, all his right, title and interest with all appurtenances appertaining thereto, to land between the two brooks called Bond Brook and Stony Brook in the area of Yarmouth; August 28, 1667 he, recorded as "gentleman," sold to John Done Junior of Eastham, for a valuable consideration, a parcel of land on the south side of Great Nanoshekett Marsh near Eastham, and a 10-acre parcel

 [&]quot;Plymouth Colony Records and Deeds."
 "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. II, p. 70.
 "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. III, p. 54.

of mostly upland, with about 2 acres of marsh land. His wife ELIZABETH approved; and in his will be bequeathed to his son Jabez all his upland and meadow at "Satucket" (Harwich) and "Paomet" (Truro) and places adjacent, with all appurtenances and privileges belonging thereto.¹

The second choice was in the general Dartmouth area. In 1654 he was the owner of one-half a share of land in that area. In acres that was 50 acres of upland and 20 acres of meadow. December 22, 1667, he sold those lands to Mr. John

Almey (Almy) for 30 pounds, with approval of his wife Elizabeth.

March 8, 1648-9, Mr. John Howland of Plymouth bought from Governor Bradford for 50 pounds the Great Island in Green's Harbor and about 13 acres of marsh meadow to the west of the Island, with all appurtenances to those lands. That same day he resold one-half of the Island and the marsh meadow to his sonin-law John Gorum for 25 pounds sterling. To quiet title to that marsh land, he and neighbors Thomas Bourne and John Dingly agreed to the boundary May 4, 1656 and had the agreement recorded. March 1, 1657 he exchanged his half of that Island and of that marsh land with Christopher Winter of Plymouth for "Governor's farm" in Barnstable, which consisted of about 90 acres of upland and about 12 acres of meadow. December 8, 1567 he, recorded as "gentleman," gave all that Barnstable estate to his son John of Barnstable in consideration of love and affection, with approval of his wife Elizabeth. In his will he refers to that gift by use of the following language: "besides what lands I have already given him." Wennituxett and Colchester in Town of Plymouth were a part of the later organized town of Plympton. February 22, 1650-1 a town meeting granted 12 acres of meadow land at Wennituxett to Mr. Howland. He bequeathed 6 of those 12 acres in his will to his son Isaac. May 24, 1660 a town meeting granted 50 acres of upland on Colchester Brook, within two miles of his above meadow, to him, and June 13, 1668 that upland at Colchester was surveyed to him. June 13, 1668 he and son Joseph bought from his son-in-law Johathan Bosworth 10 acres of adjoining land. Before he made his will he bought the messuage and about 70 or 80 acres of upland and meadow at Colchester from his son-in-law Jonathan Bosworth of Swansea for 20 pounds sterling. In his will be bequeathed all that property to his son Joseph with life tenure in his wife Elizabeth. March 7, 1672, after the death of Mr. How-LAND, JONATHAN BOSWORTH of Swansea submitted a deed of the above sale and the Assistant, Mr. Constant Southworth, accepted it that same day for record.2

June 3, 1662, the general court, under its policy of granting land on account of first-born children in the colony, granted to Pilgrim John Howland a whole share of land on the Taunton River. June 7, 1665, it granted another whole share of land to him there for the same reason. The property located between Teticut and Taunton, totaled 145 acres of upland and 8 acres of meadow. His first born child was Desire Howland who married Captain John Gorham. He held that land but did not mention it in his will, but before his death he did without record give that property to Captain Gorham, the husband of his first child Desire, and asked his wife to inform the court of his gift. March 4, 1672-3, John's widow, Pilgrim

¹ "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. II, p. 70 ² "Plymouth Colony Records," Vols. I, II, III, IV and "Plymouth Town Records."

ELIZABETH, appeared at the General Court and stated that she was carrying to the court a request made through her by her late husband, John Howland, for the court to give title to the husband John Gorham of his first born child, Desire, to that 145 acres of upland and 8 acres of meadow, and the court so ordered.

The events of John Howland's life show that as an English gentleman with a well-balanced education, his attitude was that, after providing for his family, the public interest came first and his private interest second. But due to lack of many early records, and also because of incomplete records, his whole contribution to the public interest can not be stated.

He was so efficient in finance and law of the land that his advice was sought and freely given. Much of his time was given to witnessing deeds and wills, to making inventory of estates, and to arbitrating disputes of many types and kinds.

As a resident of Plymouth, he and others were assessors in 1641, 1644, 1647, 1648, 1649, 1650 and 1651.

May 17, 1649 he and others were chosen constables of Plymouth, and with others as surveyor.

February 5, 1655, he and others were chosen as Selectmen of Plymouth. The General Court approved him and others as Selectmen of Plymouth June 5, 1666.

With other representatives of Duxborough he met with representatives of Plymouth, March 14, 1635, to find a way to unite those two communities. They recommended that a common meeting house be located on their boundary in the Jones River Bridge area, better to unite them socially.

June 4, 1650 he was elected a highway surveyor from Plymouth.

His service in the General Court until 1652 was under title of Committeeman from his town, under the prevailing custom. But from 1652 his service in the General Court was under the title of Deputy. As Committeeman he served in the General Court in 1637, 1639-1652. As Deputy he served in 1652, 1659, 1661-1668 and 1670. Because of his age he refused further election.

His advice in that legislative body was largely in committee. Briefly stated, he was a leader in financial and business advice, especially in cases involving transfer of funds by individuals or by the Colony to England or to another colony, and how to maintain the Colony's credit, as by trade with the Indians, by fishing in the Kennebec or on the "Banks," by thrift in agriculture, and in processing and sale of wooden products from the trees of the forest; skilled technical advice on allocation of lands, laying out of highways, and surveying activity in general; legal advice on methods of arbitrating disputes between citizens and towns in the Colony, and between Plymouth and other colonies. He understood statecraft, and in that area of thought his ideas were of great value. He gave advice freely when it was requested.

June 7, 1637, as a Committeeman from Duxborough, he was on a committee to advise the Governor how to preserve the beaver trade.

He rendered service as an appointed assistant executive officer to Carver during his governorship over the passengers of the "Mayflower" and during the period in which he acted as First Governor of the Pilgrim Republic.

¹ "Plymouth Colony Records," pub. by Commonwealth of Massachusetts. 1855-1861.

In June, 1637 he from Duxborough, and others, were added to "The Bench" as unelected assistants, to formulate a plan for maintenance of trade with the Indians.

In June, 1638 he from Duxborough, and others, were unelected assistants to formulate a financial plan for needs of defense in New England in the Indian War. They recommended a tax on the Town of Plymouth of 100 pounds, and on Dux-

borough and Scituate of 50 pounds each.

It is always difficult to state the activities of elected Assistants to a Governor, as such service is largely one of advice to the Governor which does not become a matter of record. He served as an elected Assistant from 1631 to 1636. We state two typical cases of such service. March 2, 1634 "The Bench" settled the dispute between Scituate and Plymouth as to title to land on the north side of the South River. In the second case, after rendering valuable special public service as one of the proprietors of Plymouth Colony, he rendered invaluable service in stopping the threat to the independence of Plymouth Colony. These facts are as follows:

At that time the Pilgrims had established a profitable trade with the Indians, at the Kennebec River. Their Puritan rivals at Piscataqua (Portsmouth) and at other places were not only interfering with the Pilgrim trading there, they were planning to get a patent that would exclude the Pilgrims from any share in trade on the Kennebec. In the Autumn of 1627 the above owners of Plymouth sent Allerton to England, primarily to procure a grant of territory on the Kennebec. Allerton returned in 1628 with such a grant. The Pilgrims at once built a fortified trading-house where now is Augusta, the capital of Maine. They stocked the trading post with coats, shirts, rugs, blankets, corn, biscuit, peas, prunes, knives, hatchets and wampum, and began profitable trading with the Indians for beaver.

In 1630 The Council of New England sent over a new Patent of Plymouth Colony territory.2 The Patent fixed the boundaries of Plymouth Colony and also fixed the bounds of Plymouth's tract on the Kennebec. That area reached from the present Augusta some 13 miles down the stream to Cobbiseconte Falls, and extended 15 miles on each side of the river, with full and esclusive right and jurisdiction over the river within those bounds. That Patent ran to WILLIAM BRADFORD and associates. It gave him and his associates authority to decide "who might abide on their land" and to "expulse, repel, and resist by force of arms" all who without leave should seek to dwell within their limits, or to traffic with the natives there, or make any annoyance; and the ships and goods of intruders might be forfeited. The Patent was signed by the Earl of Warwick, President of the Council for New England, January 13, 1629. The Council appointed Captain Standish, its attorney, to enter on the grant, and after taking possession in its name, to deliver full "possession and seizin" to Bradford or his representatives. In the absence of STANDISH, WINSLOW, HOWLAND OF ALDEN might act for him. ALDEN finally did so, in the presence of James Cudworth, William Clarke and Nathaniel Morton, and those facts were recorded on the Patent.

The trespassing did not stop. An emergency existed. John Howland, Assistant, was in command of that Kennebec Trading Post Area, and its trade in

¹ "Plymouth Colony Records." ² "Pilgrim Republic," (Goodwin) p. 197.

May 1634. With a small party on a small ship he anchored in Plymouth's Area to trade with Indians as they would come down the river with furs. Then an agent for Lord Say and Brook and others, named John Hocking of Piscatagua, sailed up the stream above Howland's ship and anchored in Plymouth's Area, prepared to intercept all trade with the Indians. Howland carefully and temperately explained Plymouth's patent rights there and the penalty for crime of trespass, and directed Hocking to drop down stream below the limit of Plymouth's patented area. Hocking refused. Three times Howland demanded Hocking obey the law. Hocking continued his refusal. Then Captain Howland ordered his men not to fire except on his order, and ordered four men to paddle their canoe to Hock-ING's anchorage and cut his cable, which they did. Hocking was aiming his gun directly at Talbot, who cut the cable, when Howland, fully exposing himself, informed Hocking that he gave the order to cut the cable and that Talbot merely obeyed his order. But Hocking shot and killed Talbot and was preparing to shoot another in the canoe when one of Talbot's mates shot and killed Hocking.

Hocking's party sailed back to Piscataqua (Portsmouth) and by false statements made trouble for Plymouth. The legal decision was that Hocking was breaking the law and had no legal complaint against Plymouth. That decision "formally and fully exonerated the Plymouth men" and declared that "Hocking alone had been to blame."1

In 1627 ISAAC ALLERTON returned from England with an offer by the Merchant Adventurers to sell their entire interest in the Plymouth Company for a total of 1,800 pounds, to be paid at the rate of 200 pounds per year. The offer was received favorably, and the responsibility was assumed by the following, who thus became owners or proprietors of the Pilgrim Company: William Bradford, Myles STANDISH, ISAAC ALLERTON, EDWARD WINSLOW, WILLIAM BREWSTER, JOHN HOW-LAND, JOHN ALDEN and THOMAS PRENCE. Those owners financed that debt by trade and by organizing the single men and heads of families into a partnership in which each one had a share (vote) but each head of a family had an additional vote for his wife and for each of his children. The partnership was obligated to pay toward the debt what the trade did not produce. That debt was paid June 14, 1642 when James Sherley released all claims against the owners or proprietors of Plymouth Colony. In that release he addresses John Howland as "Gent."²

The Howland coat-of-arms in this country is in water colors. It is said to have been brought from England soon after the "Mayflower" came. In 1865 it was in possession of Rev. T. Howland White of Shelburne, Nova Scotia. It is now, 1945, in possession of Mr. G. W. Howland White, Liverpool, Nova Scotia. It is on the original gravestone of Yet Mercy, daughter of Josiah 3d, granddaughter of John and wife of Nathaniel Howland of Bristol, who d. in 1737.

The dates in the following quotation are old style:

"On February, 24: dyed Mr. John Howland in his eightieth yeare, he was a good old disciple and had bin sometime a Magistrate here, a plaine-hearted christian.

Goodwin's "Pilgrim Republic," p. 381.
 Bradford's "History of Plymouth Plantation," Vol. 2, p. 334.

"The 23th of February Mr. John Howland senir of the Towne of Plymouth Deceased; hee was a Godly man and an ancient professor in the wayes of Christ. Hee lived until hee attained above eighty yeares in the world, hee was one of the first Comers into this land and proved a usefull Instrument of Good in his place & was the last man that was left of those that Came over in the shipp Called the May Flower, that lived in Plymouth hee was with honor Intered att the Towne of Plymouth on the 25 of February 1672."

March 4, 1672-3 a letter of administration was granted "unto Mistress Elizabeth Howland" on the estate of Mr. John Howland Sen. of Plymouth, late deceased.

GOODWIN in the "Pilgrim Republic:"

"Remarkable it is that after the first Winter the ranks of the Pilgrim leaders remained so nearly unbroken until their little Commonwealth was firmly established and embraced in a powerful alliance. Warren and Fuller were dead, and Allerton departed in dishonor; but when the Confederation was formed, Bradford and Winslow, Standish and Brewster, Hopkins, Howland and Alden were still at the head of affairs. Had these men been added to the victims of the first year, there would have been no English-speaking state in the probable future of New England."

In 1675 the terror of King Philip's War against Plymouth Colony was launched by a cruel and savage attack on Swansea. That war of burning, plunder, assassination and unthinkable crimes, advancing toward Plymouth Town, burned 13 towns, killed 600 white people, and reaching for Plymouth, burned Halifax, then a part of Plymouth; destroyed William Clark's garrison-house on the Ell River and killed Mrs. Clark and ten other women or children only three miles from the center of Plymouth, and close to the Howland Rocky Nook messuage killed a man named Dunham who was driving cattle to drink in Smelt Brook at an early hour.

The fort in Plymouth Town was rebuilt and garrisoned. Elizabeth's home at Rocky Nook was five miles from the center of Plymouth Town and was an excellent and apparently easy target for the Indians, while the home of her son Jabez in the center of Plymouth was the available place of most safety for her. Whether advised or on her own initiative, we do not know, but Elizabeth took the proper action by moving to the new house in town that her son Jabez had purchased from Jacob Mitchell and enlarged to provide quarters for his father and mother during the cold winter season. During her residence in town her Rocky Nook messuage was burned to the ground, whether by hostile Indians as a war act or by some accident, we do not know, but fortunately she was safe in town. By moving to Jabez' house in Plymouth Town, she saved the articles mentioned in her will from the fire that destroyed the messuage at Rocky Nook.

¹ "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. 18.

Excavations by Mr. Strickland at the Rocky Nook dwelling house and restoration work on the Jabez house in town have found the fragments of a lovely two-handled glazed cup (from England or Holland) at Rocky Nook, and fragments of an exact duplicate of that cup at the Jabez house in Plymouth. Also Mr. Strick-LAND found a pap spoon at Rocky Nook dwelling house site that bears within a quarter-inch circle a five-petal rose. He also unearthed a duplicate spoon from the base of the Jabez Howland house chinmey that bears within a quarter-inch circle a tiny heart surmounted by a crown. It is probable that those two pap spoons (made in Holland), those two cups, and most of the articles enumerated in her will, were inherited by her from her grandmother Catherine Carver.1

As a result of his observation of the Mount Hope Area (now Bristol) during his service there in King Philip's War, Jabez was convinced that it was a more promising place in which to live than Plymouth, and on January 4, 1680-1 he sold to Elkanah Watson his home (now Howland House) with adjoining lands that he had purchased, and his wife Bethiah gave her consent January 10, 1680-1, but the deed was not accepted for record until widow Pilgrim Elizabeth who, living

there, gave her consent, which is recorded.2

When in 1680-1 Jabez moved to his new "Mount Hope" home (now Bristol, R. I.) Mother Pilgrim Elizabeth accompanied him as far as Swansea, where she made her home during the rest of her life with her daughter Lydia Brown.

In her will she used language that exhibits the high and noble plane upon which

she lived. It is as follows:

"Item it is my Will and charge to all my children that they walke in ye Feare of ye Lord, and in Love and peace towards each other and endeavor the true performance of this my last Will and Testament."

The inventory taken March 3, 1672, following the death of John, and recent excavations of the site of the burned dwelling house at Rocky Nook by Mr. Sidney T. STRICKLAND, A. I. A., give a clear picture of their home life there. The discovery of his razor shows that John was not a full-bearded man, and may have been clean shaven.

The enumeration of his cloth and clothing, some from Holland, shows that he had apparel required for the type of life he lived as a country gentleman. He had clothes for work. He had dress clothing of English make and style, including hats, stockings, fancy waistcoats, silk neckcloths, great-coats, etc. His riding equipment for horse and rider was complete, including riding boots and spurs, and a pillion for a lady riding behind the saddle. His personal military equipment included breastplate, swords, cutlass, musket, long gun, powder, shot, bullets and a dagger.

In the house the kitchen was well equipped with the best cooking utensils available then. Meals were served in the dining room. The table was covered with one large cloth or with several small cloths. The food was placed on the table in pewter basins and or on pewter platters, with burned earthenware pots for liquids.

¹ The Statement of Sidney T. Strickland, A. I. A., the engineer, architect and constructor who restored the Howland house to the size, form and tpye that it had after Jabez bought and enlarged it, and who excavated the site of the dwelling house of Pilgrim John Howland at Rocky Nook.

² "Plymouth Colony Deeds."

⁸ Will of John Howland, "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. 1., p. 70.

Children of John Howland and Elizabeth Tilley:1

Desire, evidently named after Elizabeth's friend Desire Minter: b. 1624 at original homestead on Leyden Street in Plymouth; d. Oct. 13, 1683 at Barnstable; m. 1643 at Plymouth, Captain John Gorham of Plymouth, who d. at the home of his brother-in-law James Brown, Swansea, as a casualty in King Philip's War, and was bur. Feb. 5, 1675 at Swansea.

Desire Gorham received a bequest from her father's will.

Capt. Gorham was a son of Mr. John Gorham who with family came from Huntingdonshire, Eng. and settled in Marshfield, where in 1643 he was found able to bear arms. His son John Gorham was found at Plymouth in 1643 able to bear arms. The Gorham family was of some distinction in England and bore a coatof-arms² John and Desire moved to Marshfield, and after a time John went to England on an economic mission, and after returning they moved to Barnstable (apparently with business interests at Yarmouth) where he functioned as an architect and constructor and built mills, tanning vats, etc.

Desire survived him and, living at Yarmouth, was appointed March 9, 1675as administrator, together with her sons James and John, of her late husband's estate.

She d. intestate. The inventory of her estate was taken Aug. 3, 1683 by her sons James and John. An agreement as to distribution was made between the Governor, his deputy and assistant, and the children. The inventory contains an important item "1 paire of Holland sheets," showing a gift by her mother.3

From that marriage was descended NATHANIEL GORHAM, the names of whose maternal forbears were Howland, Otis, and Soley. Nathaniel was President of the Confederation Congress of the United States in 1782, 1783, 1786 and 1787, and by virtue of that office under the Articles of Confederation was the head of the government, and, in that status for the Confederate Congress, approved the calling of the 1787 Constitutional Convention. Receiving the document called the Constitution for a new federal government, with approval of that Confederation Congress he forwarded copies of the proposed Constitution of the new federal government to the States for their action. As a member also of that Constitutional Convention, his service was of the greatest value. He signed that Constitution, and in his Massachusetts State Convention urged and voted for its ratification. He and the members of that Confederation Congress rendered most notable service in voting for a new form of government. If that new government should be adopted it would remove him and them from the high offices which they occupied, and would also take from their hands the public power with which they were then entrusted. They were not practical politicians who regarded occupancy of office as a job, but served only to try to benefit their country.

Will of Eliz. (Tilley) Howland," "Mayflower Descendant", Vol. 111, p. 54
 "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. iv, p. 174-177.
 "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. iv, p. 217.

Children of John Gorham and Desire Howland:1

- i. Desire, b. Apr. 2, 1644 at Plymouth; m. Oct. 7, 1661, John Hawes.
- ii. Temperance, b. May 5, 1646 at Marshfield; m. 1st 1663, Edward Sturgis, Jr.; surviving Edward, she m. 2d Thomas Baxter, Sr. of Yarmouth. The will of Thomas Baxter Sr. was proved July 9, 1713. Temperance d. intestate; her estate was divided Apr. 11, 1715.
- iii. Elizabeth, b. Apr. 2, 1648 at Marshfield; d. before March 5, 1683-4; m. () probably Joseph Hallet at Sandwich.
- iv. James, b. Apr. 28, 1650 at Marshfield; was living Feb. 27, 1745-6; m. Feb. 24, 1673, Hannah Huckens. Children. 1. Desire, Feb. 9, 1674. ii. James, March 6, 1678. iii. Experience, July 28, 1678. iv. John, Aug. 2, 1680. v. Mehitable, Apr. 20, 1683. vi. Thomas, Dec. 16, 1684. vii. Mercy, Nov. 22, 1686, d. June 12, 1689. viii. Joseph, March 25, 1689. ix. Jabez, March 6, 1690-1. x. Sylvanus, Oct. 13, 1693. xi. Ebenezer, Feb. 14, 1695-6.
- v. Col. John, b. Feb. 20, 1651 at Marshfield; living Feb. 27, 1745-6; m. Feb. 24, 1674 Mary Otis. Children: 1. John, Jan. 18, 1675, d. Apr. 1, 1679. ii. Temperance, Aug. 2, 1678, m. Stephen Clap. iii. Mary, Sept. 18, 1680, m. Capt. Joseph Hinkley. iv. Stephen, June 23, 1683, m. Elizabeth Gardner. v. Shubal, Sept. 2, 1686, m. his cousin Mary Thatcher, dau. of Col. John Thatcher. vi. John, Sept. 28, 1688, m. Prudence Crocker. vii. Thankful, Feb. 15, 1690, m. Capt. John Fuller. viii. Job, Aug. 30, 1692, m. 1st Desire Dimock, m. 2nd. the widow of Capt. Isaac Freeman. ix. Mercy, Dec. 1, 1695, m. Col. Silvanus Bourn.

Col. John Gorham served in King Philip's War, and in the later expedition to Canada

- vi. Joseph, b. Feb. 16, 1653 at Yarmouth; m. Sarah Sturgis and lived at Yarmouth.
- vii. Jabez, b. Aug. 3, 1656 at Barnstable; m. Hannah Sturgis, a sister of brother Joseph's wife and widow of () Gray, (possibly of Harwich). They moved to Bristol. Children 1. Samuel, Apr. 15, 1682. ii. Jabez, Jan. 31, 1683-4. iii. Shubal, Apr. 12, 1686. iv. Isaac, Feb. 1, 1689. v. John, Nov. 8, 1690. vi. Joseph, Aug. 22, 1692. vii. Hannah, Feb. 21, 1693-4. viii. Benjamin, Dec. 11, 1695. ix. Thomas, Oct. 30, 1701.
- viii. Mercy, b. Jan. 20, 1658 at Barnstable; was not living Feb. 27, 1745-6; m. George Denison.
- ix. Lydia, b. Nov. 11, 1661 at Barnstable; m. as his 2nd wife Col. John Thatcher of Yarmouth.
- X. Hannah, b. 1663 at Barnstable; m. Joseph Wheelding (Whillden).
- xi. Shubal, b. 1667 at Barnstable; m. 1695, Puelia (Priscilla) Hussey.
- II. Lieutenant John Howland jr. b. Feb. 24, 1626-7 at original homestead on Leyden Street in Plymouth; d. after May 6, 1697 at Barnstable; m.

¹ "Mayflower Descendant:" Vol V, p. 177.

Oct. 26, 1651 at Plymouth, Mary Lee, dau. of Mr. Robert and wife MARY LEE. ROBERT was survived by Mary, who lived at Barnstable with her daughter and son-in-law, John and Mary (Lee) Howland.

John as a resident of Plymouth was found able to bear arms in August, 1643. After marriage he lived on his father's estate on Great Island, Marshfield.

February 6, 1654 he and eleven others were appointed as a Court of Assistants to view the dead body of John Walker, an employee of Robert Latham of Plymouth, and to find the cause of death.

In 1657 the records show that he was a freeman of Marshfield. He evidently moved to Marshfield—after his father purchased from Governor Bradford one-half the Great Island with 13 acres of marsh meadow—and lived on his father's estate there. His father exchanged that property March 1, 1657 for the Governor's farm in Barnstable. Son John moved to that new farm at once and was listed as a freeman in Barnstable in 1658. In consideration of love and affection, his father John and mother Elizabeth gave that estate to him Dec. 8, 1667. Son John made that his home during the remainder of his life. He was listed as a freeman there May 29, 1670 and again in 1683-4.

Under a previous General Court Order that "Children here born and brought up before strangers" should be entitled to land not yet allotted, he, brothers Joseph and JABEZ, and four others petitioned the Court for their allotments June 1, 1675. The Court ordered that ancient freemen not yet accommodated be given first priority, and the petitioners second priority in allotment of new land. Through his holding of the 100 acres between Teticut and Taunton he became acquainted with the prominent Shove family in Taunton, on visits to that property. He was highly respected as a good and just man.

He was chosen for petit-jury duty in 1669, 1670, 1671, 1672, 1673, 1675, 1676, 1680, 1681 and 1683.

He took the inventory on the estate of the late WILLIAM DEXTER May 8, 1694. He was elected Selectman in 1682, 1685, 1686 and 1689.

He was appointed by the General Court, Ensign of the Military Company of Barnstable July 7, 1674, and Lieutenant of that company June 1, 1675.

Children of John Howland and Mary (Lee) 23

- Mary, b. 1652 at Plymouth; m. 1670 John Allyn, son of Thomas of Barnstable. Children: i. John, Apr. 3, 1674. ii. Mary, Aug. 5, 1675, d. July 7, 1677. iii. Matthew, Aug. 6, 1677, d. last of Oct. 1680. iv. Isaac, Nov. 8, 1679. v. Mercy, 1681, d. Apr. 6, 1683. vi. Han NAH, Dec. 27, 1683. vii. Thomas, Feb. 6, 1684. viii. Matthew, Oct. 8, 1687. ix. Jabez, Feb. 2, 1689.
- ii. Elizabeth, b. May 17, 1655 at Marshfield; m. in Dec. 1673 at Barnstable, John Bursley. Children: 1. Elizabeth, "2nd week in October 1674". ii. Mercy, "last week in Oct. 1675", and bur. Apr. 1676. iii. John, March 1, 1677-8. iv. Mary, May 23, 1679. v. Jabez, Aug.

^{1 &}quot;Plymouth Colony Records.

² "Genealogical Notes of Barnstable" (Otis) Vol. II, p. 50. ³ "Mayflower Index."

- 21, 1681. vi. Joanna, Nov. 29, 1684. vii. Joseph, Jan. 29, 1686. viii. Abigail, Aug. 27, 1690. ix. Elizabeth, Aug. 5, 1692. x. Temperance, Jan. 30, 1695.
- iii. Isaac, b. Nov. 25, 1659; m. Dec. 27, 1686 Anne Taylor, dau. of Edward and wife Mary (Merrill) Taylor, who was b. Dec. 11, 1664 at Barnstable.
- iv. Hannah, b. May 15, 1661; m. May 20, 1686 at Barnstable, Jonathan, son of John Crocker. Children: i. Lydia, Sept. 26, 1686. ii. Hannah, March 26, 1688. iii. Thankful, March 6, 1690. iv. Isaac, Apr. 4, 1692. v. Reliance, June 28, 1694. vi. Jonathan, Aug. 28, 1696. vii. James, Sept. 3, 1699. viii. Ephraim, in Apr. 1702, d. May 1, 1704.
- v. Mercy, b. Jan. 21, 1663¹; m. Apr. 27, 1704 at Barnstable, Joseph Hamlin (Hamblin). Children: i. Alice, Feb. 4, 1705. ii. Seth, in March 1708. iii. Sarah, Apr. 4, 1711. iv. Joseph, March 10, 1715. v. Southward (Southworth), May 21, 1721.
- vi. Lydia, b. Jan. 9, 1665 at Barnstable; d. July 6, 1717 at Middleborough; m. as his 1st wife Jeremiah Thomas of Middleborough, Feb. 25, 1684. He survived her and married 2nd, Apr. 29, 1720 at Middleborough, Mary Durfee of Middleborough. Children were all born at Middleborough and all mentioned in his will. i. Nathaniel, Jan. 2, 1686. ii. Sarah, Dec. 2, 1686, m. () Wood. iii. Jeremiah, Feb. 14, 1688-9. iv. Elizabth, Nov. 19, 1690, m. () Tomson. v. Mary, June 5, 1692, m. () Blush. vi. Lydia, March 26, 1694, m. () Hackett. vii. Thankful, June 30, 1695, m. () Cobb. viii. Jedidiah, Aug. 19, 1698. ix. Bethiah, March 27, 1701. x. Ebenezer, Nov. 1, 1703. xi. Priscilla, Oct. 13, 1705.
- vii. Experience, b. July 28, 1668.
- viii. Anne, b. Sept. 9, 1670; m. Sept. 18, 1691 at Barnstable, Joseph Crocker, brother of her sister Hannah's husband Jonathan. Children: i. Deborah, "last of Dec. 1691." ii. Prudence, July 26, 1692. iii. Benjamin, Apr. 5, 1696.
- ix. Shubael, b. Sept. 30, 1672; d. 1737, m. Mercy Blosson who was b. in Aug. 1678 at Barnstable. Children: i. Zacheus, who d. before Nov. 24, 1758. ii. Jabez, was living Nov. 24, 1758. iii. Mercy, m. () Jenkins and was living Nov. 24, 1758.
- X. John, b. Dec. 31, 1674; d. 1737-8; accompanied his father on visits to his 100-acre estate near Taunton, and met Joanna Shove, dau. of Rev. George Shove of Taunton, whom he m. 1st about 1704, and who d. just before July 13, 1717. John m. 2nd, about June 1719, Mary Crocker. Children by 1st wife: i. George, b. Dec. 30, 1705. ii. Hannah, b. Feb. 2, 1708. iii. Mary, b. Aug. 11, 1711. iv. Joanna, b. Jan. 8, 1715. Children by the 2nd wife: v. John, b. Feb. 13, 1720-1. vi. Job, b. June, 1726.

¹ "Howland Genealogy" (Franklyn Howland), p. 326. This would seem to be inconsistent with the usual age of women bearing children — her husband b. 1680, and she having her last child at age 58—Ed.)

HOPE HOWLAND, b. Aug. 30, 1629 at original homestead on Leyden III. Street in Plymouth; d. Jan. 8, 1683 at Barnstable; m. 1646 as his 1st wife, and mother of all his children, Elder John Chipman of Yarmouth, but moved to Barnstable after birth of 1st child. He survived Hope and m. 2nd RUTH, dau. of WILLIAM SARGENT, who survived him and became successively the wid. of Jonathan Winslow of Marshfield, and Richard Bourne of Barnstable. Ruth d. at Sandwich. Elder Chipman d. Apr. 7 (or 17) 1708. He made his will Nov. 12, 1702, which was proved and recorded. It mentions his children. RUTH made her will Dec. 6, 1710, but did not mention any of Hope's children. It was proved and recorded.

Children of John Chipman and Hope Howland:

- ELIZABETH, b. June 24, 1648 at Plymouth; d. after 1712; m. 1676 Hosea Joyse (Joyce) at Yarmouth.
- HOPE, b. Aug. 31, 1652; d. July 26, 1728; m. 1st Aug. 10, 1670 John HUCKINS; m. 2nd March 1, 1682 Jonathan Cobb. Residence during both marriages was Barnstable.
- Lydia, b. Dec. 25, 1654; m. about 1674, John Sargent. They lived in Malden. She survived John and as his wid. d. March 2, 1730.
- iv. John, b. Mar. 2, 1656-7; d. young.
- v. Hannah, b. Jan. 14, 1658; d. Nov. 4, 1696; m. Thomas Huckins.
- vi. Samuel, b. Apr. 15, 1661; d. 1723; m. Sarah, sister of Jonathan
- vii. Ruth, b. Dec. 31, 1663; m. Apr. 7, 1682, Eleazer Crocker who was b. July 21, 1650 at Barnstable.
- viii. Bethia, b. July 1, 1666; d. before 1699; m. Shubel Dimock.
- ix. Mercy, b. Feb. 6, 1668; d. June 12, 1724; m. Nathan the son of JAMES SKIFF.
- x. John, b. March 3, 1669; d. Jan. 4, 1756; m. 1st Mary Skiff; m. 2nd, ELIZABETH HANDLEY.
- xi. Desire, b. Feb. 26, 1673; d. March 28, 1705; m. Col. Meltiah Bourn.
- IV. ELIZABETH HOWLAND, b. about 1632 at original homestead on Leyden Street in Plymouth; d. after Dec. 21, 1687 (date her mother wrote her will) at Oyster Bay, L. I.; m. 1st Sept. 13, 1649, Ephraim Hicks who d. Dec. 2, 1649 at Plymouth; m. 2nd, July 10, 1651 at Plymouth as his 2nd wife, Capt. John Dickinson of Plymouth, whose 1st wife was Elizabeth, sister of her 1st husband, Ephraim Hicks.

There was no issue by 1st marriage. John and Elizabeth established their residence at Oyster Bay, L. I., where all their children were born:²

- i. ELIZABETH, b. Oct. 11, 1652; m. CALEB WRIGHT.
- Capt. Joseph, b. Dec. 24, 1654; m. Rose Townsend. ii.
- iii. Mercy, b. Feb. 23, 1657.

<sup>Mayflower Descendant." Vol. III, p. 183.
"Cape Cod Series" (Leon Clark Hills). Vol. II.</sup>

- iv. Jabez, b. July, 1660.
- v. Lydia, b. Aug. 5, 1662.
- vi. Samuel, b. Jan. 26, 1665.
- vii. Mehetabell, b. Feb. 1667.
- viii. Hannah, b. Jan. 6, 1671.
- ix. James, b. May 27, 1675.
- V. Lydia Howland, b. about the time John moved from his homestead on Leyden Street, Plymouth, to Duxborough; d. after Dec. 21, 1687, date her mother wrote her will; met James Brown, Gent. at Plymouth where LYDIA'S father Pilgrim John and James' father, John, were engaged in public work—and friends. James and Lydia m. about 1654. They established their home in that part of Rehoboth called "Wanamoiset" which Oct. 30, 1667 became the Town of Swansea. In 1665 James succeeded his very able brother-in-law, Thomas Willet, as Assistant, in which office he served for 13 years. Being highly respected by all, including the Indians, he was sent by Plymouth Colony, accompanied by Rev. Roger WILLIAMS, to King PHILIP in an effort to prevent the then approaching war. Out of the land later called "The North Purchase" 200 acres and 10 acres of meadow were reserved for James Brown by the Colony as some recognition of his public service. He made his will Oct. 25, 1694, in which he bequeathed his landed estates in Swansea, Rehoboth and in the "Naraganset Country," and other properties to his "Dear and Loving wife Lidia", and to his children. He appointed "My Loveing wife Lydia" as sole executrix of his will. He d. Oct. 29, 1710. Lydia survived him and administered the estate. As their son James did not mention his mother Lydia in his will, June 28, 1717, we know that Lydia died between 1710 and 1717.

That Brown family of Swansea was and still is very dear kin to all descendants of Pilgrims John and Elizabeth Howland, as James and Lydia shared their home with our Pilgrim Mother Elizabeth during the later part of her widowhood.

With Plymouth, Swansea became a Howland shrine and young Howland children of later generations were apprenticed there with the Browns, the Bosworths and other friendly people through affection and appreciation, and for superior training.

Children of James Brown and Lydia (Howland):

i. Lieutenant James, b. May 4, 1655; made his will June 28, 1717—the inventory was taken Apr. 27, 1719, the will was proved May 4, 1719. Evidently he died just preceding Apr. 27, 1719. He m. Margaret Dennison who survived him and as his wid. d. probably just before May 18, 1742, the date when her will was proved. She was the sister of George Dennison, who m. Mercy, the dau. of John and Desire (Howland) Gorham. Children probably not in order of birth: i. James. ii. William. iii. Benjamin. iv. Isaac, v. Mary, m. ()

- ANGELL. vi. ANN, m. () HILL. vii. MARGARET, m. () CARPENTER. viii. DOROTHY. ix. MERCY.
- ii. Dorothy, b. Aug. 28, 1666; d. Nov. 12, 1727; m. Nov. 12, 1690, Joseph Kent Jr
- iii. Jabez, b. July 9, 1668. He received from his father's will a bequest of one-half of the property "in the Naraganset Country." This may be the Jabez Brown who m. Nov. 18, 1718 a Mary Whipple at Providence, R. I.
- VI. Hannah Howland, b. about 1637 at her father's home in Duxborough; d. after 1710 at Swansea; m. July 6, 1661 Jonathan Bosworth. (Jonathan², Edward¹, Immigrant)

They lived at Colchester but sold their lands there to Hannah's father and brother Joseph, incident to establishing their permanent home in Swansea. When Hannah's mother, Pilgrim Elizabeth, in her late widowhood came to live at the home of her daughter Lydia in Swansea, Hannah and Jonathan helped in every way toward her comfort and happiness. They lived and raised their children there in that Swansea environment made sacred to Pilgrim Elizabeth's descendants.

Children of Hannah and Jonathan Bosworth:

- i. Mercy, b. May 30, 1662.
- ii. Hannah, b. Nov. 5, 1663; d. 1723; m. Major Nathaniel Jenks.
- iii. Eliazbeth, b. June 6, 1665; d. July 31, 1676.
- iv. Jonathan, b. Dec. 24, 1666; d. July 16, 1676.
- v. David, b. Sept. 15, 1670; m. Mercy Sturdevant.
- vi. John, b. Apr. 6, 1671; m. 1702, ELIZABETH TOOGOOD.
- vii. Jabez, b. Feb. 14, 1673; m. Susannah ().
- viii. Ichabod, b. March 18, 1676; m. 1st. Sarah Stacy; m. 2nd, Mary ().
- ix. Jonathan, b. Sept. 22, 1680; m. Nov. 26, 1703, Sarah Rounds. Child: i. Ichabod, b. May 31, 1706.
- VII. Captain Joseph Howland, b. about 1640 at Rocky Nook, Plymouth; d. Jan. 1703-4 at Plymouth; m. Dec. 7, 1664 Elizabeth Southworth. Elizabeth's father, Capt. Thomas, b. 1616 at Leyden; d. about 1669; m. Sept. 1, 1641, Elizabeth Reynor, dau. of Rev. John Reynor. They came to Plymouth, where their only daughter Elizabeth married Joseph Howland.

The father of Captain Thomas Southworth was Edward, who as a Separatist moved to Leyden, where he married May 28, 1613 Alice, dau. of Alexander Carpenter, a Separatist, who also moved to Leyden. As a widow Alice came to Plymouth in 1623 and m. as her 2nd husband, and as his 2nd wife, Governor William Bradford, and brought to him her son Thomas.

In her will June 7, 1670 this Alice bequeathed *** "Item I give unto my Deare Grand Child Elizabeth Howland, the daughter of my dear son Captain South-

¹ "Bosworth Genealogy" (Mrs. Mary Bostworth Clarke, 1925) Part 2, pp. 150-159.

WORTH deceased, the sum of seven pounds for the use and benefit of her son James Howland."

Governor Bradford trained Thomas Southworth for public service, and later Thomas was: Deputy (1651-1654); Assistant (1652-1660); Captain in charge of the Kennebeck Trading Post for three years; and Plymouth's Commissioner to the Confederation of the United Colonies for nine years. Bradford's attitude toward his stepson Thomas evidently was the same as Carver's toward John Howland, whom he treated as a son.

As his father grew old and was not able to do the work required as master of his Rocky Nook Estate, Joseph Howland remained at home, while all the other children established their residence elsewhere. That explains why his father bequeathed that estate to Joseph, and also why he gave life interest in that estate to his wife Elizabeth. So it is clear that Joseph, before and after marriage, lived in that dwelling house until it burned in 1675 or 1676 during King Philip's War, except that like his mother he may have lived in the village part of Plymouth for safety during that war. He did not rebuild that dwelling house but did build a new one on that estate, which in his will he calls "My now dweling hous."

He was a large real estate owner. He received an estate consisting of messuage, upland and meadow in Plymouth from his father-in-law, Capt. Thomas Southworth. He owned the land upon which Pilgrim Hall in Plymouth now stands.

That property was held by his descendants for four generations.

He was public minded but had no ambition to hold office. His ambition was to do his part in the public business. He executed the following public duties: Coroners Board, 1671, 1675, 1678; Surveyor, 1672, 1678, 1679, 1685; Petit-Jury duty, 1667, 1668, 1670, 1672, 1673, 1674, 1679, 1680, 1781, 1682, 1684, 1685; Member of the Board appointed by the Council of War, Oct. 29, 1672 to protect the Colonial property, viz. planks, boards, bolts, and bark; Commandant—as Lieutenant with appointment June 1, 1675, —over Indian prisoners; Town Councilman for Plymouth, with appointment Feb. 25, 1675 by the Council of War sitting at Marshfield; Selectman in Plymouth 1678, 1684, 1685; Auditor with two others of the Colonial Treasurer's accounts; appointed Lieutenant of Plymouth Company, and Captain in 1690; representative of the Church of Plymouth, Sept. 19, 1683, at the ordination of the Pastor of the church at Barnstable; Deputy to the General Court 1676, 1677 and 1678.

Children of Joseph Howland and Elizabeth (Southworth): 2

- i. Lydia, b. 1665; d. June 7, 1717; m. in October 1694, Joseph Jenkins of Barnstable.
- ii. Captain Thomas, b. about 1667; d. Dec. 2, 1739; m. in 1699 Joanna Cole. In 1728 he donated land for a street in Plymouth which was named Howland Street. Later he built a dwelling house on that street. Children: i. Consider, b. Aug. 28, 1700; d. Aug. 8, 1759; m. 1725 Ruth Bryant and had 1726 Lucy who m. Abraham Hammatt; 1728 Elizabeth; 1730 Ruth who m. Thomas Crandon; 1732 Mary who

 [&]quot;Mayflower Descendant." Vol. 6, pp. 86-88.
 "Mayflower Descendant." Vol. 6, pp. 86-88. "Howland Genealogy" (Franklyn Howland) pp. 328-329.

m. William Thomas; 1734 Thomas Southworth who m. Abiah Hovey; 1736 Consider; 1738 Joanna; 1739 Martha who m. Isaac Lebaron; 1742 Bethia who m. a Delano; 1745 Consider; 1748 Experience who m. Samuel West of Tiverton; 1751 John and Joseph, twins; 1753 Hannah. ii. Joanna: b. in June 1702 and d. June 5, 1715. iii. Experience, b. Nov. 30, 1705; m. Benjamin Lothrop. iv. Thomas, b. Nov. 23, 1707. v. Elizabeth, b. May 23, 1710. vi. Hannah, b. Dec. 19, 1712; m. 1st William Dyer, and 2nd Edwatd Winslow. vii. Joanna, b. May 7, 1716; d. 1810; m. Feb. 23, 1743-4, at Plymouth, Gideon White of Marshfield. viii. Joseph, b. July 24, 1718.

iii. SARAH, d. before 1703; m. in March 1696-7 (). Child mentioned in codicil to Joseph's will. i. Mary.

iv. James, m. 1697 Mary Lothrop.

v. ELIZABETH, m. Sept. 14, 1698 ISAAC HAMLIN.

vi. Mary, d. before Dec. 23, 1723; m. George Conant with no issue.

VII. NATHANIEL, b. 1671; d. Dec. 29, 1746; m. 1st, on 3d Tuesday of March, 1696-7, Martha, dau. of James Cole and sister of the wife of his brother, Captain Thomas, who d. Aug. 11, 1718; m. 2nd. Jan. 25, 1725-6 widow Abigail (Churchill) Billington. The 3d child by 1st wife, iii. Nathaniel, b. June 9, 1705; d. July 13, 1766; m. 1st, Dec. 6, 1733 at Bristol, Yet Mercy, widow of Isaac Palmer of Bristol and dau. of Josiah Howland. Yet Mercy d. Aug. 8, 1737 at Bristol, where she was buried. At the top of the gravestone of his wife, Nathaniel had the Howland coat-of-arms inscribed. In her book "Family Records" Eliza (Mewton) Woolsey Howland states: "This use of the arms in those simple days is suggestive of what must have been the social position of the family."

viii. Benjamin, b. 1689; d. Sept. 7, 1689.

ix. Joseph, d. Sept. 8, 1689. He was probably the twin of Benjamin.

(2) VIII. Jabez.

IX. Ruth, b. about 1646 at Rocky Nook; d. before 1679; m. Nov. 17, 1664 Thomas Cushman, who survived Ruth and m. 2nd, Oct. 16, 1679 Abs-Gail Fuller of Rehoboth.

Children of RUTH and THOMAS:

- i. Robert, b. Oct. 4, 1665; d. Sept. 7, 1757; m. 1st, about 1697, Persis () who d. Jan. 14, 1743; m. 2nd, 1745 Prudence Sherman at Marshfield.
- ii. Thomas, b. 1670 at Duxbury, d. Jan. 9, 1736-7 at Lebanon, Conn.
- iii. Desire, b. Feb. 9, 1683; d. Feb. 8, 1763; m. 1728, Samuel Kent.
- X. Lieutenant Isaac, b. Nov. 15, 1649 at Rocky Nook, Plymouth; d. March 9, 1723-4 at Middleborough; m. Elizabeth, dau .of George Vaughn of Middleborough, who was b. 1652 and d. Oct. 29, 1727. They made

¹ "Cape Cod Series," (Leon Clark Hills) Vol. II.

their residence in Middleborough. He contributed time liberally to the public service as follows: 1672, Surveyor of Highways; 1674, Selectman; 1676, Lieutenant in King Philip's War; 1682, member of the "Grand Enquest;" 1689-1691, Deputy to the General Court.

Children of Isaac Howland and Elizabeth (Vaughn):1

- i. Seth, b. Nov. 26, 1677; d. Oct. 26, 1729; m. May 24, 1728 Elizabeth Delano of Middleborough.
- ii. Isaac, b. March 6, 1679; m. Sarah, dau. of Jeremiah Thomas and had: i. 1714, Isaac. ii. 1715, Jeremiah; m. Betty Vaughn. iii. 1722, Charles. iv. Joseph.
- iii. Priscilla, b. Aug. 22, 1681; m. Peter Bennett.
- iv. ELIZABETH, b. Dec. 2, 1682; d. Apr. 1, 1685.
- v. Nathan, b. Oct. 13, 1687; m. Frances Coombs.
- vi. Jael, b. Oct. 13, 1688; d. "11th month 1743;" m. Captain Nathaniel Southworth.
- vii. Susannah, b. Oct. 14, 1690; d. "11th month 1743;" m. Ephraim Wood.
- viii. Hannah, b. Oct. 16, 1694; m. Dec. 15, 1716 John Tinkham.

The frenzy begotten of belief in witchcraft spread over the so-called civilized world in the seventeenth century. It made no allowance for sex, age, religious belief or rank in office. It took the lives of thousands in Europe and of some in the colonies. But the minds of the people of Plymouth Colony were poised on a spiritual plane well above the surge of that mental epidemic. As the Colony did not believe in witchcraft and had no Charter for government but only a Patent for land, it was vulnerable to attack by the King, who believed in witchcraft and its punishment. Accordingly it sought avoidance of offense to the Crown and passed a law against witchcraft. The Colonists knew that the force of law lies in its application. Only two complaints were made in Plymouth Colony; both were referred to the duly constituted courts. In the first case in 1661—the husband of the woman charged with witchcraft brought suit for slander, and the General Court, with Governor Prence presiding, sustained the charge and held that the complainant be publicly whipped or pay 5 pounds penalty, or confess the slander and pay costs and charges. The complainant confessed and paid.

The second case—in 1667—was referred to a court of twelve, of whom John Howland, son of Pilgrim John, was one, and Governor Winslow presided. That jury-court found a verdict of "Not guilty, on the charge of Witchcraft."

Under the reach of the Pilgrims for divine guidance to establish a Pilgrim Republic, to which all could repair for enjoyment of freedom and liberty, their great Governor Carver was inspired to make a soverign treaty of peace with Grand Sachem Massasoit, the Indian ruler over that general area, which treaty was kept by Plymouth Colony and by Massasoit until his death in 1660. During that period the Pilgrims were granted title in 1630 by the King's Agency called "The Council

¹ "Howland Genealogy," (Franklyn Howland) pp. 329-330.

for New England" to approximately the area of Massasoit's domain.—Massasoit regarded them as allies, which increased his prestige not only with his own subjects but with his enemy, the Iroquois Confederation. Massasoit had two sons named Moonanum Wamsuta and Pomartarkim (changed later to Metacomet). These two sons went to the session of the General Court following the death of their father, and asked for English names. The Court unwisely named the elder son Alexander and the younger son Philip, after the great kings of Macedon, which error undoubtedly caused Alexander and Philip to believe that they were superior to the Pilgrims in war.

Alexander succeeded his father as Sachem and, plotting against Plymouth Colony in 1662, died between June 13 and Aug. 16, 1662. Philip, succeeding Alexander, also plotting against Plymouth Colony, began war in 1675 by burning, plundering and killing. The war power of Philip was underestimated and Plymouth Colony was not prepared. By 1676 he was threatening Plymouth Town and only those were safe who were in the Village of Plymouth, whose armed forces and rebuilt fort gave protection. Captain Benjamin Church was appointed Commanderin-chief of the troops in the field and was assisted by the following able Lieutenants: Jabez Howland, Nathaniel Southworth, Jacob Cook and Jonathan Delano. In a masterly quick campaign, Church drove Philip back to his base at Mount Hope (now Bristol, R. I.) and defeated and killed him there.

During that short and desperate war the mother country, England, taking the attitude of an indifferent spectator, gave no help of any kind but instead sent over a rebuke because the Colonists had not forwarded official bulletins from time to time. That attitude by England encouraged men of Plymouth Colony to leave the coast and move into the western part of their colony and into adjoining Rhode

Island, relying upon their own effort for protection against Indians.

In 1685 Plymouth Colony was divided into counties, viz., Plymouth, Barnstable, and Bristol.

In 1692 Plymouth Colony was discontinued as a separate colony and was

added to Massachusetts Bay Colony under the charter of 1691.

The boundary between Plymouth Colony, later Massachusetts Bay Colony, and the Colony of Rhode Island was disputed by those colonies from 1663 to 1746. The land grant in 1620 to Plymouth, confirmed by letters patent Jan. 13, 1629 fixed Narragansett Bay and its tributary, the Pawtucket River, as the western boundary of Plymouth Colony.

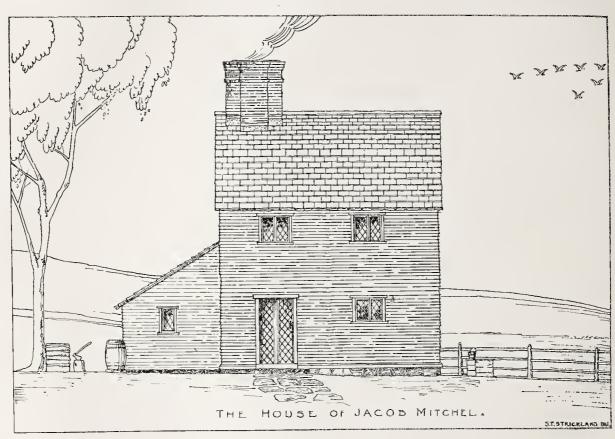
Frontier life, with lag in providing public offices for records; distance and inconvenience of long and sometimes dangerous journeys essential to turn data over to a public recorder; conflicting demands by two jurisdictional offices for records, and finally taxing the recording of data, produced unrecorded gifts of property by parents to children, and many other situations caused the keeping of personal or family records that never were recorded.

James N. Arnold, Author of "Vital Records of Rhode Island," states in the Introduction to his Volume I:

"We are fully aware of the fact that many will consult these pages and feel bitter disappointment in not finding the name they seek, and will wonder that a family so numerous, or one residing so long in the town, has so little or nothing recorded. This very feeling has come often to the compiler and he has often wondered; but the reader must remember that this is not the fault of the records or compiler but of the parties themselves, that they failed to place the items upon the Town Records. The compiler believes that not more than a quarter of what should have been placed on the Records has been placed there from the year 1790 to 1850. Before that time probably more than half of the matter was recorded."







PLYMOUTH

JABEZ HOWLAND AND DESCENDANTS

All of the sons of Pilgrims John and Elizabeth chose to remain on the coast line populated area of Plymouth Colony where, relatively, data needed by a later genealogist was recorded, except Jabez who moved to the new frontier area of Mount Hope Lands, and living in that three-mile strip claimed by Plymouth and Rhode Island Colonies, used the personal or family method of keeping records, which method is adequate for one generation, but plainly does not meet the need of a later genealogist. Jabez and his following four generations lived under changing jurisdictions and situations and kept personal and family records. As this family in all its generations was prominent and highly respected; references to them are found in other books which, added to such public records as are available, give us the record. Among other books is "Life and Recollections of John Howland," late president of the Rhode Island Historical Society, by Edwin M. Stone, 1857, who descended from Joseph the son of Jabez, and living in Providence was so situated by blood relation and by time and place of residence, that he know the facts and from that book a fact is briefly stated as follows:

"Jabez and wife Bethia (Thatcher) had five sons: Jabez, Josiah, John, Samuel, and Joseph.

"From the first four names are descended a numerous posterity."

2. Lieutenant Jabez Howland, b. 1644-5 at Rocky Nook, Plymouth; d. just before Feb. 6, 1711-12¹ at Bristol, Bristol County, Mass.; m. about 1668 Bethia Thatcher, who survived him and as his wid. d. Dec. 19, 1725 at Bristol.²

In his boyhood and young manhood Jabez met the group of the then prominent families who were associated with Jabez' father in Colonial public service. Among them was the family of Anthony Thatcher of Yarmouth. John and Anthony served together, first as Committeemen and later as Deputies on the Plymouth General Court in 1643, 1644, 1645, 1646, 1647, 1651, 1652, 1654 and 1663. That meeting of families brought Jabez and Bethia together and happily resulted in their marriage. They were active members of Rev. John Cotton's church at Plymouth.

As he approached or just reached the age of 21, a town meeting Feb. 5, 1665 authorized him to choose from unoccupied land, enough upland and meadow to meet his need. He paid his first taxes in March, 1666-7 and he had voted at town meetings before May 18, 1668.

In 1668 Jabez bought a house and lot in Plymouth Village from Jacob Mitchell. It was the bridal home of Jabez and Bethia.

¹ "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. VII, and will of Jabez Howland.
² "Genealogical Dictionary of New England." (James Savage).

Because of the age of his father and the uncomfortable isolation of Rocky Nook in the Winter period, Jabez enlarged his house and gave home to his father and mother there during the Winter periods, while Joseph and family remained at Rocky Nook. And so it was in that house that his father, Pilgrim John Howland, died Feb. 23, 1672-3, and from which his body was laid on Burial Hill in the midst of Winter. Elizabeth continued to live there while son Joseph, the heir to Rocky Nook, cared for it for her, as it was her property during her life. She moved her personal possessions from Rocky Nook to her home at the house of her son Jabez in town. She lived there safely during King Philip's War, and her personal property which she later willed to her children was safe with her when the messuage at Rocky Nook was burned in 1676. She was still living at the house of Jabez in the Village of Plymouth when he sold that house. Governor Bradford required her consent on that deed before he accepted it for record. It is evident that he insisted that the move by Jabez could not be interpreted as an inconvenience to Pilgrim Elizabeth, and so she signed the deed and gave her consent to the sale.¹

In his "Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth," published by Hon. WILLIAM T.

Davis in 1883, he states:

"No house yet described is more nearly associated with the Pilgrims than this.*** Let this ancient structure be added to the list of Pilgrim memorials, and hereafter share with The Rock our veneration and respect."

The Pilgrim John Howland Society bought that house and its grounds in 1912. Recently it has restored that house to its form and condition when Jabez sold it in 1680. The Society meets there once a year in honor and loving respect for our forebears, Pilgrims John and Elizabeth (Tilley) Howland. It permits visitors when the house is open. That house is now called "The Howland House."

While each of the brothers of Jabez lived the life of a country gentleman, Jabez chose an industrial and commercial life. He started as smith, viz., an artifficer and or craftsman in metals. He specialized as a smith in black metals, rather than a silversmith or goldsmith. He worked in his shop on the same lot with his house, and there he made commercial iron from bog-iron, and some of his unused bog-iron and some of the slag was uncovered when the building was being restored recently.

The upland and meadow at Eastham which he received from his father's will

he sold June 5, 1673 for 15 pounds to Thomas Paine of Eastham.

He received from his father's will the remainder of land on Watson's Hill that his father had not sold. Aug. 5, 1672 a Town Meeting gave him some upland that adjoined land he had received from his father's will. To that upland the Town Meeting added a small meadow. It was surveyed to him Oct. 1, 1672 by WILLIAM CROW.

June 1, 1675 he petitioned the General Court for land as a child born "here,"

before strangers.

JABEZ was public spirited but without any ambition merely to hold office, and was willing to give time to the interest of the people-at-large in any capacity.

He made and put up a five-rail fence along the street side of the lot adjoining on the east the original homestead lot of his father on Leyden Street.

^{1 &}quot;Plymouth Colony Deeds," Vol. IV, Part II, pp. 393-4.

The blackbirds were a menace to the seeded corn, and April 22, 1673 a Town Meeting appointed him with three others: to fine each townsman two pence for failure to turn in six heads of blackbirds by June 1, and for failure to turn in six more by Oct. 1, following; and to pay a pence apiece for each blackbird's head turned in, in excess of 12. That same Town Meeting appointed JABEZ and one other to prevent interruption of fish swimming up or down the brook and to prevent taking, except for food, any fish swimming up the brook.

He served as Petit Juryman in 1669, 1670, 1671, 1672, 1673, 1674, 1676, 1677,

1678 and 1679.

June 1, 1675 he was elected Constable. June 3, 1679 he was chosen a Selectman. Jan. 7, 1675 a Town Meeting at Plymouth appointed him with four others on a War Production Board to provide clothing for the men selected for war service.

June 13, 1676 a Town Meeting appointed him with three others on a War

Finance Board to prepare pay blanks for service men.

JABEZ' military service took him to Mount Hope where he saw the great Narragansett water entrance to the ocean, and that deep water harbor at Mount Hope, now called Bristol. He pictured it as an ideal place for industry with a local and overseas market in which to sell.

He returned to Plymouth as an enthusiast for movement to Mount Hope. He kept himself informed on the chance of moving there. It is most impressive that he sold his landed property in Plymouth Jan. 4, 1680, eight days before King Charles II in England granted Mount Hope Lands to Plymouth Colony.

Jabez with his family moved to the Mount Hope Lands in 1680. He and some or all of his brothers assembled for safe escort of their mother Elizabeth as far as Swansea, where she joined her daughter Lydia Brown. Elizabeth was 73 years of age as she journeyed over the ancient Indian trails through the deep and overhanging forest from Plymouth to Swansea. She lived there with her daughter Lydia and husband James Brown and family during the remaining seven years of her life, and died there Wednesday, Dec. 21,-31, 1687. They buried her there in the Brown lot in what is now called Little Neck Cemetery, Riverside, off Bullocks Cove in East Providence, R. I.

JABEZ received from his mother's will "My fetherbed and boulster, it is in his custody, and also one Rugg and two Blankets—it belongeth on ye said Bed—, and also my great iron pot and pothooks." Those articles were a part of her household furniture used by her in the JABEZ house in Plymouth, that was transported on their move west in 1680. But as she did not need them at the home of her daughter Lydia Brown at Swansea, she asked JABEZ to take them to his new home at Mount Hope.

After the celebration on occasion of Elizabeth's safe arrival at her new home with her daughter Lydia Brown, and departure of other members of the family who had participated in that guard of honor on that journey, Jabez with his family and goods continued on the trail to the place on the Mount Hope Lands that he had selected to be his future home in that frontier area. It was not convenient then for him to take to record a description of the land upon which he settled. The title was kept in the family during those confusing times and did not go to record until his grandson John sold that property. He may have bought that land from the

¹ "Mayflower Descendant." Vol. III.

Indians, or because of his brilliant record in the war he may have been told that he could select a homestead on the new land. Although we do not have the record as of that time that shows how he acquired his initial holdings of Mount Hope land, we do have the record of some of his later purchases.¹

He had been there two years before we find a recording of purchase of land

by him.

September 21, 1682 he bought 10 acres of land on "Mount Hope Neck" from the Proprietors and sold same Oct. 3, 1683 to John Smith for 15 pounds.

Jan. 25, 1691-2 he bought for 5 pounds from William Stone a small parcel of land in Bristol just west of John Walley on the north side of King Street.

June 24, 1700 for 38 pounds and 10 shillings he gave a mortgage to NATHANIEL BLAGROVE on his 7-16 of a piece of land, wharf, and warehouse.

Oct. 18, 1703 he sold for 6 pounds, 7 shillings and 6 pence one quarter of an acre and 11 rod south of the Prison Lot in Bristol to Captain Simon Davis.

Oct. 18, 1703 he bought from Simon Davis with 20 pounds silver a full acre of land bordering his on the west.

Aug. 20, 1711 he, because of parental love and affection, gave to his son Sam-

UEL a parcel of land in Bristol.

Including the inventory on his estate, the record items of land sold, given away or held exceed the record items of land bought. He was on Mount Hope Lands before any records were kept on those lands. The Andros tyranny was during the new period of Bristol. It is clear from above recordings that they represent only a part of his holdings. Except for his first early settlement land that passed by unrecorded gift through his son John to his grandson John, or directly to his grandson John as a child, it is difficult if not impossible to trace his other unrecorded holdings.

At the first Town Meeting in Bristol, Sept. 1, 1681, at which the Proprietors admitted settlers as citizens, Jabez was admitted. He impressed all as a man of great force and energy, as he must have been to prove himself an acceptable Lieutenant to Captain Church.

Nov. 10, 1681 he was chosen as the first Town Clerk of Bristol to serve until the next election.

At the next election he was chosen as Selectman. He was chosen later in 1684 and 1685 as Selectman and again in 1696.

In 1684 the General Court selected him to serve as Ensign under Captain John Walley of the military company at Bristol.

In 1682 he was chosen as Assessor of Bristol. In 1683 Mr. John Saffin, a merchant from Boston, claimed that Jabez had made an unjust rating against him for taxes amounting to 20 pounds. Jabez took the claim to court where the jury approved his rating and charged costs to Saffin.

He was chosen in 1689 and again in 1690 as Deputy to the General Court.

The estimate of Jabez was correct. Bristol became a leading center for local and overseas trade. In 1696 it was known as the "Best Towne of Bizness" in the area that had been Plymouth Colony.

^{1 &}quot;Bristol County Deeds." Books IV, VII, IX.

• ,



THE MITCHELL HOUSE
ENLARGED BY JABEZ HOWLAND TO FURNISH
QUARTERS FOR HIS PARENTS

He became a leading smith there. He made, by foundry and forge, iron pieces needed for construction or repair locally—including construction or repair of ships—and for overseas trade. He advanced to overseas commerce, and April 7, 1698 was part owner of the ship named "Sea Flower" of Boston.

Being impelled by desire for private gain and also for public interest, he built by 1681 a hotel which accommodated people from out of town who went to Bristol

for trade.

JABEZ, as a smith and business man in trade and commerce, accumulated wealth.

The Vital Records of Bristol are not complete. Usually when vital records are not complete we rely on the data in deeds for statement of status of children at date of will. We have considered the deeds. His will of May 14, 1708 did not give those data, as he willed all his estate to his "Deare and Loveing wife." He evidently had disposed by gift of much of his estate before he made his will. The remaining part of his estate so willed, less reservations which his widow could make, was divided Nov. 26, 1714 among those not already provided for by him.

Children of Jabez Howland and Bethia (Thatcher):

The first six children were born at Plymouth, and the other five were born at Bristol, R. I.

I. Jabez, b. Nov. 15, 1669; d. Oct. 17, 1732 at Bristol; bur. Oct. 19, 1732 in the cemetery near St. Michael's Episcopal Church, but this cemetery was discontinued and the old gravestones were removed to the Juniper Hill Cemetery; m. Patience Stafford, who d. Oct. 23, 1721 at the age of 52, and who was the first to be buried in St. Michael's Churchyard.

Jabez worked with his father and became a blacksmith. He was selected in 1724 as one of the first vestry of St. Michael's Protestant Church in Bristol. He with others represented Bristol on the General Court. They resided in Bristol, where he was a prominent man. He d. intestate and Nov. 27, 1732 the Court appointed his daughters "Mrs. Bethia Bragg, widow, and Elizabeth Howland, spinster, both of Bristol, as administratrixes of the estate of their father."

The children of Jabez Howland and Patience (Stafford) were all born at Bristol, R. I.¹

- i. Bethiah, b. Dec. 5, 1702; m. 1st, May 19, 1725, Nicholas Bragg who d. before Nov. 27, 1732; m. 2nd, Aug. 29, 1733, Simeon (Simon) Davis.
- ii. Mary (Mercy), b. Jan. 27, 1704; m. 1st, Nov. 22, 1722, Capt. George Pearce; m. 2nd, July 9, 1724, Isaac Martindale.
- iii. Elizabeth, b. May 15, 1707; d. Oct. 5, 1707.
- iv. Elizabeth, b. July 17, 1709; m. Oct. 3, 1733, Otis Little of Pembroke.
- v. Sarah, b. Apr. 30, 1711; m. Aug. 27, 1732, Isaac Lawton.
- vi. Jabez, b. July 20, 1713; d. in May 1739 at sea; int. March 11, 1727 to m. Mary Greene of Warren.

¹ Arnold's "Vital Records of Bristol County, Rhode Island."

- Patience, b. March 23, 1716-17; being above the age of 14 years. made choice Feb. 23, 1732-33 of Mr. WILLIAM MONROE of Bristol "To be my Guardian;" m. Samuel Barker of Scituate, Mass.
- THOMAS, b. Feb. 5, 1719-20; being under the age of 14 years, a guardian named William Monroe of Bristol was appointed Feb. 23, 1732-3. Apr. 16, 1734 Thomas, being above the age of 14 years, chose Samuel LITTLE of Bristol to be his guardian. Apr. 18, 1734 a division of real estate was made and Thomas received two parcels, one of 10 acres and one of one-fifth of an acre. Apr. 12, 1738 Samuel Little, guardian of Thomas Howland, a minor, with others pretitioned that the administratrixes be ordered to render an account of what still remained in their hands "that so your petitioners may have what in justice belongs to them."
- John, b. about Jan. 15, 1672; d. before the end of that month.
- Ветніан, b. June 3, 1674; d. 1676 at Plymouth. III.
- (3)IV. Josiah
 - John, b. July 26, 1679; d. before May 14, 1708; m. Martha Wardell before his father made his will. She d. before Nov. 26, 1714. From that marriage was descended a numerous posterity. John came with his parents and grandmother Elizabeth from Plymouth to Swansea in 1680, and probably was the special charge of ELIZABETH, as all of BETHIA'S time undoubtedly was occupied by her baby Elizabeth, who was born in 1680 as their last child before leaving for the West. That baby Eliza-BETH was a child in arms, and grandmother Elizabeth of course took John under her care, as he was a year old. Child:
 - John, b. about 1704; d. between Feb. 21, 1781 and Apr. 14, 1784 in Scituate-Glocester area, R. I.; m. May 13, 1725 at Swansea, Mass. Freelove Wood who d. about 1784 in the Scituate-Glocester area.

Upon the death of his father, John lived with his mother. Upon her death he lived with a maternal relative, Joseph Wardell (Ward-ALL) who was present as his representative at the division of the remainder—less property withheld by Bethia—of the estate of Jabez, Nov. 26, 1714. As the gift, before will, by JABEZ of his first settlement land at Mount Hope to his son John, or to this grandson, was an accomplished fact, this land was not a part of that to be divided.2 Upon John's arrival at suitable age for apprenticeship, about 1718, it is clear that he was so apprenticed to a paternal relative at Swansea, where he met and later married Freelove, daughter of Dr. William and Susenah () Wood.3 They made their home at Swansea. The fertile land released for sale in the new towns of Scituate and Glocester, created in 1731 in Rhode Island, attracted them and many others in Swansea. Feb. 5, 1737-8 they sold her inherited 60 acres of

² Vital Records of Swansea, Mass.

Vital Records of Swansea, Mass.
 Will of Jabez Howland, Vol. VII, "Mayflower Descendants."

land in Swansea for 803 pounds, and Feb. 18, 1742-3 he sold his 40acre farm in Bristol for 650 pounds.

He moved to that new Scituate-Glocester area in 1744-5 and became prominent as one of the Proprietors of "The Wallum Pond Estates" which lay astride the boundary of Rhode Island and Massachusetts. He and his family were greatly respected as descendants of Pilgrim John Howland. The Allom Pond Farm, so-called, became the property of this family in 1770 and was held until 1802 when it was sold to James Burlingham. From 1770 for a long period it was called "The Howland Farm." Recently it has been known as "The Single-TON Farm." That farm contained 330 acres, extending to the north to boundary with Massachusetts, and on the west to Wallum Pond. About 200 yards southwesterly of the farm house there is a small burying ground containing field-stone monuments from which weather has erased the names.

JOHN and FREELOVE sold a part of their holdings in 1779, and d. before Apr. 14, 1784 at the home of their son John, then called "The HOWLAND Farm," and without any doubt were buried 200 yards southwest of the Howland farm house in the little family graveyard, some of whose field grave stones are still standing, but unfortunately the names have all been erased by weather.2 There John and Free-LOVE and others of our forebears rest in peace. Children of JOHN and Freelove, all born at Swansea except William, who was born at Scituate, R. I. i. Mary, b. May 23, 1726. ii. Huldah, b. Nov. 6, 17-. iii. Freelove, b. Feb. 8, 1730, m. Apr. 9, 1758 Ezra Stone of Scituate, R. I. iv. Susannah, b. Apr. 12, 1731; m. Apr. 19, 1750 HENRY SALISBURY of Scituate, R. I. v. John, b. March 15, 1734-5; d. an infant. vi. Miriam, b. Feb. 8, 1741. vii. John, Jr., b. Jan. 14, 1743-4; d. after 1802; m. Lois (Lucy) (). viii. William, b. July 1, 1747 at Scituate, R. I.; m. MARY ().

- ELIZABETH, b. about 1680 as the last child born at Plymouth before the move to Mount Hope Lands; d. 1707 at Bristol; m. () Townsend. Child: i. NATHAN.³
- VII. JUDAH, b. May 7, 1683, first child b. at Bristol; bur. Nov. 12, 1683 at Britsol.
- SETH, b. Jan. 5, 1684; bur. Apr. 12, 1685 at Bristol. VIII.
- SAMUEL, b. May 10, 1686; d. May 15, 1748 at Bristol and is bur. by the side of his 1st wife Abigail in Bristol; m. 1st, May 6, 1708 at Bristol, ABIGAIL CAREY who was b. Aug. 31, 1684 at Bristol, and d. Aug. 6, 1737 at Bristol; m. 2nd, Feb. 18, 1741-2 Madam RACHEL ALLEN of Barrington, who d. Jan. 25, 1744-5. During this marriage period he was called Samuel Howland Esq. of Barrington; as Samuel Howland Esq. of Bristol he m. 3d. June 4, 1747 at Rehoboth, Mrs. Dorothy Hunt of Rehoboth.

 [&]quot;Wallum Pond Estates" (Harry Lee Barnes, 1922).
 "Wallum Pond Estates" (Harry Lee Barnes, 1922).
 Will of Jabez Howland, Vol. VII, "Mayflower Descendants," and "Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold).

He was appointed King's Attorney (District Attorney now) from and including 1702 to 1746. He was Register of Deeds for Bristol County from and including 1721 to 1741. He was Treasurer of the County in 1732. He was Justice of the Peace. After transfer of Bristol from Massachusetts to Rhode Island in 1746-7 he was Town Clerk of Bristol.

By trade he was a cooper, and in official documents generally gave his name as Samuel Howland Cooper, or Esq. He was a deacon of the First Church of Bristol (Congregational) from June 4, 1722 to his death and was called Deacon. He was an able and well-educated gentleman and contributed generously of his time to the public service.

He made his will Apr. 9, 1748. He made Deacon John Throop, Mr. Samuel Smith, and Joseph Wardwell agents for disposing of his gifts to the poor. He gave to his beloved wife Dorothy a choice between her dower and 200 pounds of money and return to her of all the goods that she brought to him by their marriage. He gave her 30 pounds to put herself in mourning. He also gave her "my chaise with ye harness."

He gave to the Rev. John Burt, Pastor of his church, money with which to buy a ring.

He made bequest to all of his then living children (whose names he gave) and to the children of his son Samuel.

All his children were by his first wife and were born at Bristol, R. I.¹

- i. Samuel, b. Apr. 3, 1709; d. about 1748 at sea. His intent, July 29, 1738 to marry "L—Smith" of New Haven, Conn. did not lead to marriage. He m. Nov. 27, 1743 at Portsmouth, R. I., Abigail, dau. of John Moon of Portsmouth, who survived him. They resided at Bristol. He was a ship captain. In his will Samuel's father Samuel gave residence in Bristol to his son Samuel's widow Abigail (Moon) Howland and the two children. Children. i. Abigail, b. Aug. 4, 1744. ii. Elizabeth, b. March 16, 1745.
- ABIGAIL, b. Oct. 18, 1710; m. 1st, Oct. 23, 1729, ISRAEL CHURCH; m. 2nd, May 31, 1739, BENJAMIN SMITH.
- iii. John, b. Sept. 27, 1713; m. Oct. 24, 1736, Martha Wardwell.
- iv. Tabitha, b. Jan. 13, 1715; m. 1st, May 12, 1738, Nathaniel Carey;
 m. 2nd, Apr. 22, 1742, John Peckham.
- v. Seth, b. July 9, 1719; d. Aug. 6, 1719.
- vi. Phebe, b. March 9, 1720-1; m. Oct. 11, 1741, John Wardwell.
- vii. Mary, b. March 18, 1722-3; m. Sept. 26, 1742, WILLIAM WARDWELL.
- viii. Mehitable, b. Feb. 1, 1724-5, d. Feb. 13, 1764; m. Dec. 18, 1746, Stephen Wardwell who d. Nov. 13, 1747.
- X. Experience, b. May 19, 1687.
- XI. Joseph of Swansea, b. Oct. 14, 1692; d. Aug. 16, 1737 in that part of Swansea that later became East Providence; m. about 1712 in that part of Swansea that later became East Providence, Bathsheba Carey, who was b. Aug. 14, 1693 at Bristol, dau. of David and Elizabeth Carey.

^{1 &}quot;Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold).

BATHSHEBA was cousin to ABIGAIL CAREY, the wife of her husband's brother SAMUEL. By marriage she and her cousin became sisters-in-law. Joseph lived in that part of Swansea that later became East Providence. Children were born at Bristol:¹

- i. Lydia lived and died in that part of Swansea that later became East Providence; b. Nov. 6, 1715; m. June 22, 1747 at Newport, Edward Belcher.
- ii. Joseph, b. Dec. 6, 1717; d. Mar. 3, 1775 at Newport, but is published under vital records of Providence; m. 14, 1745 at Newport, Sarah Barker who was born April 5, 1725 in that part of Newport that since 1743 is called Middletown, as first child of Jeremian and Penelope Barker. They lived in Newport where all their children were born, but due to the loss of Vital Records of Newport in 1779, as an unfortunate incident of the war then waging, we turn to Davis and to Mr. E. M. Stone's book on "The Life and Recollections of John Howland, M. A., President of the Rhode Island Historical Society."

Children: i. Henry, b. 1751; m. Susan Baker and had Benjamin Baker who became the Town and Probate Clerk of Newport. ii. Pen-ELOPE, m. Captain John Taber. iii. John, b. Oct. 31, 1757; d. Nov. 5, 1854 at Providence, R. I.; m. Jan. 28, 1788 at Providence, Mary CARLISLE, the great grand niece of Benjamin Franklin. He moved to Providence, R. I. in 1770 and lived there to his death. He rendered valuable service in the War for Independence. Finally he was persuaded to accept an appointment of Town Auditor in 1803. He executed that duty until 1818, when he was elected Town Treasurer, serving until 1832, when he declined further duty there. He was Treasurer of the Rhode Island Historical Society from 1824 until 1833, when he was elected President of that Society; which duty, to the satisfaction of all, he continued to execute until his death. In 1835 the Royal Society of Northern Antiquarians of Denmark conferred on him the distinction of honorary membership. In 1835 the Board of Fellows of Brown University conferred on him the honorary degree of Master of Arts. In 1805 he was chosen as Secretary of the Providence Association of Mechanics and Manufacturers, which duty he executed until 1823, when he was elected Vice President. In 1824 he was elected President of that Association and served until 1830, when he retired from that office at the age of 73.

He was intensely interested in the life events of Pilgrim John Howland. He visited Plymouth in 1803 to participate in "Forefathers' day," and again in 1820 to participate in the two-hundredth anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims. He was inspired, and later returned to Plymouth with his daughter and a nephew to "search for and identify the grave of John Howland." He went to the Registry Office "to examine the early records, and from thence went to the

^{1 &}quot;Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold).

burying ground"—on Burial Hill—"where the sought-for grave had been identified." He made arrangements with his venerable friend, Dr. Thatcher, to superintend the erection of a headstone. His last visit to Plymouth was in company with his friend and neighbor William Wilkinson. They carried with them a curiously inlaid cabinet, brought from England in the "Mayflower," by the parents of Peregrine White, belonging to the widow of Governor Jabez Brown, and by her given to the Pilgrim Society. In presenting it Mr. Howland said, "I hope it may be seen a thousand years hence."

He was also intensely interested in the life events of Pilgrim John's son Jabez, his forefather, and the descendants of Jabez.

This John Howland of Providence lived at the proper time, and had the blood interest, to note his cousin descendants of Josiah and brother John, sons of Jabez, who moved from Massachusetts into Rhode Island to live, and stated that Jabez had five sons: Jabez, Josiah, John, Samuel, and Joseph (his forebear), and that:

"From the four first named are descended a numerous posterity."

3. Mr. Josiah Howland, b. Aug. 6, 1676 at the Howland House in Plymouth; d. Feb. 8, 1717 at Bristol¹ and is bur. in "Old East Burial Ground" in Bristol; m. Nov. 24, 1709 at Barnstable, Yet Mercy Shove in a ceremony conducted by Mr. Russel at the church or at the residence of her sister Joanna (Shove) Howland, wife of John. John and Joanna lived in Barnstable. She survived him and as his widow died after 1760 at the home of her son Samuel in the Scituate-Glocester area in Rhode Island.

Josiah was four years old when he came with his parents and grandmother Elizabeth from Plymouth to Swansea, and with his parents continued on to Mount Hope. He was old enough to register a mental picture of that informal journey, which had much to do with his love of travel and of his keeping family records, instead of using public records.

Pilgrims John and Elizabeth Howland were close friends of Nathaniel and Hannah Bacon during the long years in which John and Nathaniel worked together as members of the General Court at Plymouth. That friendship was so strong that it constituted a basic attitude between their respective descendants.

Orphan Yet Mercy, a granddaughter of Nathaniel, was given a home by a near neighbor of Jabez Howland, General John Walley, who was a Proprietor of Bristol and a brother of the first husband of Yet Mercy's mother Hannah. There in Bristol Josiah and Yey Mercy, grandchildren of John and Nathaniel, were drawn together as happy companions and engaged themselves to marry. After Yet Mercy's sister Joanna married John Howland and made their home at Barnstable, and after General Walley moved to Boston, Yet Mercy made her home with her sister Joanna at Barnstable.

But they could not be separated. Nov. 1, 1709 Jabez, with 106 pounds bought from Nathan Hayman, mariner, and his wife Priscilla a town-house with land in

¹ "Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold).

Bristol. Having provided a bridal home, Josiah followed Yet Mercy to Barnstable and married her there Nov. 24, 1709.

Josiah and Yet Mercy cared very little for public records and adhered to their respective family customs of keeping the records in the family. They did not even turn in for public record in their home town of Bristol the vital statistic

of their marriage at Barnstable.

Josiah worked for his father until the latter died just before Feb. 6, 1711-12. During that period Jabez trained Josiah as carefully as he would have trained an apprentice. As a result Josian became a skilled blacksmith, manufacturer of black metal articles and merchant of those articles in local and in overseas trade; and an efficient keeper of the hotel and inn. At that time only the best citizens, like Con-STANT SOUTHWORTH and JOSIAH HOWLAND, could obtain a license to operate an inn. Josiah actually worked there as though he were a partner with his father in business. Roads for land traffic and harbor facilities for coastal or overseas shipping had been greatly improved. By visiting market towns as a sales agent Josiah greatly increased the output of that business.

Josiah and Yet Mercy were very much in love and both enjoyed the social life of which they were leaders. They entertained frequently and well at their home in Bristol. Also they visited relatives in the Howland "sacred Towns" of Swansea. Barnstable and Plymouth, and in the Shove "sacred Towns" of Taunton, Rehoboth

and Seekonk.

Jabez, father of Josiah, died just before Feb. 6, 1711-12. He made his will May 14, 1708¹. In that will he did not name his children or divide his estate among them. He bequeathed the estate as of the date of his will to his wife Bethia. In that situation Josian operated the whole business for his mother Bethia.

Nov. 26, 1714, widow Bethia and her sons then living—less reservations that Bethia could make—divided the remainder of the estate as of that date. Josiah received the lot and dwelling house standing thereon, but it being worth 70 pounds more than the rest, he was given until 1721 to pay that sum with interest to the other sons; received one-fifth of the acre of land just east of his dwelling house lot; received the title—after completion of life tenure by his mother—to the new room and buttery in the dwelling house, upon payment to his brothers of the appraised value of those two rooms as of the date of title passing from his mother to him; received his share in common with his brothers of the commonage in his father's estate; received one-fourth of the right which his father had in the estate which formerly belonged to Mr. John Carey, merchant; except what was in possession of his mother, he received his part by agreement of the personal estate of his father.

Nov. 26, 1714 the parties to the above division of the estate of Jabez Howland appeared before Nathaniel Paine and acknowledged the division to be their free and voluntary act and deed, and the record was made October 26, 1715 by John Carey, Recorder. No separate other deeds were made for passing of title in that division of the estate of Jabez Howland. Josiah accepted title under that division of estate of his father and lived in that dwelling house, and used part of it as hotel and inn until he died there intestate Feb. 8, 1717.2

 [&]quot;Mayflower Descendants," Vol. VII, will of Jabez Howland.
 Gravestone at Old East Burial Ground at Bristol, R. I.

The Reverend George Shove in his will Apr. 4, 1687 bequeathed to his daughters Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Joanna and Yet Mercy "All of my whole of the North Purchase in the Township of Taunton." By May 14, 1706 Elizabeth, Sarah and Mary had died. Before July 13, 1717 Joanna had died, and Yet Markey was the only approximate fall of the latest the college of the colleg

MERCY was the only survivor of the five daughters.1

July 12, 1717 Josiah and Yet Mercy granted and released one-sixth part of a share of North Purchase Lands to Malachi Holloway of Middleboro, widower of Elizabeth (Shove) Holloway, and John Philips of Taunton North Purchase, who in turn quit-claimed title to Josiah and Yet Mercy Howland of one-half of the share willed to his 5 daughters by the Rev. George Shove. The next day Josiah and Yet Mercy agreed that John Philips by purchase owned one-half of that whole share, and that Josiah and Yet Mercy had full and correct title to the other half of that North Purchase share.

Josiah died intestate Feb. 8, 1717 and is buried in Old East Burial Ground, Bristol. YET MERCY, the widow, and SAMUEL HOWLAND were appointed the Administrators. March 15, 1717 the inventory was taken. August 21, 1718 YET MERCY, the widow; SAMUEL, a brother of JoSIAH; Capt. WILLIAM THROOPE, and Jabez, a brother of Josiah, gave bond for 1,000 pounds. The preliminary report of the Administrators was approved Sept. 17, 1720. They were given authority and power to sell a part of the estate to raise sufficient money to pay the debts against the estate, and were charged with the specific duty of passing and executing good and sufficient deeds and conveyances in the law; but no order was given for public recording of those deeds. The above court order was recorded July 25, 1722 by Samuel Howland, Register of Deeds. Certain sales were made. Feb. 25, 1728-9 the Probate Judge approved the report of the administrators as of that date. Oct. 21, 1729 the widow, Yet Mercy, applied for her third part of the dwelling house (in which she was living and carrying on the business of her late husband); of the Hayman house; of the land near the school house; of the commonage, and of the wharf. We have not found the record of action on that request, but she continued to live in that family dwelling house and to keep the hotel and inn there.

After the death of her husband, Yet Mercy retained her residence at Bristol. The death of Josiah left Yet Mercy in an emergency situation as a widow with six children, none of whom was over 9 years of age. For maintenance of herself and her children she had one-half share in North Purchase Lands and her right to dower in the estate of Josiah. That total capital was not sufficient to meet her need. It was necessary for her to earn new money. She was living in the dwelling house at considerable expense, and without new money she would be forced to move soon. The activity of most promise was to continue that part of Josiah's business which consisted in keeping the hotel and inn that he had kept in that dwelling house. She was young, active, well educated, and knew how to keep the hotel and inn. She decided to do that. But her problem of rearing and training her children as a widow while keeping the hotel and inn was very different and much more difficult than it was with her husband doing the work. Realizing that she could not do both, she turned for guidance to her own life and the lives of her brothers and sisters, and

¹ "Bristol County Deeds," Bk. 10, p. 732,

half-brothers and half-sisters. She remembered that her father, Rev. George Shove, three years after the death of his first wife Hopestill, placed their son SETH, aged 9 years, in the home of his friend Judge Sewell; that after the death of her mother Hannah, her half-brother Thomas and her half-sisters Hannah and ELIZABETH, by HANNAH's first marriage, were received into the family of General John Walley, brother of her mother Hannah's first husband Thomas Walley; and that she herself, YET MERCY, after the deaths of her mother HANNAH and father Rev. George Shove, was received at the age of 3 into the home of General George Walley. She decided it would be better for her own interest and for the interest of her children, for her to make new money by keeping the hotel and inn and by placing all of her children, except one daughter and one son, viz., YET MERCY, who was about 6 years old, and Josiah, who was about 1 year old. As the keeping of all her children with her would jeorpardize approval of her keeping the hotel and inn, she placed all, before 1722—except YET MERCY and JOSIAH—with those relatives who were to receive and train them as she herself had been received and trained by a relative. John and Samuel evidently were placed with Howland relatives in the Swansea area, and ELIZABETH and PATIENCE were evidently placed with her SHOVE, WALLEY, or BACON relatives.

YET MERCY could not bring herself to place all her children even in the homes of married relatives, where the children would have other children with whom to play and where the mother of those other children would have more time for their care than she, YET MERCY, had. Aug. 5, 1722 she had the two for whose training she retained the responsibility, Josiah and YEY MERCY, baptized to the Lord in the Church of Christ, Bristol, by Reverend Mr. Nathaniel Cotton, Pastor. At first her burden was heavy and she was forced to use her capital to maintain her planned activity.

It would seem from the extent of YET MERCY'S real estate transactions in the Bristol area that they were more profitable than the tavern. From 1722 to 1760 there is a succession of purchases, sales and mortgages, and then the final small sales before she went to the home of her son Samuel.

YET MERCY, who had been wealthy in her own name, was humiliated, and considered that she had been insulted when she learned at Bristol, R. I. that Thomas Cobb of Attleborough had sued her in the Superior Court at Taunton, Mass. in Aug. 1758, for trespass on her note.

YET MERCY decided that she was too old to be active in business; that she did not have sufficient capital to support herself in Bristol; that she would go to the home of her son Samuel to live; that she would at once go to Dighton, where some nephews of her Shove line lived; that she would notify her son Samuel that she was not able to travel alone to his home, and ask him to come or send a son to meet her at Dighton and to escort her to his home.

She sold personal property in order to have cash to finance her move.

In her old age she was still proud, and deliberately placed herself inder the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts Court by going to Dighton, Mass. Her innocence and dignity won, as no record can be found on the case mentioned above. She transacted other public business there with the very man who sued her in court, while undoubtedly she was staying at the home of a nephew on her Shove line. In

her new status she needed cash. There at Dighton she sold her remaining investments and thus the small remainder of her former fortune was in cash.

There in Dighton she sold on May 20, 1760 to that Thomas Cobb her small lot in Bristol that she had bought Dec. 28, 1756, and the remainder of her one-half

share of North Purchase Land.

Vol. VII, page 115, "North Purchase Proprietors Record," shows that the amount of land sold to Thomas Cobb was three-quarters of an acre and thirty rods as recorded May 22, 1769. The importance of that record is that it merely mentions YET MERCY. Thus the Proprietors knew that she was not then living at Dighton, but did not know where she was living. If they had known, they would, as usual, have said so. It also shows that she did not die at Dighton, for if she had died there the record would have said "late of Dighton."

An exceedingly careful search of death, burial and gravestone records showed

that YET MERCY did not die at Dighton.

THOMAS and YET MERCY arrived at the home of her son in the Scituate-Glocester area of Providence County, R. I., and probably in that part that later was set apart and named Burrillville. How happy she must have been there, away from the turmoil of business, as she lived with her son Samuel, her grandchildren, and undoubtedly some little great-grandchildren.

She died there sometime before 1774.1 and was buried in the Wallum Pond Estates area,2 in one of those graves from whose gravestone weather has erased the

inscription.

As both Josiah and Yet Mercy came from families that kept family vital statistical records and did not file those data for public record, we turn to that great book, "Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth" by Hon. WILLIAM T. DAVIS - 1883, who pursued the search beyond the public vital records and gathered data from familykept records. He gives us the names of all the children of Josiah and Yet Mercy. In this case, as in the case of brother John Howland, we are able to confirm the statement of John Howland, M. A. that Josiah Howland had a numerous posterity.

Only the two children retained by Yet Mercy appear in the Bristol Vital Records, which shows that birth records were not turned in, but as Josiah Jr. died in Bristol and his sister YET MERCY married and died in Bristol, their full records were placed on public record later in life. The numerous posterity of Josiah developed through son Samuel, who was in Rhode Island during the period in which John Howland, M. A. was living in Providence, viz. from 1770 to 1854.3

Children of Josiah Howland and Yet Mercy (Shove)4

ELIZABETH, b. 1710 was placed by her mother with some maternal family after she became a widow and before 1722. A careful search of the records has shown several places that may refer to this Elizabeth, but we have not been able to prove any of them, and leave this problem for solution by others later.

Census of 1774, Rhode Island.
 "Wallum Pond Estates" (Harry Lee Barnes, 1922).
 "Life and Recollections of John Howland, late President of Rhode Island Historical Society," (Edwin Stone, 1857).

4 "Landmarks of Plymouth" (Davis)

- John, b. 1711-12, placed by his mother after she became a widow and before 1722, in a family living in the Swansea area that was related to her late husband Josian; subscribed in 1760-61 for one share of the land on Tantimar River in Nova Scotia.
- YET MERCY, b. March 11, 1712-13 at Bristol; was bapt. Aug. 5, 1722; d. III. Aug. 8, 1737 at Bristol and is bur. in the Old East Burial Ground in Bristol; m. 1st, Oct. 17, 1731 at Bristol, Capt. ISAAC PALMER, but without issue; m. 2nd, Dec. 6, 1733 at Bristol, Capt. NATHANIEL HOWLAND² Issue:1
 - i. NATHANIEL, b. Apr. 3, 1735 at Bristol, d. July 18, 1736 at Bristol.

This YET MERCY was five years old at death of her father. Her widowed mother raised and trained her to be a well-educated and cultured ladv.

At the top of the gravestone of this YET MERCY is engraved the Howland coat-of-arms, and underneath is inscribed: "In memory of Mrs. YET MERCY How-LAND, wife of Mr. NATHANIEL HOWLAND, Dec'd Aug. 8, 1737."

- Patience, b. 1713-14; was placed by her mother with some maternal family after she became a widow and before 1722. A careful search of the records has shown several places that may refer to this PATIENCE, but we have not been able to prove any of them and leave this problem for solution by others later.
- (4)V. SAMUEL.
 - VI. Josiah, b. Apr. 9, 1717 at Bristol; bapt. Aug. 5, 1722; d. Feb. 6, 1747, unmarried, at Bristol and is bur. in the Old East Burial Ground in Bristol.

He was less than a year old when his father died, Feb. 8, 1717 and his mother kept him with her for raising and training. As that activity made demands on her time in addition to the operation of the business of her late husband which she as his widow continued, it must be observed that she did well, as this Josiah was a well-educated gentleman, popular in the community, and was a mature thinker and business man. He was active as an assistant to his mother in land dealings and in the maintenance of the business of his father, which his mother undertook when she became a widow. He was appointed March 22, 1742 guaridan of his aged uncle, EDWARD SHOVE, a brother of his mother.2 He was selected to be Justice of the Peace in 1743, 1744 and 1745. He was granted a license Oct. 19, 1747, to keep an inn. He made his will Dec. 26, 1747 in which he bequeathed all his real and personal estate to his honored mother, whom he appointed sole executrix of his will. She presented the will to a Town Council meeting at Bristol April 18, 1748. The will was approved and administration of it was granted to his mother.3

4. Mr. Samuel Howland, b. about 1715; d. shortly before Sept. 4, 1797 at Scituate, Providence Co., R. I.; m. Apr. 17, 1740 at Swansea, Freelove Seamans of

 [&]quot;Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold)
 "Bristol County Probate Records," Bk. X, p. 266.
 "Records of Wills of Bristol County, Rhode Island." No. 1, pp. 23 and 359.

Swansea, who d. after Sept. 7, 1779 but before 1790 in the Scituate area, Providence Co., R. I. They are evidently buried side by side in that area. As at Wallum Pond, their gravestones were selected field stones, from which the weather has erased the inscriptions. The above record corrects errors made in two previous compilations.

Samuel was two years old when his father Josian died Feb. 8, 1717. He was one of the 6 children left to Yet Mercy, widowed by that death, and none of them

was over 9 years of age at that date.

Under the final decision of Yet Mercy, Samuel was placed before 1722 with relatives in the town of Swansea. In due time he arrived at the age when boys were apprenticed. The later close relationship between him and his cousin John Howland indicates clearly that after John's marriage in 1725, Samuel was living at their home, and that under John's guidance Samuel was trained in agricultural pursuits. Under the condition of proximity of Bristol and Swansea, Yet Mercy and her son Samuel frequently visited each other.

John and Samuel, and other descendants of Pilgrims John and Elizabeth Howland, there, were held in high regard, especially by those still living who had personally known Pilgrim Elizabeth when she lived there at the home of her daughter Lydia (Howland) Brown in her late widowhood until her death in 1687. Among them were members of the Wood and Seamans families who were prominent

then in Swansea.

It appears that John and his young cousin Samuel Howland were especially popular there with those of their own generation, and John married Freelove, a

daughter of Dr. William and Susannah Wood, in 1725.

A younger sister of John's wife Freelove was Tabitha Wood, who married James Seamans, and those two families were very close. Socially, Samuel was a member of that group. The first child of James and Tabitha (Wood) Seamans was a daughter whom they named after John Howland's wife Freelove. That daughter Freelove Seamans was 9 years younger than Samuel. As Freelove grew, she and Samuel became aware of the fact that they were congenial and liked each other. Just as his great forebear, Pilgrim John Howland, waited for Elizabeth to reach 16, so Samuel waited for Freelove to reach 16, and when she did they were married there in Swansea.

At the time of the marriage of Samuel and Freelove in 1740, many people in Swansea were already much interested in the new land then recently opened for

settlement in the Scituate-Glocester area in Providence Co., R. I.

Four Seamans brothers-in-law and families of three sisters of his wife had moved or were planning to move to that new area, and did move about 1741. They, with their descendants, eventually owned nearly all of the land in Scituate, Providence County, R. I.

It is easy to understand that Samuel's wife wanted him to move so that she could be with her brothers and sisters at Scituate. But Samuel seemed to be more

¹ The Seamans Family Genealogy overlooked the fact that Samuel Howland and Freelove Seamans of Swansea were married in Swansea, Mass. April 17, 1740. They had son Thomas Howland born at Swansea, Feb. 26, 1742. The error is also made of stating that Freelove married the Samuel Howland who was born Feb. 24, 1728 at Newport, R. I. This Samuel would have been but 12 years of age at the time of his marriage to Freelove.

interested in the move of his cousin John Howland and family and waited to move with them. John was then turning his real estate into cash for that move.

John and Samuel and families were ready and did move to Scituate in 1744.1 Samuel and family arrived at Scituate July 7, 1744 and on that day he was admitted as a citizen of Scituate, where he was called Samuel Howland of Swansea (Swanzey).2

Another Samuel Howland lived there from 1765 to 1781. He came from Dartmouth and was called SAMUEL HOWLAND of Dartmouth.

By 1758 Samuel and family and cousin John and family, as neighbors, were living in Glocester. He and sons and cousin John and son John Jr. owned land in the Wallum Pond Estates, and their descent from Pilgrim John Howland was a matter of common knowledge there.

Samuel promptly replied to request, about 1760, of his aged mother Yet Mercy by sending his son Thomas, who escorted her by way of Seekonk and Providence from Dighton, Mass. to his home in Glocester. Just as his grand-aunt Lydia (Howland) Brown gave a home and care to her aged mother, Pilgrim ELIZABETH HOWLAND, SO SAMUEL gave a home and care to his aged mother, YET Mercy, during the remainder of her life. She died there before 1774,3 and as in the case of others, weather erased the inscription on the field gravestone.

The signing, Sept. 7, 1779 by Samuel and Freelove of a deed of sale of a part of their landed estate in Glocester, Providence Co., R. I., corrects an error made by a previous compiler. Evidently the marriage of their son Samuel, Dec. 3, 1779, was at their home in Glocester.

Later they moved back to Scituate, Providence Co., R. I. where Freelove died before 1790. Samuel survived her and in the 1790 Census is recorded with the family of his youngest son Asahel.

Under the custom of the family then, SAMUEL, evidently by gift during his life, transferred most of his property to his children, and died intestate just before Sept. 4, 1797. On that date heirs assembled or were mentioned in the deed of sale of a small lot of land in Glocester, Providence Co., R. I. As Samuel's son Asahel and daughter Freelove were not present or mentioned, each evidently had died without issue.

That proud family could not let that small lot be sold for taxes, and made up that remarkable deed that has been of so much value here in identifying some of the heirs of Samuel. As Samuel's wife Freelove was not mentioned in that deed of sale of land, we know that she had died before Samuel.

SAMUEL HOWLAND continued the family custom of family records, with very little attention to their public recording. The mistakes made by the HOWLAND Genealogy and the Seamans Family Genealogy in stating the genealogical record of this Samuel are due partly to that custom of unrecorded family records. Samuel survived his wife Freelove and died intestate. The fact that a parcel of overlooked and forgotten land in his former estate in Glocester was discovered and deeded

[&]quot;Vital Records of Scituate, Rhode Island." (Arnold).
Town Records of Scituate, R. I.
Census of Rhode Island, 1774.

⁴ Land Record at Glocester, R. I., Bk. 8, p. 217.

away gives us definitely the names of his heirs, as all the names were required on that grantor deed, Sept. 4, 1797. The list of heirs as given in that good deed is as follows:

"KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS: That we, John Howland of Scituate, in the County of Providence, in the State of Rhode Island, &c., Thomas Howland, of Douglas, in the County of Worcester, in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Caleb Howland, of Clarendon, in the County of Rutland, and State of Vermont, Samuel Howland of said Scituate, Rhode Island; Rhobe Place and Samuel Luther, children of Samuel Luther, late of said Scituate, deceased; Stephen Kimball, son of John Kimball, of Glocester, in said County of Providence; Susanna Yates and Martha Aldrich, both of S. Douglas, all being children of and heirs at law to Samuel Howland, late of said Scituate, deceased. ***

There were other children, viz. Asahel, sometimes called Acil, and Freelove, but as these two were not mentioned in the above deed, they had evidently died before Sept. 4, 1797, without heirs. There may have been others who died young and of whom there is no record. This Asahel, after his marriage in 1786 and after the death of his mother Freelove, gave home to his aged father Samuel and to his sister Freelove, and to Samuel and Rhobe, children of his sister Mary.

The reference here to "Samuel Howland, late of said Scituate, deceased," as the owner of the property establishes the fact that Freelove, the wife of Samuel Howland, died before Samuel Howland, and that her dower rights passed back to him. Also from another point of view, if Freelove had been living Sept. 4, 1797 she would have been an heir to the above estate and her name would have been included as such.

This family, and particularly the children, illustrate the statement of James N. Arnold, compiler of "Vital Records of Rhode Island," that instead of making public records, they kept family records which met their need but do not meet the need of a compiler today.

The many descendants of Samuel confirm the statement of Mr. John How-Land that Josiah had a numerous posterity.

In the Rhode Island Census of Glocester of 1774, he and wife Freelove are recorded, and of the three sons over 16, John, Thomas, and Samuel, Thomas is carried separately as married. Either John or Samuel was living elsewhere and is not listed; Caleb and Asahel are listed as under 16; daughter Freelove, and Susannah and Martha, daughters of Tabitha, deceased, and Rhobe, daughter of Mary, are listed as under 16.

In the Census of 1790 of Foster, R. I. son Asahel is carried as head of a family. Asahel had been married since Feb. 12, 1786 but no children are shown. After the death of Samuel's wife Freelove and after the marriage of Asahel, father Samuel remained not as the head of the family, but as making his home with son Asahel and wife Anne. Samuel's daughter Freelove and Rhobe, daughter of Mary, are listed under head "Free white females including heads of families," and

¹ "Land Records of Glocester, R. I.," Book XVI, p. 16.

in the column "Free white males under 16," SAMUEL, son of SAMUEL'S daughter MARY and husband SAMUEL LUTHER, is listed.

Children of Samuel Howland and Freelove Seamans:

I. John, b. Feb. 14, 1741 at Swansea; m. Sept. 15, 1776 at Glocester, Providence Co., R. I., Merrobe, dau. of Elisha Franklin.

As a child he accompanied his parents on their move in 1774 from Swansea, Mass. to Scituate, R. I.

In the Federal Census of 1790 he is recorded at Glocester, R. I. as head of a family of three sons and eight females which undoubtedly included his wife. This family kept family vital records which were not publicly recorded. A very brief sketch of children and grandchildren of John and Merrobe is given in the Howland Genealogy as follows:

Children of John Howland and Merrobe Eranklin:

- i. Eddy
- ii. WILLIAM
- iii. John. m. (). Children. i. Eddy, who m. (). Children, Reuben, John, Robert, Joseph, Eddy, Prince, Eunice, Rhoda, Polly. Olive. ii. William, m. 1st. (). Children. Stephen, Erastus, William, Melvin, Munion, Lois, Mercy, Rebecca, Polly, Hanna. m. 2nd. (). Children. John, William, Olinda, Polina, Financy. He m. 3d, June 26, 1831 at Douglas, Mass. his relative, Bernice Howland of Douglas, daughter of James Howland, who was the son of Thomas Howland, who was the brother of John Howland who married Merrobe Franklin. Children. Phylena Maria, Alanson Seelye, Sarah Jane, Emily Luthera, Charlotte Lowilla Minerva. iii. John Jr., m. (). Children. William, John, Hannah, Meriam, Polly, Rhoa, Susan.
- iv. Freelove
- v. Louis
- vi. MIRIAM
- vii. Hannah
- viii. Huldah
- ix. RHODA
- x. Mercy
- хі. Рневе
- (5) II. THOMAS
 - III. Mary, b. June 10, 1745 at Scituate; d. before Sept. 4, 1797; m. 1st. about 1770, Samuel Luther of Scituate; m. 2nd, as his 2nd wife Apr. 2, 1787, at Foster, R. I., Mr. John Kimball, who survived her and m. 3d, before Jan. 21, 1797, Alice ().

Sept. 7, 1797, Mary in Glocester, R. I. was a witness to a deed of sale of land by her father Samuel and mother Freelove.

Children of Mary and Samuel Luther:

i. A dau., b. before 1774 at Scituate, R. I.; d. unmarried before Sept. 4, 1797.

- ii. Rhobe, b. before 1774 at Scituate, R. I.; was living Sept. 4, 1797; m. before Sept. 4, 1797 Mr. () Place.
- iii. Samuel, b. after 1774; was living Sept. 4, 1797.

Child of Mary and John Kimball:

- iv. Stephen, b. after 1790 at Glocester; was living Sept. 4, 1797.
- IV. TABITHA, b. Jan. 6, 1746 at Scituate, R. I.; d. before Sept. 4, 1797; m. about 1771, LABAN HOPKINS who d. before 1790.

LABAN HOPKINS is recorded as head of a family in Scituate, R. I. in 1774, with a wife and one child under 16 years of age. May 27, 1779 he was a witness to a deed of land in Glocester, R. I. No further record of him is found.

Children of Tabitha and Laban Hopkins:

- i. Susannah, b. before 1774 at Scituate, R. I.; as of Glocester, R. I. m. June 28, 1792 at Douglas, Mass., John Yeats, son of Abner and Ruth (Emerson) Yeats of Douglas, Mass. Children were all born at Douglas, Mass. i. Laban, b. Feb. 25, 1793. ii. Abner, b. Aug. 22, 1795. iii. Chester, b. Sept. 3, 1797. iv. Susannah, b. Oct. 23, 1801. v. John, b. June 22, 1804; d. 1926 at Douglas.
- ii. Martha, b. not later than 1773; m. Jan. 1, 1795 at Douglas, Mass. Armenias Aldrich at Douglass, Mass.
- V. Samuel, b. Oct. 4, 1748 at Scituate, Providence Co., R. I.; as of Scituate, R. I. m. Dec. 3, 1779 at Glocester, Providence Co., R. I. Hannah, dau. of Elisha Franklin of Scituate, R. I.

The part of Scituate in which he lived with other adjoining areas was set off as Town of Foster by the General Assembly on the third Monday of Aug. 1781. He did not move from Scituate to Foster, but his residence by that law was changed from Scituate to Foster. He was living in Foster in 1790. His record in that Census was himself, wife, one son under 16 years of age, and 3 daughters.

At a later date he followed his younger brother Caleb to Clarendon, Vt., where the Census of 1800 shows him to be a resident with family as follows: himself and wife, each above 45 years of age, 1 son under 10, 1 son 16 and under 26, 5 daughters under 10, and 2 of 10 and under 16. His eldest child named Banister had married, and the record shows that he and wife were 16 years of age but under 26, with no children.

Children of Samuel Howland and Hannah (Franklin):1

i. Banister, b. about 1780 at Scituate, Providence Co., R. I.; d. about 1851 in Orleans Co., N. Y.; m. in 1800 at Clarendon, Rutland Co., Vt. (). He and wife with no children are recorded in the Census of 1800 of Clarendon, Rutland Co., Vt. He moved from Rutland Co., Vt. to a new home in Orleans Co., N. Y. Children. i. Henry H., b. Apr. 30, 1807, went with his parents to Orleans Co., N. Y. in infancy.

¹ "HowLand Genealogy" (Franklyn Howland, 1885), p. 128.

In 1885 he was living at Flint, Mich. where he owned a farm and was engaged in stock raising. He m. 1st., Polly Maria Sprague; 2nd, ESTHER TIFFIN. Children by 1st wife. ARETUS H., m. Apr. 1881 () FROST and had a dau. INEZ. JOHN C., b. 1847, received his B. A. in 1870 and his M. A. in 1873. Practiced law in Michigan; m. Beatrice A. Thorpe of Macon, Ga. but had no issue. George W. received his M. D. in 1870 and practiced medicine at Flint, Mich. Mary m., 1864, J. J. Curtis and had one child. Barnabas d. at age of 25. HARTLEY H. d. at age of 19. Franklin B. was killed as a soldier in the battle of James Island, June 16, 1862, at the age of 23. WILLARD F. d. in a railroad accident, Dec. 9, 1876. ii. Aretas H., b. about 1819 in Orleans Co., N. Y.; m. Elizabeth Allen. He was engaged in stock raising in connection with farming at Portland, Charlotte and Sebewa Corners, Mich. Children. Benjamin Franklin, who was a sharpshooter in the Civil War, later engaged in the lumber business at Milford, Mich.; later successively at Brighton and Plymouth, Mich. and still later at Appalachicola, Fla. Henry H., d. Sept. 27, 1864 at Petersburgh, Va. as a casualty in the Civil War. Mary A., b. Jan. 1, 1846; m. George R. Gibbs, carriage maker, at Carson City, Mich. and had Frank H., Mabel G., Ruby, May, Marion, George, and Mamie. Jennie E., m. John Thornhill and lived at Millford, Mich. ARETUS B., b. March 11, 1854 at Grand Ledge, Eaton, Co., Mich.; was in the lumber business at Chicago, and in 1885 was living at Minneapolis, Minn.; m. 1879 Maria L. De Gollier. iii. Banister, b. about 1813, m. () and lived in 1885 at White Lake, Mich. Children. Helen, Emma, Polly, Ruth, Clara, Abbie, William Christo-PHER and BENJAMIN F. iv. JOHN C. v. POLLY. vi. RUTH. vii. IRENE.

- ii. Sabin
- iii. Samuel
- iv. Freelove
- v. Susan
- vi. IRENE
- vii. A son, b. after departure from Foster.
- viii. A daughter, b. after departure from Foster.
- ix. A dau., born after departure from Foster.
- x. A dau., b. after departure from Foster.
- VI. CALEB HOWLAND, b. May 4, 1758 at Glocester, Providence Co., R. I.; living July 7, 1832 at Brandon, Rutland Co., Vt.; m. May 23, 1779 at Clarendon, Vt., Mary, dau. of John and Patience (Hopkins) Seamans (sometimes spelled Simonds or Simmons) of Clarendon, Vt.

As a boy in Glocester and Scituate, Providence Co., R. I., CALEB was in a group that included Mary Seamans. When Mary with her family moved to Clarendon, Vt. Caleb was disconsolate and moved there in 1779 to marry Mary. His romance was much like that of his grandfather Josiah Howland who followed Yet Mercy Shove from Bristol to Barnstable, Mass.

He was allowed a war pension on his application executed July 7, 1832, at which time he was living in Brandon, Rutland Co., Vt. His military service was stated in his approved application for pension. It was as follows: He enlisted at Glocester, R. I. in Feb. 1776, served as a private in Captain Nathaniel Blackmar's company in Colonel Christopher Liffitt's Rhode Island regiment, was in the battle of White Plains, in the first battle of Trenton, having crossed the Delaware River with General Washington the night before: was in the battle of Princeton and was discharged January 15, 1777. He enlisted in the Fall of 1777 and served one month as private in Captain Wilmot's company in Colonel Brown's Rhode Island regiment and was in General Spencer's Rhode Island expedition. He enlisted in February or March, 1778 and served one year as private in Captain Abrahm Tourtillot's company in Colonel Crary's Rhode Island regiment. As his twenty-first year approached he moved to Clarendon, Vt., where Mary Seamans lived. He enlisted in April, 1779 at Clarendon, Vt. and served three weeks as private in Captain Sawyer's company and was stationed at the blockhouse at Rutland. Having arrived at the age of 21 he married Mary Seamans at Clarendon and settled there. In 1780 or 1781 he served about one-half a month as private in Captain Robinson's Vermont company at Castleton. He was later frequently called out on alarms, one at Brandon when it was burned, one at Crown Point, one at Bulwagga Bay, and scouted along Lake Champlain for his total last service of at least one month.

April 12, 1792 John Seamans of Clarendon, Vt., father of Caleb's wife Mary, deeded 50 acres of land for love, good will, and affection "which I do have towards my daughter Mary Howland of Clarendon."

The children of Caleb Howland and Mary (Seamans-Simonds) were all born at Clarendon, Vt.:1

- i. Samuel, b. May 8, 1780; m. Barnice (Bernice) Howland, the dau. of his uncle Thomas Howland, and had 9 children, 8 of whom married and 7 of whom had descendants whose lines are not extinct.
- ii. Јони, b. March 9, 1782.
- iii. Asaph, b. May 27, 1784; m. () in Vt., and had 7 children, some of whom have living descendants.
- iv. Hannah (Anna), b. Sept. 23, 1787.
- v. Thomas, b. Nov. 30, 1790; m. Abigail () and had at least 10 children, of whom 6 were formerly residents of Vermont.
- vi. Charles, b. Aug. 16, 1793; resided at Pittsford, Rutland Co., Vt.; d. about 1836; m. 1st, 1818, Harriet Peck who survived him, and m. 2nd Jan. 10, 1838, at Pittsford, Charles Fay. Children of Charles and Harriet: i. Alzina, b. Dec. 30, 1818. ii. Louisa, b. about 1820. iii. Jane, b. 1822. iv. Sarah, b. 1825. v. Mary Ann, b. Oct. 16, 1827. vi. Silas Charles (see below). vii. Nancy Ann, b. Oct. 10, 1834.

¹ Data furnished by Mr. Howland F. Atwood of Hartland, Vt., who also furnished Caleb's Revolutionary War service.

SILAS CHARLES (vi. above) b. Apr. 10, 1833 at Pittsford; d. Nov. 11, 1883 at Jericho, Chittenden Co., Vt.; m. Dec. 23, 1859 at Jericho, MINERVA WHITEMARSH BEAN of Jericho and resided at Jericho, where their children were born as follows: One, Oliver Charles, b. Dec. 10, 1864, d. Feb. 3, 1866. Two, Orvis Silas (see below). Three, Harriet (Hattie) Minerva, b. Oct. 15, 1869. Four, Valorous, b. July 6, 1872; d. Oct. 15, 1899. Five, Walter James, b. March 23, 1874, d. 1942. Six, a son, stillborn, May 6, 1877.

ORVIS SILAS (Two above) b. Sept. 6, 1866 at Jericho; m. Mar. 27, 1889 at Northfield, Bertha Minerva Crandall, who d. Oct. 10, 1935 at Reading. He resided - 1944 - at Reading. Their children were born at Jericho as follows. One, Glenn Crandall, b. Apr. 15, 1890. Two, Marjorie Eliza (see below). Three, Deane Orvis, b. Jan. 13, 1895.

Marjorie Eliza Howland (Two above), b. Nov. 23, 1892; m. May 24, 1916 at West Windsor, Clarence Fay Atwood, a direct descendant from Pilgrims John and Elizabeth Howland through their daughter Ruth and husband Elder Thomas Cushman. Marjorie and Clarence resided at Hartland and moved in 1944 to Deland, Fla. Children of Marjorie and Clarence were born as follows. One, Howland Fay Atwood (see below). Two, Deane Frederic Atwood, b. Feb. 19, 1925 at Reading; m. Jan. 1, 1944 at Whitehall, N. Y. Miss Evelyn Phillips of Montpelier, Vt. Residence, 1944, Hartland. Child. Phyllis Anne, b. Nov. 13, 1944 at Windsor. Three, Priscilla Joyce Atwood, b. June 19, 1931 at Hartland. Four, Marjorie Bertha Atwood, b. Oct. 11, 1935 at Hanover, N. H.

Howland Fay Atwood (One above), who furnished the data for this statement of the descendants of the children of Caleb Howland, was b. Sept. 14, 1918 at West Windsor; m. Sept. 6, 1942 at Windsor Miss Priscilla Mayme Murphy, who was b. July 4, 1921 at Hartland, dau. of Julian Harold and Emily (Kibler) Murphy. The residence of Howland Fay and Priscilla Mayme Atwwod is Sanderstead Place, Hartland, Vt. They had a child, Gary Howland, b. July 31, 1943 at Windsor.

- vii. Ashil, b. Sept. 12, 1795.
- viii. CALEB, b. Nov. 25, 1798.
- ix. James, b. Aug. 29, 1801.

VII. ASAHEL, b. about 1761 at Gloucester, Providence Co., R. I.; d. without issue before Sept. 4, 1797; m. Feb. 12, 1786 at Foster, R. I., Anne, dau. of Thomas Barton.¹

He was the youngest son and after his mother Freelove died and his own marriage took place in 1786, he gave a home to his father Samuel and to his sister Freelove, and to young Samuel and Rhobe, children of his sister Mary.

^{1 &}quot;Vital Records of Rhode Island" (Arnold).

When the deed of sale of a small lot of land in Glocester, Providence Co., R. I. was prepared by heirs of the estate of Asahel's father, Samuel, Asahel was not present or mentioned. There seems to be no doubt that he had died before that deed was made Sept. 4, 1797. We find no further reference to him. If he had issue, that heir would have been mentioned in the making of that deed, but no reference was made to a child of Asahel.

VIII. Freelove, b. about 1764 at Glocester, Providence Co., R. I.; d. before Sept. 4, 1797; m. Sept. 30, 1796 at Glocester, Providence Co., R. I., Caleb Eldredge.¹

After the death of her mother Freelove and the marriage of her brother Ashael, she also lived with Asahel's family.

When the deed of sale of a small lot of land in Glocester, Providence Co., R. I. was prepared by heirs of the estate of Freelove's father Samuel, Freelove was not present or mentioned. There seems to be no doubt that she died before that deed was made, Sept. 4, 1797.

5. Mr. Thomas Howland, b. Feb. 26, 1742 at Swansea, Mass.; d. about May 5, 1816 at Douglas, Mass.; m. 1764 Mary Kimball of Scituate, Providence Co., R. I., who was born Jan. 20, 1743, and who survived Thomas and was appointed by him in his will to be executrix, with their son James as executor of his will.²

At the time the Howland Genealogy was published in 1885, a contributor stated that Thomas Howland came from Seekonk, Mass. to Burrillville, R. I., and the compilation continued, "where most if not all his children were born."

This compiler has sought and found the data on YET MERCY HOWLAND which show why Thomas, as escort of his grandmother YEY MERCY, came from Seekonk, and has recorded it in this text.³

The statement by Howland Genealogy - 1885 - that "most if not all the children of Thomas were born at Burrillville" is not correct as shown in this text. The facts are: that Thomas moved from Glocester, R. I. to Douglas, Mass. 12 years before Burrillville was organized in 1806, and never lived in the Town of Burrillville; that 5 of his 9 children were born at Scituate, R. I. and that the other 4 were born at Glocester; and that 3 had married before the 1790 Census. None of his children was born in the Town of Burrillville, R. I.

Thomas was born at Swansea, Mass., and was progressing from babyhood to childhood when the family moved to Scituate, Providence Co., R. I. in 1744. He was trained at home, and educated at home and at the schools that were kept at the residences of citizens. The group of children whom he knew and with whom he played at Scituate included Mary Kimball.

Change of residence, by move or by survey of the boundary between Scituate and Glocester in 1755, finds this family in Glocester. His education proceeded

30, 1796.

² Will dated Apr. 24, 1816, Douglas, Mass.; probated May 17, 1816 at Douglas (Worcester, Mass. Probates).

3 No proof found anywhere in text or elsewhere—Ed.

¹ Erroneously stated in Arnold's "Vital Records of Rhode Island." as Sept. 30, 1769, but the compiler has received a certified copy of this marriage from the Town Clerk at Glocester, and the original reads Sept. 30, 1796.

there in schools kept in private dwelling houses by teachers who generally came from Providence. Men were employed to teach the Winter schools and women the Summer schools. Thomas had an active and discerning mind and had prestige in his community as an intelligent man and a gentleman.

About 1760 his father Samuel informed Thomas that his aged mother Yet Mercy was at Dighton, Mass., without ample funds for life there, and gave to son Thomas the mission of going to Dighton and bringing his mother to his home in Glocester. Thomas executed that mission. He brought his grandmother Yet Mercy from Massachusetts by way of Seekonk to his father's home in Glocester.

That difficult journey was one of love and respect for an elder member of the Howland family. It made a great impression on the family, which as a tradition was carried to later generations. But as with many traditions, it was not remembered entirely or correctly during the century and a quarter that had passed between the event and the publishing of that genealogy in 1885.

THOMAS soon moved to his new estate in the Wallum Pond Area, Glocester, R. I. where he had recently bought from Joseph Eddy of Glocester 143 acres of land.

He and family are recorded in the 1774 Census of Rhode Island as follows:

Thomas and Mary 2
Males under 16 2
Females under 16 2

So 5 of his 9 children were born at Scituate, R. I. and recorded soon after arrival at Glocester, R. I. in the 1774 Census.

Feb. 21, 1781 he, of Glocester, was a witness to the purchase of land in Glocester, R. I. by his cousin John Howland, Jr. of Glocester, and Daniel Hunt of Douglas, Worcester Co., Mass.

March 13, 1784 he, of Glocester, R. I. sold 19 acres of land from his homestead in Glocester, R. I. to Benjamin Salisbury.

April 17, 1784 he, of Glocester, R. I. was a witness to sale of land adjoining his in Glocester, by his cousin John Howland, Jr. of Glocester, R. I.

Oct. 11, 1786 Thomas Howland, John Howland and Oziel Hopkins, all of Glocester, Providence Co., R. I., sold to Timothy Jenne of Glocester, R. I. "The half part of a sawmill standing on Allum Pond Brook, in said Glocester, nearby said Allum Pond, with the half part of the utensils belonging to said mill, with the half part of the privilege of the stream of water, from the last day of December to the first of June, annually; with the half part of the mill yard and mill place to repair and build said mill, with a privilege to pass and repass to and from said sawmill at any time and at all times."

In Rhode Island the new Federal Constitution of 1787 was submitted to the people for vote on ratification. The day for that vote was the fourth Monday in March, 1788. In Glocester the vote was 227 against ratification and 10 for ratification

THOMAS HOWLAND was one of those who voted against ratification because the Constitution did not include a Bill of Rights.

The adverse vote in Rhode Island led to the calling of a State Convention to meet at East Greenwich in February, 1790 to state the attitude of Rhode Island. That Convention adjourned and met the next day at Newport, R. I. That Convention on May 29, 1790 ratified the Constitution but enjoined upon Senators and Representatives the duty of exerting all their power to secure action favorable to the spirit of the recommended amendments, as far as the Constitution admits.

The Federal Census of 1790 shows Thomas still living at Glocester, R. I. The record is as follows:

Thomas and Mary 2
Males over 16 1
Males under 16 1
Females 4

So of the nine mentioned in his will there was an increase of 1 child since the Census of 1774, and 3 had married and established their own homes.

Dec. 15, 1790 Thomas and Mary of Glocester, R. I. sold to John Kimball of Glocester, R. I. 23 acres and 11 rod, from the southwest part of the estate upon which he and Mary were then living, and both signed the deed.

April 2, 1793 he of Glocester sold to his son James of Glocester 60 acres of land in Glocester.

May 10, 1794 he made a deed of sale that states his change of residence, as follows:

"TO ALL PEOPLE TO WHOME THESE PRESENTS SHALL COME: Thomas Howland, of Glocester, in the County of Providence, and State of Rhode Island, now resident in Douglas, in the State of Massachusetts, sold 30 acres of land in Glocester, R. I. to Jesse Aldrich, his son-in-law."

March 28, 1795 he of Douglas, Mass. bought from Oziel Hopkins of Douglas with 240 pounds, 164 acres of land in Douglas, Mass.

Oct. 21, 1800 he and Mary of Douglas, Mass. sold to Asa Kimball of Glocester,

R. I. 30 acres and 40 rod—a tract of woodland—in Douglas, Mass.

Thomas was a religious man and attended the Methodist Church at Douglas. It is evident that he moved from Glocester to Douglas to be nearer the church, especially in the Winter. Through his Methodist friends Abner Yeates and others, Susannah, daughter of his sister Tabitha, was introduced to them and married John Yeats, and his own son Joseph married Lucina Yeats, sister of John Yeats. After Thomas died his son Joseph maintained the family pew in the Methodist Church in Douglas.

He made his will April 24, 1816, which was recorded May 7, 1816. He bequeathed to his beloved wife Mary "the profits and income of all my real estate during her natural life, together with all my personal estate."

In that will, fortunately, he named all his children, including names of married daughters and bequests to them.

¹ Worcester County, Massachusetts Probates.

He died about May 5, 1816 at Douglas, Mass., and was buried in the cemetery at South Douglas, "Tasseltop," which was just south and across the road from the Methodist Church. South Douglas was just across the line from Glocester, R. I., and also was in the Wallum Pond Area. In Tasseltop, as at the Howland Farm in the part of Wallum Pond Estates in Glocester, field stones were used for gravestones and weather has erased the inscriptions.

The children of Thomas Howland and Mary were of the generation of Hon. John Howland of Providence, R. I., and of course came under his attention as a part of the numerous posterity of Josiah.1

Children of Thomas Howland and Mary (Kimball):²

- 6) I. Joseph
 - II. Rebecca, b. 1767; d. Jan. 12, 1849 or Apr. 8, 1833, at Smithfield, R. I.; m. Oct. 22, 1789 at Glocester, R. I. Jesse Aldrich.

Children b. at Douglas, Mass.:

- SERENA, b. Apr. 9, 1791.
- ii. Адан, b. May 10, 1793.
- III. James, b. Sept. 1768 at Scituate, R. I.; d. March 18, 1846, at Southbridge (Sturbridge) Worcester Co., Mass.; m. about 1789, Renew or NANCY EDDY.

He is recorded in the Federal Census of 1790 as the head of a family at Glocester, R. I. of himself, wife and one daughter.

April 2, 1793 he, of Glocester, R. I. bought from his father Thomas, 60 acres of land in Glocester, R. I.

Oct. 12, 1797 he and wife of Glocester, R. I. sold the above 60 acres of land in said Glocester to Benjamin Salisbury of Thompson, Windham Co., Conn.

Oct. 27, 1798 he, of Glocester, R. I. bought 57 acres of land in said Glocester from Amasa Chase of said Glocester.

March 12, 1803 he and wife Nancy of Glocester, R. I. sold above 57 acres to Samuel White of Uxbridge, Worcester Co., Mass.

Dec. 22, 1803 he, of Douglas, Mass., Gentleman, bought from his father Thomas 12 acres of land in Douglas, Worcester Co., Mass. This shows that 9 years after his father moved to Douglas, he, James, moved to Douglas.

May 29, 1804 he of said Douglas, Gentleman, bought from his father THOMAS 3 acres and 74 rod of land in said Douglas, with reservations by grantor of a road through the premises, and the whole of grantor's dwelling house, and with provision that if the grantee should build a house adjoining house of grantor, the grantee should have all of said new house, and with further provision that the grantee will build a barn, and allow the grantor to have one-half of said barn, and with still further provision that the grantee will not sell or dispose of his part during the life of grantor's wife.

¹ "Life and Recollections of John Howland, Late President of Rhode Island Historical Society." ² "Howland Genealogy" (Franklyn Howland, 1855).

Jan. 29, 1816 he, of Douglas, Mass. bought from his father Thomas of said Douglas, with 1,000 dollars, 60 acres of land in the "southeasterly" part of Douglas, with reservation of a road on the easterly part of side land to the highest available water.

From his father's will he inherited:

"All my land and buildings standing on said land on the east side of a Highway leading southerly across Wallum Pond hill, so called, from a turnpike road that leads from Boston to Hartford, and also my half of the orchard on the west side of said highway, provided my said son James shall pay Two Hundred Dollars to my daughters hereinafter named, then to hold to him, the said James Howland, his heirs and assigns forever."

Children of James Howland and wife, not in order of births:1

- i. Naomi, b. 1790 at Glocester, R. I.; d. 1880; m. March 30, 1823 at Douglas, Mass. Uzzial Bixby of Thompson, Conn. Children. i. James, m. Lydia Goddard. ii. George Bates. iii. Rebecca, m. Judson Bates. iv. Jacob, m. Carrie Day.
- ii. Cynthia, b. 1798 at Glocester, R. I.; d. 1881; m. June 12, 1825 at Douglas, Mass. Levi Lucas. Children. i. George. ii. Olny. iii. Hannah. iv. Mary. v. Frank.
- iii. Crawford, b. 1801 at Glocester, R. I.; d. 1875.
- iv. Enoch, b. Sept. 6, 1805 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Sept. 21, 1824 at Douglas, Anna Alger. Children living in 1884. i. Allen, in Putnam, Conn. ii. Aminda, m. () and lived in Webster. iii. Amanda, twin of Aminda, m. () and was living in Webster. iv. John was living with parents.
- v. Bernice, b. Aug. 27, 1807 at Douglas; m. June 26, 1831 at Douglas, Mass., William Howland. Children. i. Phylena Maria. ii. Alanson Seelye. iii. Sarah Jane. iv. Emily Luthera. v. Charlotte Lowilla Minerva.
- vi. Uranah, b. at Douglas, Mass.; m. William Smith. Children. i. Julia A., m. Capin Murdock of Uxbridge. ii. James. iii. Uranah. iv. Amanda.
- vii. Louis
- viii. Thomas, b. at Douglas, Mass.; m. May 26, 1833 at Douglas, Mass. Arvilla Buxton. No children.
- IV. Stephen, b. June 1, 1777 at Douglas, Mass.; m. 1st, May 2, 1798 at Douglas, Mass. Molly Aldrich; m. 2nd, March 25, 1809 at Douglas, Mass. Hannah Aldrich. Residence, Douglas, Mass.²

Children by 1st marriage:

i. Nathan, b. July 10, 1799 at Douglas, Mass.; d. 1857; m. Rebecca Lucas. Children. i. Nathan, d. young. ii. Mary, b. 1827, d. 1858.

² Vital Records of Douglas, Mass.

^{1 &}quot;Howland Genealogy" (Franklyn Howland, 1885).

- iii. Laura A., b. 1829, m. () King, and was living in Plymouth in 1884. iv. Nathan, b. 1833, d. 1852. v. Ruth, b. 1836, was living in Plymouth in 1884. vi. Stephen, b. Jan. 26, 1838; m. Oct. 12, 1861 Lizzie Potter and had: Georgia, March 12, 1863; Florence H., June 28, 1868; Laura E., July 9, 1876.
- ii. Sarah (Sally), b. Aug. 22, 1801 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Thomas Rathburn and had issue. Residence, Buffalo, N. Y.
- iii. Stephen, b. Apr. 30, 1803 at Douglas, Mass.; d. about 1840; m. () and had a son who died in infancy.
- iv. Ruth, b. in Aug. 1805 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Francis Looney and had issue.
- v. Aldrich, b. Feb. 29, 1808 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Oct. 16, 1836 Lucy, daughter of Martin and Lucy White of Thompson, Conn. Children: i. Nancy, who was a school teacher. ii. Andrew V.; m. in 1866 Lillia Stevens of Scituate, R. I. iii. William, m. in 1871 Mrs. Abby Plum of Thompson, Conn. iv. George W.

Children by 2nd marriage:

- vi. MARY.
- vii. Thomas, died young.
- V. SARAH, m. JAMES ALGER.
- VI. PATIENCE, m. HENRY TYLER.
- VII. MARY, m. Feb. 12, 1799 at Douglas, Mass. Calvin Aldrich of Douglas.

Children born at Douglas, Mass.:

- i. Pamena, b. July 18, 1800.
- ii. Thomas, b. Jan. 9, 1803.
- iii. Тімотну, b. Jan. 21, 1805.
- VIII. BARNICE, b. Jan. 1, 1780; m. SAMUEL HOWLAND, son of her uncle CALEB HOWLAND.
 - IX. Dorcas (Dashel), intentions to marry Nov. 8, 1806 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Jan. 1, 1807 at Burrillville, R. I., Jacob Jenne. Dorcas lived in good health to her death at age of 97 years.

My father, WILLIAM PERRY HOWLAND, on return from a trip to New England, told that he had called on this Dorcas at her home. She was a widow at that time, and was doing her own housework. He found her an interesting person of good education and memory. When he congratulated her upon her health and strength, she rather tersely replied that "Those who mind their own business and trust in God do not grow old."

Children of Dorcas and Jacob Jenne born in Burrillville, R. I.:

- i. Stephen, b. June 29, 1807.
- ii. Olhrey (Ochrey), b. Jan. 11, 1809; m. Dec. 15, 1831 at Burrillville, Betsey Blake.
- iii. Calvin Aldrich, b. Feb. 21, 1812; m. Sept. 10, 1837 at Burrillville, Lillis Eddy of Douglas, Mass.
- iv. CALISTA HOWLAND.

6. Lieut. Joseph Howland, Gentleman, b. about 1766 at Scituate, R. I.; d. March 17, 1839 at Douglas, Mass.; m. 1st, Dec. 5, 1791 at Douglas, Lucina Yates (Yeates), who died Apr. 3, 1801 at Douglas; m. 2nd, Apr. 22, 1802 at Douglas, Mass. Lydia Aldrich, who survived Joseph and as his widow d. Aug. 20, 1839 at Douglas. Douglas.

When Joseph was seven years old his parents moved from Scituate, R. I. to the adjoining town of Glocester. Their home was on the Wallum Pond Estates, where his uncle James Howland and their cousin John Howland Jr., great-grandson of Jabez Howland, also lived. John Jr. had bought the Whipple farm, and shortly it was called the Howland farm. It was a pleasant social atmosphere in which Joseph grew to manhood. He is shown living with his parents in the Rhode Island Census of 1774 and 1790.

Thomas Howland, the father of Joseph, rode across the State line to Douglas, Mass. to attend church, on Sundays. There Joseph became acquainted with the Yeates and Emerson families, who were to become closely associated in ties of blood and friendship. It was under these conditions that Joseph met Lucina, the daughter of Abner and Ruth (Emerson) Yeates of Douglas, and they were married Dec. 15, 1791 at Douglas. Joseph and Lucina evidently made their home in Glocester, R. I.

April 1, 1794 Joseph Howland of Glocester bought 35 acres of land in Glocester in the area of the Howland farm in the Wallum Pond Estates, from his cousin John Howland Jr. Before that date Joseph and his wife may have lived at the home of his father, Thomas Howland.

Thomas Howland became a resident of Douglas, Mass. on or just before May 10, 1794. Under the same attraction that drew his father Thomas across the State line from Glocester, R. I. to Douglas, Mass., Joseph and Lucina followed, and here on Nov. 7, 1794, Joseph bought 65 acres in the south part of the town. This was the beginning of 35 years of investments and speculation in land in and about Douglas.²

Some of the deeds cited above show that Joseph specialized in wooded land.

The source of lumber and timber for his woodcraft work, as well as for market, was his own woodlands. He was a leading architect and constructor. The Town Records of Douglas show that he was given the contract to build the South Douglas school house.

At that time there was a good market at Boston for charcoal. JOSEPH entered that market at first as a producer of charcoal as a by-product of his business in lumber and timber. The profits from that market were so good that he increased his charcoal production by cutting down trees for that purpose.

After he had cut the profit-making trees down on an area, he sold that area to those who wished to clear the ground for agricultural purposes.

Nov. 7, 1794, Joseph of Glocester, R. I. bought 65 acres of land in the south part of Douglas, Mass. and they crossed the state line and became residents of Douglas.

2 District deeds, Worcester Co., Mass.

¹ Vital Records of Douglas, Mass., and of the Town Clerk of Douglas, Mass.

He was called Lieutenant Howland quite generally, and sometimes Captain Howland. That was evidently a local militia title.

Joseph followed his father Thomas to the Methodist Church, and later married Lucina Years who died April 3, 1801, the sister of Amos Years, who later became the preacher in the Methodist Church at Douglas. In the inventory of the estate of Joseph—who died intestate—the administrator rated the family pew as real estate.

Joseph married 2nd, April 22, 1802 Lydia Aldrich at Douglas, Mass.

JOSEPH disposed of most of his landed properties incident to his business when the frailties of old age stopped his business activities. The record of disposition of the remainder of his landed estate has not been found in public records.

He and wife evidently lived in their old age with the family of his son Seth, probably in the homestead of Joseph, which he gave to son Seth, and the deed was kept in family records.

Joseph died intestate March 17, 1839 at Douglas and was buried in the Tassletop Cemetery, across the road from the Methodist church. His wife Lydia followed him very quickly and was buried by the side of her late husband.¹

The field stones used then marked their graves, but the weather has erased the inscription on the gravestones of Joseph and Lucina and Lydia, as at the Wallum Pond Estates.

Children of Joseph Howland and Lucina Yeats:

I. OLIVE, was given a family name of the Kimball family, whose Mary m. Thomas Howland, father of Joseph, at Scituate, Providence Co., R. I.; b. Jan. 20, 1792 at Douglas, Mass.; d. at Kingsville, O., at residence of son-in-law Dr. Chester Cleveland; m. before Sept. 26, 1814 Enos Cook, as on that date she signed a deed of sale of land as wife of Enos Cook of Douglas. Enos is so recorded in deed June 28, 1811 and in deed Sept. 26, 1814. Enos d. near Batavia, N. Y., and Olive surviving him d. as his widow.

Sept. 26, 1814, JIRAH WILCOX and ENOS and wife OLIVE (HOWLAND) COOK sold to OLIVE's father JOSEPH HOWLAND, Gentleman, all of Douglas, 27 acres and 97 rods in the south part of Douglas for \$525.

Shortly after that sale Enos and Olive joined the trend to the West and settled near Batavia, N. Y., close to Olive's cousin Banister (who was the son of Samuel, a brother of Olive's grandfather Thomas) who moved from Clarendon, Vt. to Orleans County, N. Y. Both of those Howland groups settled on or near the route used then from Albany to Buffalo, N. Y.

After she was left a widow by the death of her husband Enos there in New York, Olive followed her brother Paul Howland who moved to Ashtabula Co., O., but she settled in the adjoining County of Crawford, Pa. Children of Olive and Enos:

i. Elmira, b. in New York State; m. Noah Kennedy in New York State.

¹ Information received from Mr. Lucius J. Marsh, Jr. of Board of Assessors, Worcester, Co., Mass.

- ii. Lucina, b. in New York State; d. young.
- iii. Polly, m. 1st William Kennedy of Illinois; m. 2nd, () Gardner. In 1884 they were living at Maple Station, Ill.
- iv. Olive, d. at Kingsville, O.; m. Dr. Chester Cleveland who practiced medicine at Kingsville, O., and d. there. Children, i. George. ii. Georgiana. iii. Jay, d. in California.
- (7) II. PAUL
 - III. Seth, b. Jan. 11, 1799 at Douglas, Mass.; d. April 16, 1863 at Douglas, Mass.; m. 1st, Apr. 12, 1827 Ophelia Morse at Douglas, Mass., who d.; m. 2nd, March 9, 1858 Laura J. Robbin who was b. in Burrillville, R. I. Laura survived Seth and m. 3d, Nov. 24, 1864 Ochrey Jenne, a son of Dorcas (Howland) Jenne and husband Jacob Jenne.

After the death of his father Joseph, Seth came West to Pierpont, Astabula Co., O., where he visited with his brother Paul who was my grandfather.

Children of Seth and Ophelia, all born at Douglas, Mass.:

- i. Leander, b. Sept. 11, 1832 at Douglas, Mass.
- ii. Christopher, b. Apr. 8, 1835, at Douglas, Mass.; d. Apr. 25, 1835 at Douglas, Mass.
- iii. Mary H., b. June 26, 1836; m. Aug. 9, 1857 Dennis S. Gates. 1
- iv. PAUL WILLIAM, b. Oct. 1838; d. Feb. 12, 1859.

Child of SETH and LAURA:

- v. Joseph, b. Nov. 16, 1859 at Douglas, Mass.; m. Jan. 20, 1885 Lizzie Jane Johnson. Children: i. Robert S. Howland, b. Oct. 13, 1885. ii. Lama, b. Dec. 5, 1887. iii. John, b. Jan. 23, 1888.
- IV. Phebe, b. Dec. 3, 1804; m. John W. Thompson at Douglas, int. July 23, 1825.

Ohio, part of the Connecticut Western Reserve, admitted to the Union in 1802, was the first state to be carved out of the Northwest Territory.

In 1807 the present limits of Ashtabula County were defined and Jan. 22, 1811 the county was organized.

At this time there were 6 towns already organized within the limits of the proposed county, as follows: Salem, Harpersfield, Ashtabula, Kingsville, Jefferson, and Richfield. They were large townships and were later divided for organization of smaller towns.

GIDEON GRANGER, the Postmaster General in the administration of Thomas Jefferson, out of respect for the President had much to do with the naming of Jefferson Township.

The Township of Jefferson, organized about 1808, was divided about 1812 into Jefferson and Denmark.

June 18, 1818 the Township of Denmark was divided into Denmark and Pierpont.

¹ Data from Town Clerk at Douglas, 1945.

March 4, 1828 the Township of Pierpont was divided into Pierpont and Richmond.

The general attitude in New England was that the land in the Western Reserve area in Ohio "flowed with milk and honey," The slogan then and later was "Go west, young man, and grow up with the country." The belief was: that there was no problem of clearing the ground of stone; that there was plenty of new cleared ground that could be cultivated at once for bumper crops; that the forests were of whitewood, black walnut, beech, chestnut and maple in group and number suitable for sugar-bush; that there was enough game for meat and that there was ample fresh stream water for pasturage and for water mills.

After the Indian situation including the War of 1812 had been solved, the trend to go west began in Massachusetts. The route used was via Albany to Buffalo, then from Buffalo by lake boat to Conneaut, the northeast town in Ohio; then south on the Kellogsville road to Pierpont. Pierpont was desirable because there was an east-west road from Penn Line, a village of Conneaut Township, Crawford Co., Pa., on the Pennsylvania side of the border, already settled and well stocked with stores needed by settlers.

The road along the boundary between Pennsylvania and Ohio, crossed by the east-west Pennsylvania-Ohio road, was a basis for a community that arose there, with land holdings in Penn Line and Pierpont.

In that Penn Line-Pierpont area, three of my great-grandparents from Massachusetts settled. They were Captain Manoah Ellis, Emerson Baker and Asa Leonard. Also my grandfather, Paul Howland from Massachusetts, settled there.

Manoah Ellis, son of Captain Manoah Ellis, married Diadamia Perry in Massachusetts and had a daughter Diadamia who married Paul Howland at Pierpont and had a son William Perry Howland.

Anson Leonard, son of Asa Leonard, married at Pierpont Elizabeth Baker, the daughter of Emerson Baker, and had a daughter Esther who married at Penn Line William Perry Howland.

Gideon Granger, Postmaster General in the administration of President Thomas Jefferson, was the Proprietor of the tract that is now called Jefferson. He estimated that it was at a proper distance west of Buffalo to become a large city. He had it surveyed and plotted as a city. The streets, 100 feet wide, ran north and south and east and west. He set aside lots for public parks and other lots to support public schools. He built a court house, which led to Jefferson being selected as the County seat. But his selection was not parallel with the demands of commerce, and Cleveland, 60 miles to the west at the mouth of the Cuyahoga River on Lake Erie, met that demand and became the next city to the west of Buffalo.

But the publicity of his plans attracted learned, far-thinking, self-reliant people to Jefferson. It became an educational center, and graduation from the Jefferson Educational Institute, as from many academies of those days, rated a man as college bred.

At one time the percentage of letter and paper mail received at Jefferson per person was above that elsewhere.

JOSHUA R. GIDDINGS of Jefferson represented in Congress with great ability for many years the opposition of the people in the eastern part of the Western

Reserve against slavery, with such force, vigor and ability that he was nationally known and respected. He drafted in his office in Jefferson the platform of the first Republican convention.

Benjamin Wade of Jefferson in 1851 was elected to the United States Senate by the Whig Party. He opposed slavery during his long incumbency of that office. As a lawyer, a judge, a member of the Senate of the United States and the President pro tem of that body, he won the reputation of being just in his efforts, all of which—to the extent of his ability—was for the benefit of the people.

Before the days of the motor car and hard-surfaced roads, Jefferson and similarly situated towns in our mid-west country were the centers of education and public action that now are looked for in our larger cities. It was in Jefferson and towns similarly situated in the Western Reserve in the 19th century that incoming

New England people grew up with the country.

A full consideration of the difficulties overcome that led to the present occupation of this mid-west area in North America indicates that the inspiration that led our forefathers from Europe to the coast line of North America came from contacting Intelligence, which contact set up here in America a free representative government for liberty-loving people, and if that contact continues, free representative government for liberty-loving people will continue forever.

7. Paul Howland, Esquire: b. May 1, 1795 at Douglas, Worcester Co., Mass.; d. Dec. 18, 1854 at Pierpont, Ashtabula Co., O.; m. in 1829 at Penn Line, Conneaut Twp., Crawford, Co., Pa., Diadamia Ellis who was born Oct. 13, 1803 at Becket, Mass. and who died March 9, 1844 at Pierpont, O.

Paul was the first-born son of his parents, and his father named him for his uncle, Paul Years. He lived with his parents at Douglas. He was given his basic education by his parents and at the private schools within available distance, and became well qualified in English and in mathematics.

His father trained him vocationally as he would have trained an apprentice, to be a smith in wood and iron work and as an architect and constructor of private and public buildings and of water-power mills.

Paul chose to specialize in the law, an activity that he greatly enjoyed during his life.

Paul looked forward to manhood and was eager to begin the life of competition under the conditions reported to exist in the Western Reserve. His grandfather Thomas Howland approved that adventure as the exhibition of a family trait, and before his death and under the family custom, outside of his will, gave cash to Paul to help to finance his adventure. Similarly, his father made a cash present to Paul when he arrived at his 21st birthday, May 1, 1816.

THOMAS was old and feeble and Paul for that reason delayed his departure for the West. After the death of his grandfather Thomas, 4 days after Paul's 21st

birthday, Paul began his preparations for his journey.

Sister Olive, who married Enos Cook in 1814 at Douglas, and husband had moved to Batavia, N. Y., which was on the route via Albany to the Western Reserve. Olive wrote letters to the family at Douglas that were full of enthusiastic praise of the new land and happier life at Batavia.





HON. PAUL HOWLAND Dr. A. P. Howland, M.D. Major C. R. Howland, U.S.A. November 1916 HON. WM. S. HOWLAND

Paul made no commitment by purchase of land or otherwise that would tend to delay his departure for the new country. But after the funeral ceremony for his grandfather Thomas at the Methodist Church and the burial ceremony at that churchyard conducted by Rev. Amos Yeats (brother of Paul's mother Lucina) of that Church, Paul completed his plans for a journey to the new country.

We do not know the exact date when he bade goodbye to his parents and

friends at Douglas, but believe it was in the Summer of 1816.

He had not married. He had not accumulated personal property that required horse or wheel transportation. He was strong, vigorous and unafraid. So, undoubtedly, he journeyed on foot from Douglas, Mass. on the new route across New York to Buffalo. He stopped at Batavia, where he lived for some time with his sister Olive and her husband Enos Cook. There he visited with them and his relatives Bannister Howland and family.

Apparently he decided to study the difference between frontier life at Batavia and at Douglas, in order better to prepare himself for life in the new Western Reserve in Ohio. In fact, he remained at Batavia several years and probably learned

there how to clear wooded land and how to operate a farm at a profit.

We do not know just when he resumed his journey to the Western Reserve, but we do know that before 1825 he was at Denmark, Ashtabula Co., searching for a suitable location upon which to settle. His requirements for such a place were: a stream with sufficient power, after building a dam, to operate a mill; a part of the place to be wooded with grown trees from which he could saw timber, boards, etc. for his own use on his place, for his use as architect-constructor, and for sale in the market; another part of the place to be suitable for agriculture and pasturage; and the location of such place to be near the east-west road through Penn Line for convenience and market, and to be near the road via Kellogsville to Conneaut for market for lake shipment. In fact, he exhibited the traits of his forbear Jabez Howland in the choice of a place in which to live and the choice of his life's activity. He chose to live in Pierpont, Ashtabula Co., O.

June 18, 1825 Paul, temporarily in Denmark, with 530 dollars purchased from Ezekiel Huntley of Pierpont 135 acres and 45 rods of land, "excepting therefrom 2 acres and 25 rods, which land is occupied as a public highway running nearly through the center of said premises." That purchased land in Pierpont was "situated in Township No. Eleven, range first, Connecticut Western Reserve. Being the north part of Lot No. twenty one."

He had carefully selected that land for his home and place of business. It met his requirements. Upon it was a matured white-wood forest. The remainder, nearly level, was stoneless, woodless, clear fertile land. Through it ran Ashtabula Creek with sufficient current, with a dam, to operate a mill. On rafts, timber and lumber could be transported on high water to market at Ashtabula, on Lake Erie.

It was just north of the ridge between streams to Lake Erie and streams to the Ohio River: and when the market for white-wood demanded, contractors could haul such logs or timber to the head water or the Pymatuning Creek in Andover or Cherry Valley and on high water raft them south to the Ohio River.

The road through his new property, called Angling Road, gave traffic to nearby Penn Line, to Jefferson about 12 miles west, to Andover about 12 miles south, and to Conneaut via Kellogsville, about 12 miles north, where there was also a lake market.

Paul decided to engage in agricultural work for maintenance, in milling logs of white-wood into timber and lumber for sale, and planning and construction of private and public buildings for profit.

In the coordination of his plans he first built an earthen dam to back up sufficient water power to operate a sawmill. The earthen side walls of that dam are still in place, but the dam at the point where the water-wheel was located has been washed out. He then built a water-power saw mill at the head of that dam.

He had drawn the plans for his messuage. Under those plans he built in the following order: stables for stock, barns for hay and other fodder, corn cribs, smoke house, and last, his dwelling house. He completed the construction of his dwelling house in time for it to be a bridal-home in 1829, when he took unto himself a wife.

That dwelling house has passed out of the ownership of our family and is now

occupied by other people.

He built that house of white-wood, and no repair in sills, timber, floors, walls, roof, etc. has been required except change of shingles, eaves and downspouts. The principal changes are from polished plaster walls to wallpaper, from fireplace to stoves, and from small window-glass to large window-glass. It is still plumb and true.

That house, built by Paul Howland in Pierpont in the Western Reserve, in plan and appearance is much like the Howland house in Plymouth after it was remodeled by Jabez Howland; and like the Jabez Howland House, it inspires one to see it.

He planned and built public and private houses, including the first church building in 1840.

By 1839 he needed more woodland to meet the needs of his market for timber and lumber, and Oct. 4, 1839 purchased from Zaphthah and wife Susan W. Turner of Pierpont, 120 and twenty-eight hundredths acres of land—except 9 acres which was sold for taxes—in Pierpont, to meet that need.

It is pleasant and encouraging to know that the above vocational work was in

addition to a normal and successful agricultural life for maintenance.

After the death of his father Joseph Howland, his son Seth, who was administrator of his father's estate, visited Paul in Pierpont. Under the family custom he probably brought to Paul money or gifts from his father Joseph. Seth remained for a considerable time with Paul, but considered that his land holdings in Douglas, Mass. and other interests there prevented his moving to the Western Reserve, and he returned to Douglas.

Paul was recognized as an able man and leader from his first appearance in Pierpont, and the people of that new town, in the wilderness of that great wooded area, called him to public duty for them, which occupied much of his time.

They selected him for public administrative duty soon after he arrived, and they trusted him and kept him on such duty as follows: Township Trustee, 1827, 1828, 1829, 1830, 1832; Township Treasurer, 1833, 1834, 1835, 1836, 1837, 1838, 1839, 1840, 1841, 1842; Assessor, 1846, 1847, 1848. He was frequently chosen as Judge of Elections, and served as Supervisor as late in life as 1853.

.



Left to Right: Standing, William S. Howland, L. Paul Howland, Anson P. Howland; Seated, Hon. W. Perry Howland, Esther (Leonard) Howland, Charles R. Howland.

PAUL was a well-educated man who believed that basic education of the children was one of the primary public duties resting on the citizens of that frontier town of Pierpont. He was instrumental in having five school districts organized Oct. 25, 1827. At that meeting the following curricula of study was prescribed for those district primary schools: spelling, reading, writing, arithmetic, English grammar, and geography. And the following rules for conduct of students were prescribed: "that during school hours there shall be no whispering, laughing, talking, or any other unnecessary action that shall in any way annoy or disturb, either directly or indirectly, the peace, order or utility of the school; that all the scholars shall be under school rules while going to and returning from school, during which time and at school intermissions, due respect shall be paid to strangers; that there shall be no profane talking, lying, swearing, calling ill names, snow-balling, wrestling, scuffling, sliding, or any other excerises that shall either directly or indirectly tend to injure the person or garments of any individual; that it is the duty of school teachers, respectively, as much as possible (by suitable correction) to keep (enforce) the aforesaid rules; and that all scholars who after suitable correction shall continue on obstinate violation of the aforesaid rules shall be expelled from school:"

Paul's first child, William Perry, was born July 10, 1832. After that event Paul devoted especial attention to No. 2 School District in which he lived. He was instrumental in having it organized Oct. 15, 1833. At that meeting he was chosen Chairman of the Board and was elected Treasurer of that District, for which duty he gave bond. He was re-elected to that position in 1834, 1835, 1836 in which year he proposed and voted for assessment of a District tax to finish the schoolhouse, 1837, 1840, 1841. In 1837 he was selected one of the Town School Directors and was re-elected in 1842, 1843, 1844, 1845, 1846 and 1847.

Understanding the Common Law, the Ordinance of 1787, the Constitution of the United States and such statutes of Ohio as had been published, Paul was most interested in law and legal procedure. His legal qualifications were well known and people came to him for advice, which he unfailingly gave and without charge, as he was not a practicing lawyer.

Soon the people demanded the use of his legal ability as Justice of the Peace, to which office they elected him Aug. 19, 1828. From that time to 1841 they kept him in that office almost continually. Attorneys in Ashtabula County, including Benjamin Wade and Joshua R. Giddings, and attorneys from nearby counties practiced law in his Court, and no record has been found among all his decisions of a single one that was reversed by a superior court. He was just in all his decisions and the community gave him the honored title of Esquire.

He traced his descent from Pilgrim John Howland, as stated in this compilation.

Paul was a Mason and attended Lodge at Conneaut when his convenience permitted. He was active in preliminary work for organization of a lodge in Pierpont, but which he did not live long enough to enjoy, as the lodge was not organized under dispensation until July 1856, nearly two years after his death.

PAUL was a Methodist. The Methodists in that general area were a group in Pierpont; neighboring Richmond in Ashtabula Co., O., and Penn Line, Conneaut Twp., Crawford Co., Pa. There was no Methodist church building in Pierpont at

that time. It is believed that the place for meeting was rotated among those communities for the equal convenience of all.

Paul Howland, Esquire, died Dec. 18, 1854, intestate, at his home in Pierpont. He evidently gave his real estate to his children before his death, under the custom in our family. The only problem was the administration of his personal estate.

Perry Howland and S. B. Hopkins, as principals, and Francis Trimmer and Milo Huntley, as sureties, were appointed Oct. 27, 1855 by M. A. Leonard, Justice of the Peace.

March 15, 1858 the final account of administration by W. P. HOWLAND was received, approved and recorded by the Probate Judge of Ashtabula County, H. A. Plumb.

Children of Paul Howland and Diadamia:

- (8) I. WILLIAM PERRY.
 - II. Lucina, b. Dec. 12, 1835; d. July 7, 1912 at her home in Philadelphia, Pa. and is bur. in Laurel Hill Cemetery there. Lucina was a school teacher, first locally and later in the public schools of Philadelphia, Pa. After retirement as a teacher she made Philadelphia her home.
 - III. Joseph Manoah, b. in Sept. 1837; d. Aug. 28, 1909 at his home in Villisca, Ia.; m. 1858 at Pierpont, O. Margaret Waterman of Pierpont who preceding him d. Sept. 13, 1904 at their home in Villisca, Ia.

Following the death of his Father, Joseph lived at the family homestead in Pierpont and later moved to Villisca, Ia. where he was a highly respected member of that community.

Children of Joseph Manoah Howland and Margaret:

- i. Benton Manoah, a practicing physician, b. Jan. 12, 1862 at Pierpont, O.; d. March 2, 1930 at St. Petersburg, Fla. and was bur. in Melbourne Cemetery, Melbourne, Marshall Co., Ia.; m. Apr. 17, 1888 Alice M. Reeve of College Springs, Page Co., Ia., who survived him. Children: i. Paul Russell, res. Des. Moines, Ia.; b. Jan. 21, 1892 at Nodaway, Ia.; m. June 6, 1920 at Minneapolis, Minn. Olga von Berg and had Richard, b. Feb. 24, 1926 and Robert, b. Sept. 1, 1927. ii. Floyd R., b. Jan. 26, 1902 at Melbourne, Iowa, and was living there as a bachelor in 1944.
- ii. Minnie, b. 1865 at Pierpont, O.; d. there Feb. 29, 1868 and is bur. in the Pierpont Center cemetery in the Howland lot.
- iii. Jessie Lucina, b. Apr. 9, 1867 at Pierpont, O.; d. Aug. 24, 1919 at Red Oak, Ia. and is bur. at Villisca, Ia.; m. Dec. 27, 1887 James S. Jackson, an attorney, at Villisca, Ia. who preceding Jessie d. March 23, 1916 at Omaha, Neb. and is bur. at Villisca, Ia. Children: i. William H., b. Nov. 12, 1888; became a commercial artist and was living in Chicago, Ill. in 1944; m. May 27, 1912 Rose Lehman. ii. Vera Lucina, b. Sept. 13, 1889 at Villisca, Ia.; was living in Deadwood, S. D. in 1944; m. Nov. 25, 1906 at Villisca, Ia. R. C. Gridley, who was engaged in 1944 in wholesaling groceries and fruit, and they had

1st. Jackson H., b. May 20, 1907 at Villisca, Ia. who in 1944 was a paymaster and supervisor of a Chicago commercial company, and who m. at Omaha, Neb. MARGARET SMITH. They had the following children at Chicago: MARY ANN, b. March 24, 1932; JUDITH, b. Jan. 12, 1934; Donald, b. Feb. 20, 1935; Daniel, b. Dec. 26, 1942. 2nd, MARGARET E., b. Jan. 22, 1909 at Villisca, Ia. and who m. Aug. 8, 1930 at Rockport, Mo. Dr. O. C. Ehlers of Ravenna, Neb. They had, Nov. 8, 1933 at Ravenna, a dau. named Joan Gail. 3rd. Law-RENCE J., b. Feb. 25, 1914 at Laramie, Wyo., who became a practicing physician and in 1944 had rendered service for two years in the war; and who m. Dec. 27, 1916 DERNICE REED. 4th. JEAN GAIL, b. Apr. 28, 1917 at Yankton, S. D.; m. EARL W. GLOVER of Hot Springs, S. D., who was engaged in 1944 in the wholesale commercial activity of selling fruit. They had the following children: WARREN, b. March 31, 1937 and Gail, b. Oct. 28, 1939. iii. James Waterman, b. Jan. 19, 1896 at Villisca, Ia., was living in Omaha, Neb. in 1944, where he was vice president and general manager of a commercial company; m. 1st, Sept. 23, 1913 at Omaha, Neb. HAZEL M. PETERSON, who dying in April, 1930 he m. 2nd. Oct. 27, 1936 at Omaha, Neb. Velma Holz-BAUER, and had by 1st wife the following children: 1st. GENEVIEVE H., b. Sept. 16, 1914 at Omaha, and who m. Sept. 5, 1936 at Papillion, Neb. Fred A. Kelso, and they had the following children: Phyllis MARIE, STEVEN MARCUS and ELIZABETH ANN. 2nd, JAMES W. Jr., b. Oct. 18, 1918, was rendering war service in the Army in 1944; m. July 27, 1940 at Omaha, Neb. Betty Jane Dayton, and they had a daughter named Shadlee Ann. iv. Margaret E., b. Sept. 2, 1893 at Vilisca, Ia.; m. Feb. 25, 1914 at Omaha, Neb. Charles Casey, who was a Captain in the first World War and who in 1944 was general manager of several retail lumber yards in and near Seattle, Wash. They had a son Edmond who was b. Feb. 6, 1915 at Villisca, Ia.; m. May 21, 1940 RUTH K. STOTLER. He was serving in the Army in 1944.

- iv. Solomon Paul, b. May 9, 1868 at Pierpont, O.; held important positions with Express companies from which he retired before 1944 and was living at Long Beach, Calif. In 1944; m. at Galveston, Tex. Leslie Thompson Freybe, who was b. Feb. 12, 1865 and preceding her husband d. May 29, 1940 and was bur. at Henderson, Tex.
- v. Burt Joseph, b. July 6, 1869 at Pierpont, O.; m. Jan. 31, 1901 at Clarinda, Ia. Lula Lucile Harvey. Burt lived an active life as an organizer of banks and as a banker. He understands banking, finance, and all of the banks which he organized passed succeessfully through the ordeal of the depression and are now useful in our American commercial life. He has retired and in 1945 was living comfortably in Long Beach, Calif.
- vi. Pearl Leon, b. March 18, 1876 at Villisca, Ia.; d. March 11, 1911 and is bur. in the Howland family lot in the cemetery at Villisca, Ia.; m. Clara Martha Straw.

8. Judge William Perry Howland, b. Oct. 7, 1832 at Pierpont, O.; d. Jan. 9, 1900 at Jefferson, O.; m. May 12, 1862 in Penn Line, Pa. at the home of her father Anson Leonard, Esther Elizabeth Leonard who preceding her husband d. Nov. 1, 1890.

He was the first-born child in that proud and happy home. Paul allowed his wife to select the name. Her mother Diadamia (Perry) Ellis was there and controlled the choice. She gave him first her own maiden name Perry. She then preceded it with the name William which came down to the Perry line from the Phelps family. Thus she limited his name to her family of Perry and its forebears.

As a child and young man, and always by relatives and close friends, he was called and referred to as Perry. Under the family custom his father and mother took charge of his earliest education in those particulars that are classed under character, and prepared him for District School education.

At the age of 4 years and 27 days he began attendance as a student at District School No. 2. He advanced rapidly.

At 14 he had mastered the curriculum in his District School. Request was made for him to teach that school. He was willing but his father withheld approval on the ground that he was too young for such a responsibility.

After he arrived at the age of 16 his father withdrew his objection and Perry was called to teach, at \$12 a month, the school that he had been attending as a student.

From then until he was 21 years of age his time during school years was divided between teaching district schools and attendance as a student at select schools.

During this period, when his time was not occupied as a student or teacher at school, he was under instruction vocationally, as though he were an apprentice to his father, in agriculture, in processing of trees into merchantable timber and lumber for the market, in preparation of plans for construction of buildings, and in such construction.

The activity that attracted him most was the trial of cases by his father as Justice of the Peace, so he chose the practice of law as his lifetime activity. He devoted all of his available time to preparation for that profession. After a day's task was completed he studied his father's law books late into the night. He carried a legal book or document with him so that he might take advantage of any available time for its study. He carried that pursuit of legal knowledge to the point of studying a selected book or document—when in charge of the sawmill—during the slow progress of the log on its carrier to the saw.

He did not spare himself in that activity. He committed to memory the Constitution of the United States, including amendments then adopted, to save time in the evaluation of legal problems in study and in his later practice.

In furtherance of his plan to practice law he decided to continue his scholastic education. The best educational institute at that time in northeastern Ohio was Kingsville Adademy.

After arrival at the age of 21 years he entered that Academy for a finishing year in education, in which time he completed his scholastic student effort with credit.

After graduation he accepted the invitation of the School Board at Jefferson, O. in 1854 to the position of Principal of the Jefferson High School. There he pre-

scribed—with authority—a curriculum for a three-year course with three terms each year. He scheduled the duties of himself and assistants, and—with approval—scheduled the progressive requirements from District to Grammar School, and from Grammar to High School. His course for the High School became the basis for the later Jefferson Educational Institute.

During that student and teaching period he continued his study of law during all available time, and it was at that time that his father died and he was appointed administrator.

In 1857 he entered the law office of Simonds and Caldwell in Jefferson as a law student. He took the Bar examination in 1858 in Carroll County, O. and was admitted to the practice of law. Before deciding where he would practice he visited and examined the field in Illinois, Kansas, Missouri, Arkansa sand Tennessee, and finally decided to practice at Jefferson and opened his law office there in February, 1861.

He was asked to serve as Secretary of the Board of School Examiners at Jefferson and a little later was elected Justice of the Peace, which duty he retained for 6 successive terms.

Anson Leonard, Esquire of Penn Line was a prominent man in that community and a personal friend of Paul Howland and frequently attended Paul's court in Pierpont. The families were friendly and met socially often at each other's homes.

Perry, and Esther, daughter of Anson and Elizabeth (Baker) Leonard, were acquainted from childhood and liked each other. Undoubtedly the reason why Perry could not bring himself to practice law in the West was because Esther was not there. In the diary which my mother kept before her marriage are listed as principal events the dates of receiving letters from my father and dates on which she wrote to him, and in greater particularity the dates when he called. The Howland home in Pierpont on the old Angling road was not far from the Rockwell schoolhouse where my mother taught school. When teaching there my mother lived at the home of her grandfather Emerson Baker, which was west of the Rockwell school and much closer to the Howland home than that schoolhouse or her home. So in 1861 and in the Winter and Spring of 1862, Perry drove frequently from Jefferson to Pierpont, and from the Howland home there called on Esther at her home, or at the home of her grandfather Emerson Baker while she was teaching at the Rockwell schoolhouse. We do not know when they engaged themselves to marry, but we do know that it was early in the Spring of 1862, as Perry early in that year purchased from Reuben Warren a house in Jefferson as a bridal home for Esther. They married May 12, 1862 at her father's home in Penn Line.

After his marriage, while still called Perry by members of the family and close friends, he signed himself as W. P. Howland, and so he was known thereafter by the people, and so his name is written in all public records, and in the Press during the time when the people who knew him or of him, desired his service in public office.

In the war between the States, General John Hunt Morgan of the Confederate Army, a cavalry commander, after the battle of Shiloh in July, 1862 routed Federal forces in Kentucky, destroyed railway property and threatened Louisville and Cincinnati. Later in that year his force assisted in General Bragg's invasion

of Kentucky and threat of invasion of Ohio, and still later he was on the same raid mission against Kentucky, with threat of invasion of Ohio. Governor Dodd of Ohio called on the Minute Men of the State, and the "Squirrel Hunters" rose by the thousands and successfully marched against Morgan. W. P. Howland was one of those men who saved Ohio from invasion. This compiler has the Honorable Discharge of my father from that service given by the Governor, David Todd.

During Perry's absence at the war front against General Morgan, Esther lived with her parents at Penn Line. Upon his completion of military service he drove to Penn Line for his wife and they resumed home life in Jefferson, and he resumed the practice of law there, in which many clients came to him, and through good legal advice and successful conduct of their cases in court he rather quickly

acquired the reputation of being a successful lawyer.

July 5, 1865 he purchased a neighboring 8 acres from George W. Doremus and wife.

Nov. 2, 1868 he purchased 12 more adjoining acres from Loren Coon and wife. In 1867 he was elected to the office of County Prosecuting Attorney. He executed the duties so satisfactorily that he was renominated and re-elected in 1869.

In 1871 he resigned that office and accepted nomination for Member of the House of Representatives. He was elected by a large majority and took his seat in 1872. At once he was recognized as one of the clearest thinkers, ablest debaters and fairest partisans in the Legislature. He dedicated his service to the protection of the constitutional rights of the people.

He was re-elected in 1873, and again in 1875.

He preferred and requested assignment to the Judiciary Committee and was

so assigned in his three terms.

He was the unofficial leader of his party in the Legislature and in his third term preferred the position of Chairman of the Judiciary Committee to the position of Speaker, and his wishes were respected and honored. The reports of that Committee were always clear and explicit and always sustained by the House. That Committee was called the "Slaughter House" of unwise and unjust measures. The Republicans were in the majority at that time and of course were responsible for all legislation, and so implicit was the confidence of the Republicans in his ability that they met in caucus and unanimously requested him to actas their leader in the House.

In 1875 great pressure was put on him to enter the contest for election as State

Governor, but he refused to be a candidate.

In 1877 the people in Northeastern Ohio nominated and elected him, as a Republican, to the State Senate for the term 1878-1879, where he continued his public service on the high plane established by him in the lower House.

When he entered his first term in the Legislature a mania was sweeping over the State to tax the people to finance many and various projects for building railroads. He opposed enactment of such laws as against the interest of the people and as a violation of the State Constitution. He branded them as iniquitous. But the mania controlled, and such bills were passed and became laws. In a short time that incorrect policy became apparent and in due time the Supreme Court of Ohio held such acts unconstitutional and swept them from the statute books.

A partial list of laws proposed by Mr. Howland that were enacted into law is as follows:

As grand jurymen were not accustomed generally to interpretation of the law, he proposed that the Prosecuting Attorney should remain during their session and give such counsel as demanded by them, with the view of saving much waste of time in idle discussion. That bill passed both Houses promptly and became a law.

In 1871 there was no law to protect an owner of a wooded area against depredation on his timber. Mr. Howland, introduced a bill which provided a punishment of from 1 to 3 years in the penitentiary for the cutting or removing of \$35 worth of timber without lawful authority. It contained a provision that made a misdemeanor the buying of any timber, tan-bark or rails by any person knowing the same to have been stolen. It also made it a crime for the owner of a sawmill, or any person having charge of or working in a sawmill, to permit stolen timber to be sawed in such mill.

The Road Law of Ohio in 1871 was defective in that a "viewer" or "re-viewer" had the right to appear at the specified time or within 5 days thereafter, with the result that those who appeared for work at the appointed time were frequently compelled to wait for 5 days, owing to non-appearance of the third viewer or reviewer. On Jan. 23, 1872 Mr. Howland introduced House Bill 122 which provided that if any viewer or re-viewer should fail to appear at the fixed date and place designated, by 2 o'clock P. M., those present could fill the vacancy. The bill became a law of the State.

When Mr. Howland took his seat in the State Legislature many people were being injured and much property was being destroyed by explosion of lamps and lanterns. He examined the then existing law. That law provided that the inspector in each county where oils were refined should inspect the oils and place his brand upon each cask so inspected, showing that the oil would bear a test of 110, which was required by that law. All oils were bought and sold upon the inspector's brand, being sold by the refiner to the wholesaler, and then to the retailer, who distributed broadcast to consumers, who in a majority of cases resided many miles from the refiner, wholesaler and inspector.

Mr. Howland then studied the nature and dangerous tendency of a low-grade oil, viz. an oil that tests only 40, 60, or 80, which comprised about all the oils bought by consumers at that time. He considered the danger of using such oils in a room the temperature of which varies from 50 to 80. As a result of his studies he found that anyone can test oil very easily and discover the exact degree of heat which may explode it.

Having completed his studies on this subject he prepared a bill which provided that every person who desired to retail oil should make a test of the oil, and know for himself before he offered it for sale that it would stand 110, the same as required for brand by the inspector in the bill which this Howland bill was repealing.

Jan. 26, 1872, a little over three weeks after taking his seat, he introduced that bill, and since the passage of that law there have been but few accidents from the use of illuminating oil.

The election in 1876 was so close a contest that the people of Ohio, and probably of other states also, were greatly excited and confused over the question of whether

Governor Rutherford B. Hayes of Ohio, or Governor Samuel Jones Tilden, Democrat of New York, had been elected.

In Ohio the Democrats in their Columbus Convention in substance resolved: "That should the Vice President of the United States attempt to count the electoral votes, they would justify the resistance of such count by force of arms."

That resolution with others was offered for adoption in the House of Representatives of Ohio, and caused an exciting and critical discussion which continued nearly a day and into the night. The able Mr. Converse led the Democratic fight for approval of that resolution with his usual force and eloquence, and amidst great excitement he presented the demand for adoption of the resolution. Senator How-LAND, the Republican leader, was requested to answer Mr. Converse, and close the debate in the evening, in the House of Representatives. The hall and galleries were filled with members of the House and Senate, and citizens of the City and State, who had come to hear Mr. Howland. In a masterly speech he not only satisfactorily answered Mr. Converse; he advanced to a consideration of the whole question of government by law rather than government by man, and raised his hearers to the mental melting point of agreement that "this is no time for these warweary states to engage in another war." That great audience acclaimed him as their leader and demanded that he be sent to Washington as a Federal Senator where all could benefit from his statesmanship. At that time Federal Senators were selected by the State Legislatures in the States of the Union.

His defense of the Union in that dangerous 1876 situation raised him so high with the Republican members of the State Legislature that they told him at the coming Republican caucus they proposed to select him as the Republican candidate for the vacancy being made in the United States Senate by John Sherman. He thanked them and said: "I can not accept the caucus nomination. I have given my word to support Garfield for the Senatorship."

Having devoted himself to public service away from his law-practice area in Northeastern Ohio for 9 years, at considerable expense, he declined any further nomination to the State Senate and resumed all-time practice of law.

But the people of Northeastern Ohio had become acquainted with him and his great and good ability, including preparation of laws, interpretation of laws, and faithfulness to the people in all his public acts.

Hon. James A. Garfield of Mentor, O. had represented Northeastern Ohio in Congress with great ability since 1863. In 1876 he was a candidate for the United States Senate until Hayes intervened to keep him in the house, as he needed his services there. In 1880 he was selected as the Republican candidate, as a Senator of the United States. Also in 1880 he was nominated as the Republican candidate for the Presidency of the United States.

The people of Northeastern Ohio, without regard to party, wanted Mr. How-LAND to succeed Mr. Garfield in Congress. If the nomination had been by primary he would have been nominated by an overwhelming vote, but—then—the nomination was by convention. He did not campaign for the nomination, but a considerable majority of the selected delegates were for him. He was not present at the Convention. On the first ballot he received not only a majority of the votes but many votes to spare. It was believed that he would be nominated on the first

ballot. But—just then—practical, or perhaps a better term, professional politics entered and a hostile delegate cast two ballots. Although two ballots and many more could have been withdrawn from the vote for Mr. Howland and he still would have had a safe majority of the votes, the Chairman announced the result of the voting and ruled that as one vote more than the authorized number was cast, there was no election. At once a hostile delegate moved for a recess which was approved. During that recess a shift in candidates, and accordingly of votes, was agreed upon by those who were hostile to Mr. Howland. As a result, when the convention reassembled, practical or professional politics had shifted the votes and Mr. Howland was not nominated.

Quite disgusted with the ways of practical or professional politics, he resumed the practice of law and turned a deaf ear thereafter to all demands for him to be a candidate for any office. But in 1891 the poeple of Northeastern Ohio decided they wanted the benefit of his legal ability, and he was drafted as Judge of the Common Pleas Court in Northeastern Ohio; he remained in that office during the remainder of his life. It is with proper pride that we state here that not a single decision by him as Judge was overruled by a Superior Court.

As a lawyer he would not take a case if he knew or believed that the applicant had broken the law, and in such cases he advised the applicant to seek counsel elsewhere.

He was a member of the Jefferson Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons and was a member of the Congregational Church.

My mother shared my father's attitude of being true and of benefit to other people in an unselfish attitute and way of life. She was without fear of disease and accepted a self-appointed mission of going to homes where there was sickness. When there was an epidemic of diphtheria associated with fear in Jefferson, she went to the afflicted homes and did what was necessary, including the calling of a doctor. Diphtheria did not attack her and did not come to our home. She was loved by all. She informed my father as to who was in need. He went to the stores and had food, clothing, medicine, or what else was needed, sent to those people, especially at Thanksgiving and Christmas time, but charged the storekeeper not to reveal the name of the donor even to the recipients.

No man could ever have been blessed with a better wife and helpmeet than was my father. She had a natural grace and was well educated. She was much interested in Perry's work and career, as was he, and subordinated all else to make life pleasant for him and to help him in every way.

She was intensely religious and an active member of the Congregational Church. She was an early and exceedingly active member of the non-political Women's Christian Temperance Union, and a personal friend and co-worker with its great leader Frances Willard. She was a charter member of Giddings Womens Relief Corps, an auxiliary organization to Giddings Post, G. A. R.

In my boyhood, I recall that she was distressed over the fact that there was no public library in Jefferson. She adopted the idea of a public library as a project that should be accomplished. She interested others in that project. She made request on Mr. Uselma Smith of Philadelphia for an initial supply of books. He agreed. She arranged the financing of transportation of the books. She interested friends in

solution of the organization problem, and of the original financial problem. A place for location of the library was contributed in the Town Hall and an operating personnel for the library from volunteers was selected. I was present when the packaged books from USELMA SMITH came, and assisted in unpacking and grouping them according to subjects. That Citizens Library met the need of Jefferson. It has survived and grown. It is now located in Fireman's Hall. It is now incorporated, and has become a part of the State System, and participates in the distribution of the State Intangible Tax. It now has 6571 catalogued books and 45 different kinds of magazines. It co-operates with the High School and instructs students in library work and use of a catalogue file. That library circulates nearly 20,000 books and magazines a year. It has had a tremendously good educational and cultural effect on the people of Ashtabula County, who use it. Donations have continued, and this project undoubtedly is a permanent institution in Jefferson and Ashtabula County. All who have contributed time, books, and money and those who are now contributing and those who will contribute hereafter, are creators of good.

Our mother died Nov. 1, 1890 at her home at Jefferson, O. The funeral services were held at the Congregational Church at Jefferson, with nearly all the people in Jefferson and many from afar, present in the church or standing in the churchyard in front. And there, on that sad occasion, her family and friends in sadness and sorrow listened to the comforting message of Rev. H. S. Jackson, and from there all went to Oakdale Cemetery where we 4 young men, sons, carried her casket to her

grave, in deepest grief.

Our father died Jan. 9, 1900 at Jefferson. He had traveled lonely and sad 10 years since our mother passed. The funeral services were held at the Congregational Church at Jefferson, with practically all the people of Jefferson, and many of his friends from afar, present in the church or standing in the churchyard. Rev. L. J. LUETHI conducted the funeral services in the presence of that mass of sorrowful friends, and my 3 grief-stricken brothers, Rev. LUETHI stated in substance that: Judge Howland was a worthy son of Pilgrim John Howland who came over in the Mayflower; that he was a good and great man, worthy to be copied by others, and that the world was better for his having lived in it. He was buried in the family lot in Oakdale Cemetery, Jefferson, O. by the side of Esther, in the presence of a great throng.

When the sad news was conveyed to me by my General-Major General Lloyd Wheaton—at Silang, Philippine Islands, where we were engaged in active war service against insurgent Philippinos, my grief was so great that I had difficulty in composing myself and continuing my duties.

All four children were born, baptized in the Congregational Church, and raised to adult manhood at Jefferson, O.

I. Hon. Leonard Paul: b. Dec. 5, 1865; d. Dec. 23, 1942 at Cleveland, O-and is bur. in the family lot in Lake View Cemetery, Cleveland; m. Jan. 18, 1905 at her home at Burghill, Trumbull Co., O. Miss Jessie Frances Pruden who survived him and was living at their home in Cleveland in 1945.

He graduated from: the Jefferson Educational Institute in 1883; Oberlin College in

1887 with the degree of A. B., and was awarded the degree of A. M. in 1904; Law School of Harvard in 1890 with the degree of LL.B.

He enjoyed the Varsity and Hasty Pudding clubs at Harvard, and baseball for excercise at Oberlin where he received the "Varsity O" for Honorary Baseball, 1887, and at Harvard—especially—when he batted one of the offerings of Yale's great pitcher Stagg into a home run, June 28, 1900.

He entered the practice of law in 1890 as a partner with our father. After Father was called to the Bench, Paul practiced there in the firm of Howland and Starkey. At that time he began the use of the name of Paul Howland. By certificate he was eligible to practice in all the courts in our country.

In 1894 his law practice called him to Cleveland, O. where he made his residence. His trial of cases earned him quickly the reputation of knowing the law and how to practice it in a superior manner in court.

He served in the Spanish -American War as a Second Lieutenant in the First Ohio Volunteer Cavalry, and rendered the following service: part time Commander of Troop C; Squadron Adjutant; Regimental Ordnance Officer, and Regimental Judge Advocate. On his Discharge Certificate it is recorded as follows:

"Character excellent.

Service Honest and Faithful.

An exceptionally competent Ordnance Officer,

Adjutant and Judge Advocate."

After discharge Paul was commissioned a Second Lieutenant in Troop A, Ohio National Guard.

In 1902 Hon. Theodore Burton, Republican candidate for Congress (with intense opposition by the popular Mayor of Cleveland, Hon. Tom L. Johnson), called Paul to chairmanship of his Executive Committee, and his well-organized and conducted campaign elected Mr. Burton.

In his speech placing the name of a candidate in nomination at the Republican State Convention in 1903, Paul said: "I present for your consideration for the high office of Governor, the name of a man in whose integrity we have absolute confidence, whose ability has been demonstrated, and who will be an honor to the State that honors him. He is a fighter, a man of action. He does things, and does them well, and his name is Myron T. Herrick." Mr. Herrick was nominated by acclamation.

Later that year Paul accepted an invitation by Hon. Theodore Burton (who expected to be chairman of the Rivers and Harbors Committee in Congress) to accompany him on an inspection of the use of rivers and harbors in Europe.

He yielded to the public demand that he be a candidate for Congress but on the conditions that if the incumbent did not run, and second, that there should be a primary in Cuyahoga County to select delegates to the District Convention. To his surprise, those conditions were met. He was nominated by acclamation in the 20th Ohio District. He was elected, and re-elected twice. At first he was on the Public Lands Committee but during most of his service he was on the Judiciary Committee.

His speech on April 23, 1908 was a factor toward prosecution of the Harriman railroad for violation of the Land Grant Act of 1869. May 11, 1908 he opposed the increase of homesteads from 160 to 320 acres, as arrival of immigrants would soon produce here the "land famine" from which they were fleeing Europe.

May 18, 1911 he, addressing the House, said:" In view of the radical proposition in the proposed Arizona Constitution which provides for the recall of judges—a proposition, which gives a judge legal title to his term for six months only and makes him a tenant at will, subject to recall, for the balance of his elective term—, I say that after those six months he is not a judge, He has lost the power to pass judgment between the majority and the minority of the electorate, or if appointed, between the appointing power and the man being prosecuted by the appointive power. I am opposed to the reception of Arizona as a State until this inadequacy of government shall be corrected."

He was glad of the opportunity, and took it, to vote for drastic campaign publicity legislation, which provided publicity as to campaign contributions, and expenditures as to primaries and elections both before and after the election.

Aug. 1, 1912 he said to the House that "Sooner or later the Federal Government will respond to the demand of the people, and lend assistance to the good roads movement of the country," and that "In my judgment, the question of transportation is one of the great problems that confronts the present generation. The splendid development of rail and water transportation has taken care of the long hauls in a reasonably satisfactory manner. But the short hauls, which are a necessity, must still be made over the old dirt roads, and these have been sadly neglected in our plans of development."

Paul was a Progressive. He believed in making the progressive fight inside the party, instead of outside the party. Had he desired, he could have represented both Progressives and Regulars as candidate for Governor in 1912; or he could have been the candidate for Governor on the Progressive ticket and also the candidate for Governor on the Republican ticket. But he refused to be considered in either capacity, on the ground that by accepting a nomination for Congress he had given his word and could not honorably break it.

In 1914, Republicans of the Progressive and Regular groups recognized Paul as the Progressive in the "regular" group around whom the party in Ohio could unite. He did all that he could to unite the party, but as before would not be a candidate for Governor by nomination or draft.

His personal effort to unite the party in Ohio in 1914 was effective, and much appreciated. In 1916 the reunited party in Ohio chose Theodore Burton and Paul Howland as first and second choices, respectively, for candidates for President. Paul attended the National Convention and was a member of the Committee on Resolutions. He was Chairman of the Committee on Rules at the Republican National Convention in 1920 and 1924.

PAUL, with or without associates, tried successfully at least four leading cases.

His first leading case was the impeachment of Federal Judge Robert W. Archibald. July 11, 1912 a resolution of 13 Articles of Impeachment was introduced to the House. Paul, as a member of the Judiciary Committee, spoke to that resolution. He limited himself to consideration of Article 12 in which he referred to appointment of a General Attorney for the Lehigh Valley Railroad Co., as a jury commissioner in and for the middle district of Pennsylvania by Judge Archibald who was sitting as judge over that district. As that appointment gave that railroad attorney authority as jury commissioner to select the jury to try cases of that railroad company in Judge Archibald's court, Paul stated

that "Justice may be blind but we are not." The House agreed to the Resolution and selected the following as Managers to conduct the impeachment proceedings in the Senate: John C. Floyd; John W. Davis; John A. Sterling; Paul Howland; and George W. Norris, who were to function under State instructions. The House informed the Senate of its act. Paul was selected by the Managers to state the law applicable to the case to the Senate, and other managers were assigned to state the facts after Paul's statement of the law.

In his argument, Paul stated the facts that: contrary to the demurrer of the respondent, the Impeachment Court (the Senate) has no jurisdiction to punish for indictable offenses under the common law, or Federal Statutes; that such indictments are tried by the judiciary courts of law, and that the jurisdiction of the Senate as Impeachment Court is limited to removal of a convicted civilian official from office, with ineligibility to occupy Federal office again, as Federal judges hold office during "good behavior;" that a violation of good behavior is impeachable and the Senate as Court of Impeachment can remove Federal judges for such "misbehavior," and if indictable offenses under the common law or Federal statutes are also charged, courts of law under the Judiciary Department can try such charges after removal from office by the Impeachment Court; and the record of impeachment convictions, Federal and State, supports the above statements.

Jan. 13, 1913 the Senate voted on the Articles of Impeachment, and the President pro tempore (Mr. Bacon) announced to the Senate as follows:

"The Senate therefore do order and decree, and it is hereby adjudged, that the respondent, Robert W. Archibald, Circuit Judge of the United States from the judicial circuit, and designated to serve in the Commerce Court, be, and is hereby, forever disqualified to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit under the United States."

The second leading case was the impeachment trial of HARRY M. DAUGHERTY, Attorney General of the United States. Sept. 11, 1922 the Resolution of Impeachment was introduced, less statement of charges.

Attorney General Daugherty requested the legal services of Hon. Paul Howland as his personal attorney. Paul accepted that status and defended him against the impeachment charges before the Judiciary Committee of the House.

Not until Dec. 1, 1922 were the charges filed by Congressman Keller. They consisted of many specifications which included more than 50 allegations. Congressman Keller also demanded that the Judiciary Committee require the Department of Justice to produce all letters, telegrams, briefs, memoranda of conversations and conferences, reports of bureaus, names of investigators and agents, and all other papers or documents in the files of the Department of Justice, or in the files of the Attorney General, in connection with all matters mentioned in the foregoing specifications; and that all documents in any way relating to upwards of 147 separate and distinct claims, suits, actions and indictments be taken from the files of the Department of Justice and "submitted to your Honorable Committee," not for the inspection and use of your committee, but for such uses as the parties and interests responsible for these proceedings may see fit to make of them."

Dec. 4, 1922 printed reply was made by the Attorney General, HARRY M. DAUGHERTY. In that reply he charged that the sole object and purpose of the proceedings was

in the nature of an attempt to use the procedure of impeachment, "in the nature of a bill of discovery," to compel the disclosure and publication in advance of the evidence upon which the Government relied, and must rely, in the investigation and prosecution of cases of the greatest importance to the Government. The Attorney General stated that he believed that this extraordinary proceeding was inspired more by a desire to protect those charged and those who will be charged with violating the law, than to aid the Department of Justice in the prosecution of "grafters, profiteers, and those who have defrauded their Government during the emergencies of war."

At the opening of the hearing, Paul Howland, representing Attorney General Daugherty, addressed the committee, and said: "I now respectfully ask the committee to ask who these gentlemen are who are associated with Mr. Keller in this impeachment proceeding."

Mr. Keller offered testimony on only two charges. One of those charges was that the Attorney General should be impeached because he appointed William J. Burns head of the Bureau of Investigation. The claim was that Burns had packed a jury 17 years before. The following all denied it: the Judge, the Prosecuting Attorney, the Interior Department investigator of juries, the assistant Clerk of Court—the Clerk was dead—and Mr. Burns. Also Senator Johnson of California, who knew Mr. Burns intimately, indorsed him in the strongest terms as a man of integrity. The other charge was that the Attorney General failed to enforce the railway safety appliance law. Mr. Keller's evidence was so flimsy that his own attorney in effect admitted that it did not sustain the charge, and so did one of his main witnesses, an attorney for the Brotherhood of Firemen and Enginemen.

In compliance with Attorney Howland's request, the committee ascertained that the gentlemen associated with Mr. Keller weie Mr. Samuel Untermeyer, a New York City lawyer, and a Mi. Samuel Gompers, President of the American Federation of Labor.

Mr. Samuel Untermeyer prepared some of the charges but never appeared before the Committee. Being unable to bring him before the committee, the committee thoroughly and fairly investigated the specifications which he prepared.

July 1, 1922, 260,000 members of the railway shop crafts struck. The law imposed severe penalties upon railroads using defective locomotives. The railroads tried to employ blacksmiths and mechanics who were out of employment. The strikers by intimidation, force, and violence, tried to prevent those so-called strike breakers from making the necessary inspection and repairs to the locomotives and rolling stock of the great transportation lines. They and sympathizers almost stopped the great railroads of the country from transportation of mails, coal and food. They and sympathizers endeavored completely to paralyze rail traffic until wages demanded by them should be granted.

Attorney General Harry M. Daugherty had the strike investigated, and Sept. 1, 1922, with evidence of 17,000 unlawful acts committed by those strikers, requested an injunction against those striking shopmen and their sympathizers, to stop them from further interference with the railroads. A preliminary restraining order was granted by the Court. Efficient men, under the protection of that injunction, took the places of the strikers and the roads resumed their customary traffic.

Leaders in the great railroad strike were desperate. The Executive Council, American Federation of Labor, at its meeting Sept. 9, 1922 determined to use all its influence and to attempt to mobilize the strength of the organized-labor movement in an effort to bring

about the impeachment of the Attorney General "who has so ruthlessly over-ridden the law and the Constitution of our Republic." As a result of that decision the headquarters of the American Federation of Labor issued an official communication Sept. 18, 1922 as follows:

"To all organized labor, greetings.

"The injunction issued against shopmen by Judge Wilkerson on application of Attorney General Daugherty is a most flagrant violation of the Constitution of the United States and of the laws enacted by our Congress. No one apparently is free from its sweeping provisions. It prohibits the freedom of speech, the freedom of press, and the right of the people peacably to assemble to discuss their grievances. It is urged that you make immediate preparation for the holding of a mass meeting on Sunday, Oct. 1, 1922; that you solicit and obtain the cooperation of the farmers, both as organizations and as individuals, and sympathetic freedom-loving citizens of your community; also that resolutions be prepared and adopted by the mass meeting, copy of which, duly signed, should be transmitted to the Member of the House of Representatives representing your district at Washington, D. C. and forward a copy of the same to this office.

Fraternally yours SAMUEL GOMPERS, President."

It was also signed by the Secretary, the Treasurer, and by eight Vice Presidents.

SAMUEL GOMPERS, with his private secretary and attorney, was a witness and in reply to questions said:

"I did not know that impeachment proceedings were to be brought against Mr. Daugherty until I read it in the newspapers."

When asked when the action was taken at headquarters in Washington, by the Executive Committee of the American Federation of Labor, to go ahead or take part in the charges against the Attorney General, he replied:

"The date, as near as I can recollect, I think it was on the 14th or 16th of November, when the Executive Council met in its regular session."

Mr. Thomas O. Stevenson, attorney for the Brotherhood of Locomotive Firemen and Enginemen, in reply to questions testified as follows:

"Mr. Foster. In your judgment, knowing the attitude of the Attorney General, do you think his conduct in this matter has been such that the Attorney General should be impeached? Give the Committee the benefit of your judgment, as you have been in touch with the situation.

"Mr. Stevenson. That is a difficult question to answer.

"Mr. Foster. Yes: but the Committee want your judgment.

"Mr. Stevenson. No. I do not think so."

Jan. 25, 1923, Mr. Keller with his attorney Mr. Ralston, who was also attorney for the American Federation of Labor, entered the committee room. Mr. Keller insisted on reading a statement which he had prepared, The Committee did not see fit to hear his statement at that time unless Mr. Keller desired to be sworn as a witness. He insisted on reading his statement, refused to be sworn, condemned the committee, threw

his statement on the desk in front of the chairman, stalked from the room and from that time refused to have anything further to do with the proceedings.

The committee were determined that Mr. Keller should not escape his responsibility; and obtained from the Speaker of the House a subpoena which was served upon Mr. Keller to appear the next morning as a witness. That was duly served: but Mr. Keller appeared only by his attorney, who stated that he had advised Mr. Keller not to appear, and took the ground that the Committee itself could not arrest Mr. Keller and force him to testify, as he, Mr. Keller, was a Member of Congress and was protected under the Constitution. The Committee were satisfied that they had no power to arrest Mr. Keller and force him to testify, but their duty was to report the fact to the House under the resolution and the House could proceed to deal with Mr. Keller as the rule provided.

The Committee also voted unanimously to proceed to hear anyone in support of the charges, but no one appeared. The Committee then gave an opportunity to the Attorney General to explain by witnesses, if he so desired, the several charges and specifications by Mr. Keller. The Attorney General, by his assistants and witnesses, went minutely into the charges, covering them all with such convincing testimony as to leave no doubt in the minds of the Committee that the charges were without any foundation whatever.

Jan. 25, 1923 the House accepted the report of the Committee and fully exonerated the Attorney General of any and all the charges made by Mr. Keller, and discharged the Judiciary Committee from further consideration of the charges proposing impeachment of Harry M. Daugherty, Attorney General, and ruled that the impeachment resolution be laid upon the table.

The third leading case was the Senate investigation of the Attorney General of the United States. March 1, 1924 the United States Senate adopted a resolution (briefly stated): "That a committee of five Senators, consisting of three of the majority and two of the minority, investigate and report to the Senate the activities of Harry M. Daugherty, Attorney General, and any of his assistants which would in any manner tend to impair their efficiency or influence as representatives of the Government of the United States." That committee was elected.

Attorney General Daugherty requested former Senator George E. Chamberlain and former Congressman Paul Howland to defend the case. They accepted the Attorney General as a client and defended his case.

March 27, 1924 President Coolings, in reply to a request by the Attorney General, stated, "You will see at once that the committee is investigating your personal conduct, and hence you have become an interested party, and I can see no way but for you to retire as Attorney General." Mr. Daugherty resigned as requested and thus gained greater freedom of action for his defense against the continuing investigation.

Paul was not a criminal court practitioner. Later Mr. Harry M. Daugherty asked Paul to defend him against a criminal charge in the State of New York. Paul declined, as he did not practice law in the criminal courts.

Although not a practitioner in criminal cases, in 1926, while President of the local Bar Association, he was appointed by the presiding judge of criminal cases to defend an indigent sailor, Andrew Adams, who was in jail under the charge of second degree murder.

Paul's first move in defense was to request the judge to allow the jury to "view the place" where the charged crime was committed. In his argument Paul told the jury

that the actions of Adams following the quarrel were not those of a guilty man, as he went to a fire station and told what had happened. Paul established the fact that just before he died, Bandy admitted that he was "licked" and had no hard feelings toward Adams.

In his argument Paul quoted the Bible and Victor Hugo and declared to the jury that "Adams has nothing to answer for in this world or the next." One hour after he finished and fifteen minutes after the jury took the case they had acquitted Adams, who again became a free man.

From and including 1896-1909, with some changes in schedules, Paul taught: Law of Pleading and Practice; Law of Evidence; Law of Partnership. The records show that many of his students were later able lawyers, judges, and men prominent in other activities.

He was a member of Cleveland, State, and American Bar Associations. He was liberal of his time in this activity. He urged the advantage of recommendation by the Bar of candidates favored for positions as prosecuting attorney and judge, with the view of keeping such elections out of the realm of politics.

In 1924 he was on the special London Committee of the American Bar Association and was one of the delegates who accepted the invitation of the English Bar to meet with them in England. Paul and wife Jessie enjoyed that visit very much. They visited many historical places in England, including the dock at Plymouth from which the Pilgrims sailed in 1620 to America.

He was very active in efforts to protect the ethical standards of the legal profession. May 1, 1929, he addressed the Supreme Court of Ohio on the dangers of "Unethical Practices" and submitted recommendations intended to meet that need.

In the American Bar Association he was a member of the Executive Committee from and including 1913-1924, and from and including 1922-1932 he was Chairman of the standing Committee on Jurisprudence and Law Reform, which position had previously been held by Elihu Root and Charles Evans Hughes, and was active in that position.

As President of the Cleveland Bar Association he inspired a large group of new lawyers Aug. 8, 1926 when he told them of the dignity, the duty and the public responsibility that would come to them after the Chief Justice should give them the oath.

Paul was unusually liberal in contribution of his time for the benefit of his local community. Whenever the community had need of legal ability, careful study and clear presentation of the facts, it has turned to Paul Howland. So whether it was a committee or a group: to prepare plans for a City Manager plan of government; to hear the City, the County, and the School Board claims for bond issues; to study Metropolitan government with a view of submitting a proposed constitutional amendment to the Legislature; to select a bridge site, a type of high-level bridge for crossing the river, with computation of cost and method of financing; or any other community activity; Paul Howland was usually asked to be general chairman of such activity, and he usually accepted that responsibility and executed it to the satisfaction of all.

Paul was a member of the Union Club and the Nisi Prius Club. He was a 32nd Degree Mason, a Noble and Past Potentate of the Mystic Shrine, a member of the I. O. O. F., a member of the al Koran Club, and of the Shrine Luncheon Club. He was a member of Burdick Camp, a veteran's organization of the Spanish-American War of 1898. He was for many years the President of The Tippecanoe (Republican) Club. He

was a Congregationalist, a trustee of Oberlin College, President of the Board of Trustees of the First Congregational Church of Cleveland, and the Sunday school leader of the men's class in that church for many years.

II. WILLIAM SETH HOWLAND, Esquire: b. May 21, 1867; was named WILLIAM after our father, and SETH after our grand-uncle SETH HOWLAND; d. April 5, 1919 at Jefferson, O. of influenza (which was epidemic that year) followed by a severe attack of pneumonia; buried in our family lot in Oakdale Cemetery, Jefferson, O.; m. June 1, 1905 at Jefferson, Mabelle Estelle, daughter of Dallas Adelbert and wife Susanna Ward of Jefferson, who survived him and was living in Washington, D. C. in 1945.

William from earliest childhood was a silent listener. He avoided arguments and disputes among the boys. He listened eagerly to what men said, and would later tell our father what they said, and ask him "what was the right or wrong" in what they said. He did not care for entertainment or athletics, but continually sought the answer to each problem with which he came in contact.

He chose not to study the ancient languages, Latin and Greek, or any foreign language. He always said that we should first solve our own problems in America, and conditions existing here rather than under conditions existing abroad, and that the solution of our problems here should begin at the bottom, so that attempted solutions at the top would not be based on false presumptions.

So he chose, as he said, not to waste his energy on solving ancient or foreign problems, but to do what he could, from the bottom up, to solve such problems here at home, in the American way, as might come to him for solution.

He did well in his studies from the primary school to graduation from Jefferson's Educational Institute in 1885. He then chose to test the policies, methods and facts learned as a student, by the practical test of teaching others. By that test he eliminated from his beliefs some of the policies and methods learned as a student, and decided that he was ready to proceed onto new ground as a student, but as a student of how to do real, practical things in a scientific way. He chose the scientific course at the Michigan Agricultural School, where he was graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Science.

He chose to settle in Jefferson, O. where he assisted our brother Paul in administration of our father's estate, and where he studied practical problems in that community and county. In due time he learned what some of those problems were and had views as to their better solution. He believed that the tax law application bore more heavily on the agricultural and small business activities, relatively, than on the large corporations.

Considering that problem important and ripe for solution, he accepted a position as Deputy Auditor of Ashtabula County, and held that position from 1909 to 1914. The Auditor was not a candidate for re-nomination in 1914. The experience gained as Deputy Auditor caused William to believe that he could—as Auditor—improve the tax situation. He decided to be a candidate for County Auditor in 1914. His conscience did not permit him to draw pay for public work while engaged in his campaign, so he resigned as Deputy Auditor. He was elected by a considerable plurality over his three opponents, and was re-elected in 1916 and 1918 without opposition.

His modesty, courteous attitude toward all, and efficiency as Auditor won the friend-ship and support of the people.

The tax laws were not well understood by the taxpayers. At a meeting of the Grange at Ashtabula, Feb. 22, 1916 he explained the tax laws and methods of collecting the taxes to the satisfaction of all present. His address was published in the papers of the County and copied in many papers in the State outside of Ashtabula County.

He was active in causing a change in the law controlling taxes on real estate, and gave notice that if 25 real estate taxpayers of any district in the County should petition his office for a reappraisal of tax he would direct a local assessor to make such a reappraisal, if satisfied that the evidence stated in the petition substantiated the claim. His action placed the initiative on the taxpayer, where it belongs.

His correctly thought-out plan regarding real estate taxes attracted much attention. As a result, the State Auditor's Association, toward the end of his first term, elected him Treasurer of the Association and made him Chairman of the Committee on Commissioners' Proceedings.

Having solved the problem on reappraisal of individual real estate, he attacked the errors of collection of taxes on corporation-held real estate. He prepared his data. Then, accompanied by his assistants and others, he charged before the State Tax Commission in Columbus, O. that the railroad system of including real estate with rolling stock and other personal property assets of the railroad was improper, as it tended toward an even distribution of taxes to the counties through which the railroad ran without regard to the location of the railroad real estate. He stated that under Ohio's system the correct method was to assess the land value in and for the district where located.

He had no desire to impose a hardship on railroad companies. His plans did not increase the amount of taxes which the companies were paying, but it did propose to bring collection of taxes in Ashtabula County as taxable property in the County, and not on a prorata basis for the State as a whole. In that first effort the State Tax Commission raised the valuation of railroad property at Ashtabula Harbor about \$2,250,000.

William valued such property at more than \$7,000,000 above the appraisal by the State Tax Commission. His procedure to fix for taxes the true value of such property was to go to court, in which case the County Commissioners as plaintiff were to begin suit against the State Tax Commission and William (the initiator of the case) as County Auditor, and the railroads named, to determine legally the proper taxable values.

To prepare for the case, William, as Auditor, supported by the County Commissioners, engaged the services of the Cleveland Real Appraisers. Those appraisers Sept. 24, 1917 viewed the property, examined the records, and witnesses pro and con, with the view of arriving at the true value of such property.

The Auditor's office handled a duplicate in excess of \$100,000,000. The taxes collected in the year ended in September, 1917 was \$1,507,524. The settlement between the County Auditor and the County Treasurer for that year showed a surplus collection of only \$1.64.

The State Examiner, after completing a special examination of the County offices for the two-year period ending April 1, 1917 stated that "the county is fortunate in having a man like William Howland in the Auditor's office. He is the kind of man who doesn't let things get by him."

It was understood that William was favored by the State Auditor and by many of the County Auditors, and by the people generally, for nomination for State Auditor at the next vacancy. WILLIAM and wife were members of the Congregational Church at Jefferson. He was a Mason.

He was exceedingly popular with all groups who knew him, probably because his only mission seemed to be to do something for others that would add to their happiness.

Child of WILLIAM and MABELLE:

- i. ESTHER, b. at Jefferson, Sept. 8, 1912; was named after our Mother ESTHER; d. Aug. 9, 1921 at Jefferson, O. and is buried in the family lot in Oakdale Cemetery, Jefferson, O. She was a beautiful, sweet child who was loved by all.
- III. Dr. Anson Perry Howland, M. D.: b. Feb. 3, 1869; d. Aug. 28, 1942 at his residence in Cleveland, O. and is buried in the family lot in Lake View Cemetery, Cleveland; m. Oct. 28, 1896 Miss Flora Firestone whom Anson had known when they were fellow students at college.

From childhood he had the unusual power of relieving others of certain aches and pains, by "laying on his hands." Especially was that true of headaches, and he was much interested in curative measures used by the neighbors.

He was graduated from: the Jefferson Educational Institute in 1887; Oberlin College in 1891 with the degree of A. B.; Western Reserve University Medical School in 1895 with the degree of M. D.

Following the example of Paul, he was interested in athletics and specialized in baseball. At Oberlin he was a catcher, and captain of the varsity team. He was a superior baseball player from every point of view except pitching, but by signal he notified the pitcher what the next throw to the batter should be. He was much "looked up to" by younger students and civilians who would go to the game to see him play.

He entered the practice of medicine in the eastern part of Cleveland and was greatly successful as a family physician. He would not leave a patient whose life was in the balance, and while concentrating on such cases, if other calls came for him, he referred them to other qualified doctors. He saved many lives and was highly regarded and loved by his patients. But his devotion to his patients burned up much of his energy. Also, he was not able after visiting a patient to treat it as a routine matter and cease to think of the patient after he left the house. After a long practice, his concentration in aid of his patients brought heart disease to him.

He saw that continuation of his life for any considerable time meant that he must discontinue his practice of medicine, and engage himself in some other activity that would not draw away his energy and health so rapidly. He selected a business activity. He purchased the Geauga Silica Sand Company, south of Cleveland, and maintained his office in Cleveland. That greatly increased the time he spent out-of-doors, and decreased the drain on his nervous system and health. He was happy in that activity and it was profitable. But in the uniting of the local area sand and gravel business he became an associate in a merger and received stock and bonds of the new merged company for his property. After that, with very little to do, he began to fail, which continued to his death.

He was a public-spirited man and was highly regarded by all who knew him. He had no desire whatever to occupy public office, but had many friends among such officials.

He was terribly shocked by World War II, and its gruesome news undoubtedly tended to shorten his life.

Children of Anson and FLORA:

- i. Gerald Firestone, b. Aug. 7, 1897; was entering adult life with every promise of success when he d. Oct. 24, 1918 of pneumonia following influenza which was incident to the war epidemic raging then.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. June 20, 1904; graduated in Cleveland from Hathaway Brown School in 1922, and from Smith College in 1926 with the degree of A. B.; m. June 23, 1927 STOWE WILDER, whom she divorced May 17, 1934; m. 2nd at Cleveland, Oct. 6, 1934 EDWARD L. CARPENTER of Cleveland, with residence in Cleveland.

Child by 1st marriage:

STOWE WILDER, Jr., b. Sept. 29, 1929, who was adopted by her 2nd husband as William Howland Carpenter.

Children by 2nd marriage:

- i. Frank, b. May 15, 1936.
- ii. ELIZABETH WOODS, b. Oct. 13, 1939.
- iii. John Leonard Howland, b. Feb. 1, 1912; m. Sept. 4, 1943 at Cleveland, Juliette Gaudin of France. They had a son, Paul Howland, b. July 6, 1947 at Cleveland.

His school education included: student of Cleveland public schools to include eighth grade; graduation in 1929 from University School, Cleveland; graduation in 1933 from Amherst College with degree of A. B.; graduation in 1936 from Law School, Western Reserve University, with degree of LL.B.

Desiring to carry the same name as Pilgrim John Howland, he dropped the use of his middle name "Leonard".

Aug. 3, 1936 he was admitted to the practice of law in Ohio. His uncle Paul Howland, lawyer, assisted John at the beginning of his practice by employing him as an assistant.

June 7, 1939 he was admitted to practice in the District Court of the United States for the Northern District in Ohio. In 1942 he was admitted to practice in the Federal Circuit Court of Appeals at Cincinnati, O. That year he was admitted to practice before the Federal Supreme Court in Washington, D. C.

He was inducted into the Army May 15, 1942. After completion of basic training, he competed at "Candidates' Judge Advocate General's School" at Ann Arbor, Mich. in 1943 and won a Second Lieutenancy in the Judge Advocate General's Department, Army of the United States. After service in the office of the Judge Advocate General in Washington, D. C. he was promoted to First Lieutenant, J. A. G. D., A. U. S. and was sent to the European theatre for service, where he served in England, and later in France with the rank of Captain, throughout the war. In 1946 he returned to the United States, where he was honorably discharged. He has resumed the practice of law.

IV. Charles Roscoe Howland, Brigadier General, U. S. Army: b. a few minutes before midnight, Feb. 16-17, 1871. His mother wished to name him Charles Augustus, but his father insisted on naming him Roscoe Conkling, after his good and highly respected friend. They finally compromised on the name of Charles Roscoe. He is the compiler of this book.

As a child he was taught at home to read by the pictureword system. At 5 he was a student at primary school. He was graduated from the Jefferson Educational Institute in 1889. During that period he was taught piano playing, drawing and oil painting by private tutors. He taught District summer school in 1887. In 1887-1889 he was a volunteer weather observer and reporter on weather conditions as shown by instruments. During vacation in 1890 he was graduated from the Interstate Summer School of Methods at Jefferson. He learned, Oct. 29, 1890 that Congressman C. P. Wickman would hold a competitive examination the next day at Norwalk, O. for selection of candidate for the United States Military Academy at West Point. He won the appointment, passed the entrance examinations in 1891 and was graduated in 1895 from West Point as a Second Lieutenant with the degree of Bachelor of Science.

He was assigned to duty with Company H, Captain F. D. Sharp, 20th Infantry, Colonel Hamilton S. Hawkins, who by seniority was also Post Commander. Briefly, his other duties were: built outdoors gymnastic equipment for physical training of men in company; read Jominy, Compte de Paris, Derrecagaix and others on the art of war; described the first part of Napoleon's Campaign in 1796, March 17, 1897; read a factual study of letters, orders and reports on the Fredericksburg campaign in 1862, which manuscript was called to Department Headquarters; described use of machine guns in offense, which manuscript was called to Post Headquarters and received attention in the military papers—all three before the Post Lyceum; delivered the memorial address at Soldiers Home near the Post and was unanimously thanked by the local G. A. R. Post, March 23, 1897; prepared the Reservation for war maneuvers; appointed instructor in use of Gatling, Gardner, Hotchkiss revolving cannon, and Hotchkiss mountain guns; frequently detailed as Recorder of Boards of Survey and as Judge Advocate of Courts-Martial; and in further preparation for war was directed by the Post Commander, Feb. 21, 1898 to organize and train a detachment of field artillery and another detachment in the use of Gatling guns in war.

The acute cause of the Spanish-American War was the destruction in Havana Harbor of the U. S. battleship "Maine" with the loss of 266 lives, Feb. 15, 1898. The Congress declared, April 25, 1898 that war had existed since April 15, 1898 when the Spanish government gave passports to the American minister at Madrid.

The American plan was to capture Havana, and to occupy it and the Island of Cuba by regular land and sea forces, and volunteer forces to be called to the colors. The American fleet had control of the sea. Our regular and volunteer forces were organized into army corps.

The 20th Infantry, with regular regimental and improvised Gatling-gun equipment, moved to the mobilization camp of the Fourth Army Corps, Major General COPPINGER commanding.

Lieutenant-Colonel Loyd Wheaton, with a superior Civil war record, was appointed Brigadier General, U. S. V., assigned to command a Brigade. He called Lieutenant How-

LAND to his personal staff as Aide-de-Camp, June 2, 1898 and used his services also as acting Adjutant General there at Mobile, and after June 20, 1898 at Miami, where the General commanded the First Brigade and the First Division, Seventh Army Corps, Major-General Fitzhugh Lee.

July 7, 1898 Major-General J. Warren Keifer assumed command of the First Division and asked General Wheaton to leave Lieutenant Howland temporarily on duty in the Division Adjutant General's office to instruct the Adjutant General, who had just arrived. That Division moved Aug. 13, 1898 to Jacksonville, Fla. Later it moved to Savannah, Ga., where, before leaving for occupation duty in Havana, it passed in review before General Lee.

The chance effort that Spain took to seize the initiative by sending a fleet to Cuban waters, which sought safety in Santiago harbor, was destroyed July 3, 1898 when that Spanish fleet was forced out of the harbor by American troops under General Shafter, and was sunk by the American blockading fleet. By the treaty of Paris, Dec. 10, 1898 Spain relinquished Cuba to the United States, in trust for its inhabitants. American authority over Cuba began Jan. 1, 1899.

Nov. 22, 1898 Lieutenant Howland requested authority of the War Department to organize a machine gun detachment for duty with the Seventh Army Corps. General Wheaton approved.

Seven days after the signing of the peace treaty in Paris the War Department relieved Lieutenant Howland from duty as A. D. C. to General Wheaton and directed him to join his regiment, which was designated for duty in the Philippine Islands.

Dec. 20, 1898 Lieutenant Howland was relieved as Acting Adjutant General on the First Division, Seventh Army Corps, at Savannah, Ga., Dec. 21, 1898 General Wheaton handed him the following letter.

HEADQUARTERS FIRST DIVISION

Seventh Army Corps, Savannah, Georgia, December 21, 1898.

Lieut. Charles R. Howland, Twentieth Infantry. My dear Sir:

The exigencies of the service having constrained the War Department to relieve you from duty as aide-de-camp on my staff in order that you may join your regiment for service in the Philippine Islands, I desire to express my regret that I am deprived of your services, which have been continuous with this Division since its organizaton.

You have discharged the duties of Aide-de-camp on my staff and the duty of Acting Adjutant General, either of this Division or of the First Brigade of that Division, nearly the whole time since June 4, 1898, and always with entire satisfaction to me and for the best interests of the service.

Should it ever be in my power to aid in advancing you to the higher grades you are competent to fill, it will give me pleasure to do so.

Very sincerely yours,

LOYD WHEATON, Brig. General of U. S. Vols.

Lieutenant Howland organized Company L, a new company in 20th Infantry, Fort Leavenworth, trained it, and commanded it until the permanent commander arrived at San Francisco. The regiment sailed Jan. 26, 1899 for Manila. As fires lighted the sky as the transport Scandia approached Manila Bay, Feb. 22, 1899 it was believed that Manila was burning.

Immediately after the Scandia anchored in Manila Bay General Otis, American commander of Army troops and Governor General, and Admiral Dewey, Commander of the American fleet, with staff officers boarded and conferred with General Wheaton, Commander of the arriving expedition. They informed him: that Aguinaldo's troops had attacked American forces; that American forces occupied Manila, and the naval station at Cavite. General Otis directed General Wheaton to debark his troops at once and to take a "position in readiness" as soon as possible on the public park "Luneta" drive along the harbor beach; prepared to prevent enemy flank attack along the beach or to reinforce troops in Manila against enemy attack from the north in process.

He was detailed as Quartermaster and Commissary of his battalion, which was on line of defense at La Loma Church, Feb. 23, 1899.

General Otis decided: that the main theater of action was the island of Luzon; that he would divide that theater into two theaters, viz., Northern Theater and Southern Theater, by driving aline across the island from Manila on the west, along the Pasig river and Laguna de Bay to the mountains on the east, and operate offensively in those theaters alternately. He conferred almost continuously with General Wheaton.

Lieutenant Howland was appointed Aide-de-Camp to General Wheaton, Feb. 27, 1899.

General Wheaton was initially placed in command of the First Brigade, First Division, 8th Army Corps with headquarters at San Pedro Macati on the south bank of the Pasig river. General Otis selected him to operate the First Phase Campaign from his headquarters at San Pedro Macati as a base, and for that purpose created the First Provisional Brigade for him.

The advance early March 13 from San Pedro Macati was a surprise. It pushed the enemy back from all its positions at Guadalupe Church and Pateros. But March 15 the enemy held across the river at Pasig. The current was too strong for free ferry across. Defeat of the enemy required a crossing. There were no bridges.

In that situation Lieutenant Howland under protective fire fastened a rope from the bow of the steam launch Maritime to a tree at a bend in the bank upstream. Then the launch was used as a swing ferry and the troops crossed, under protective fire, defeated the enemy, and captured Pasig and Cainta. March 18 the enemy appeared at Taguig in strength, but with some loss in the attack the enemy was defeated and dispersed. The next day the General advanced down the west side of Laguna de Bay as far as San Pedro Tamisan. To establish the dividing line the General established forts at Pasig, Pateros and Taguig and assigned river gunboats and launches to patrol duty on the Pasig River and Laguna de Bay.

General Otis reported that "The line of the Pasig was thus established and insurgent communication between their forces to the north and on the south was permanently interrupted."

In addition to the duties mentioned above, and delivery of the General's orders, and reporting to him on the situation, Lieutenant Howland participated in the following

battles and engagements:

March 13, Guadalupe Church.

March 14, Pateros.

March 15, Capture of Pasig.

March 18, Taguig.

March 19, Guadalupe Ridge.

March 19, Laguna de Bay.

The service of Lieutenant Howland in that campaign was so continuous that his lowered resistance did not protect him against a serious attack of Dengue fever. The brigade-surgeon ordered him to the States. The Lieutenant appealed to the General, who decided that the Lieutenant could remain at Headquarters in Manila, as an outpatient of the surgeon of the 20th Infantry, until ready for duty. He regained strength and health rapidly.

As a surprise maneuver General Otis sent his Second Division, General MacArthur, against Aguinaldo's strong positions on the railroad north of Manila. General Wheaton, as Brigade Commander, joined that Division March 22, 1899. The capture of San Fernando de Pamganga May 5, 1899 ended that successful campaign.

During the campaign in the Northern Theater the Insurgent forces in the Southern Theater assembled on the east shore of Manila Bay between Manila and Cavite with the evident intention of attacking Manila. They built strong positions near Manila from which the attack would be made and behind which their munitions and stores were protected from American forces in Manila. General Otis decided on a defensive attitude in the Northern Theater, and offensive in the Southern Theater.

General Wheaton returned to the First Division and during a dinner at his Quarters, asked each staff officer to state his view as to the kind of operation that should be used against the threatening enemy. All favored a frontal attack except Lieut. Howland, who objected because it would not be a surprise, and as the area of maneuver along the road was narrow and practically a corridor, it would consist of direct frontal attacks against the successive strongholds already prepared for use by the enemy, if he retreated; which operation would narrow maneuver and present to the enemy the chance to inflict heavy losses on the American attacking forces. He favored an advance south from San Pedro Macati, with left flank protection to Laguna de Bay, and an envelopment west to Las Pinas on Manila Bay, which would force the enemy to abandon his line to Manila and to assemble his dispersed forces south of Las Pinas.

Major General Lawton, commanding the First Division and Southern Theater in Luzon, was the Commanding General in this campaign. General Wheaton had a Provisional Brigade, well balanced with infantry and artillery which he assembled at San Pedro Macati, June 9, 1899. His brigade led the advance to the battle at dawn the next morning, June 10, proceded by an advance screen of sharp shooters—14th Infantry—from General Ovenshine's Brigade, to locate enemy groups between Manila Bay and Laguna de Bay. General Ovenshine's Birgade, advanced in rear echelon to right, prepared to defend the right flank against attack by the enemy from the shore road along Manila Bay.

The enemy was surprised, and without any co-ordinated plan came from the Manila Bay shore road line in successive extemporized groups, and defended from natural folds of the terrain. Those groups were defeated and dispersed by General Ovenshine's brigade. But later a large enemy group, well placed, stubbornly opposed General Ovenshine's

SHINE'S attack until General Wheaton moved artillery from the center of his line to his right, and delivered a terrifically accurate enfilade fire that dispersed the hostile group, which fled-each man for himself—southwest to the shore line of Manila Bay.

It was a very hot day, with temperature above 100°. About noon General Lawton directed General Wheaton to halt, assemble his brigade in the shade of a wood where there was water, and to re-form for the enveloping movement on Las Pinas.

General Wheaton directed Lieutenant Howland to inform Colonel McCov, First Colorado Infantry, who was protecting the left flank, of the turning movement west to Las Pinas, and to guide that regiment to the place of assembly.

At 2:30 P. M. the turning movement began with Colorado infantry on the left flank leading. About 4:00 P. M. the enemy on the west side of an estero between Paranague and Las Pinas opened fire. General Wheaton ordering covering fire for Lieutenant Howland, whom he directed to observe the enemy and report. The Lieutenant took charge of front-line troops nearby and with cascoes and bancas extemporized a bridge across which, under protecting fire, the troops crossed, located, and with heavy fire dispersed that enemy group, which fled toward Las Pinas.

The report pleased General Wheaton. Several esteros delayed the advance. General Wheaton shelled the probable position of enemy groups, just as darkness began, and under a strong outpost, bivouacked for the night. A heavy warm rain furnished the much-desired water, without discomfort. At daylight the advance was resumed, June 11, and Las Pinas was occupied without further resistance.

That flank maneuver turned the enemy out of all his positions on the road from Las Pinas to Manila with almost no casualties, and opened that shore road as a line of communication, with Manila as base.

The enemy took up a position on the south bank of the Zapote River, which position the Spaniards could not capture in the previous insurrection. The enemy required each officer and man to swear that he would fight to the death and not retreat when the Americans should attack. At the only bridge the enemy had a heavy smooth-bore cannon.

In a stubborn battle General Wheaton, with ferocious infantry and artillery fire, gained fire supremacy and forced the enemy out of his works. The enemy attempted the unlawful strategem of retiring under cover of the white flag. Some of the American troops who had crossed the bridge did not fire on the retreating enemy, and the General at the top of his voice ordered "FIRE" and directed Lieutenant Howland to go as fast as he could to the leading element of the Brigade and transmit the order to fire on the enemy. There followed a terrific fire.

The Lieutenant then, with a detachment of the 21st Infantry, reconnoitered beyond brigade lines, attacked the enemy and discovered that he was laying an ambuscade in the wood along the road ahead of the American line. When he reported that situation the General ordered a rapid pursuit on wide lines. It was offensive and the enemy fled toward Imus. The brigade bivouacked that night well south of the Zapote.

June 14 the General sent out reconnaissances in force, and the next day was able to report that the enemy had abandoned all points on Manila Bay and had evacuated Imus. The General returned to Manila.

As the enemy at Perez Dasmarinas was preparing to attack Imus, General Wheaton returned to that town June 18. He sent out reconnaissance groups the next day, June 19. The reconnaissance toward Perez Dasmarinas was by Major John W. Bubb, with a

battalion of the Fourth U.S. Infantry and one 3.2-inch gun. The General placed the command remaining at Imus in a position in readiness to move at once.

Lieutenant Howland climbed the highest tree to observe the Dasmarinas road reconnaissance. He could hear the firing and with glasses could see the road at intervals. He called down to the Chief-of-Staff, to inform the General that Major Bubb had been attacked by the enemy. Later he requested him to inform the General that Major Bubb was retreating under superior enemy fire. But when a rifled-cannon projectile came over Headquarters, he climbed down and reported to the General that Major Bubb was in a desperate retreating battle with about 2500 insurgents, and that if aid was not given him at once, he and command would be stopped and captured at the bridge, at a turn of the road.

The General mounted at once. He directed Lieutenant Kenly to follow him closely with three 3.2-inch guns, and the two battalions of the Fourth U. S. Infantry to follow close behind the artillery. He started at a gallup, accompanied by Aids Howland and Webster and other staff officers. When he arrived at the edge of the woods all came under a heavy but high enemy fire. The General in his saddle, cool as ice, directed Lieutenant Kenly to begin fire as soon as possible. Kenly almost immediately enfiladed the hostile long line with shrapnel which killed and wounded many insurgents. The enemy broke at once, and fled to the woods. The soul-inspiring shout from Major Bubb's battalion can never be forgotten by anyone who heard it. The General waited for Bubb's battalion to pass through his protecting force. When Major Bubb thanked the General for saving his battalion, tears streamed down the face of General Wheaton.

The General immediately gave orders for an advance over that road toward Perez Dasmarinas, 4 miles from which the command, under strong outpost, bivouacked that night, one battalion, Ninth Infantry joining them. At early dawn the next morning the General gave the command to attack the enemy wherever found. Hostile fire was light and Perez Desmarinas was occupied about noon, June 20.

Buenavista, an enemy arsenal about 3 miles west of Dasmarinas, could not be reached because of swollen streams, and could not be seen from the ground at Dasmarinas. Lieutenant Howland saw it from the belfry of the church, and recommended to the General that Lieutenant Kenly destroy that arsenal by indirect artillery fire. The General approved. Lieutenant Kenly, in the belfry, had poles placed on the line from him to the arsenal. On that line of fire he made his bracket from the gun on the ground, and destroyed the arsenal with six hits out of fifteen shots, and fired shrapnel on the terrified insurgents who were running away.

That campaign, without any casualties, decisively defeated all organized military hostility in the Southern Theater in Luzon.

Lieutenant Howland, in addition to his other duties, participated in the following battles:

June 10, 1899, Guadalupe Ridge.

June 13, 1899, Zapote Bridge.

June 10, 1899, Paranaque.

June 19, 1899, Imus.

June 10, 1899, Las Pinas.

In his report June 30, 1899 General Wheaton stated: "I desire to specially mention the conduct and services of First Lieutenant Charles R. Howland, Twentieth Infantry,

Aid-de-Camp, who rendered me valuable assistance, carrying my orders under fire to all parts of the field."

First Lieutenant Howland, Twentieth U. S. Infantry, was appointed Captain, 28th Infantry, U. S. V. July 5, 1899.

Dec. 3, 1900 Major General Loyd Wheaton, U. S. Vols., commanding Department of Northern Luzon, in a 1st Indorsement to the Adjutant-General, Division of the Phillippines, recommended "that Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. V. (1st Lieut. 20th U. S. Infantry) be brevetted Captain, U. S. A., for conspicuous gallantry in action at Zapote Bridge. After the bridge had been carried he rendered conspicuous service in assisting me in the disposition (under fire) of the troops for attack on the enemy who had taken up a new position beyond the bridge. Captain Howland, also under my instructions, had charge of a detachment of the 21st Infantry which attacked the enemy on the left, which attack materially assisted in the rout of the enemy's force. Captain Howland's gallantry was conspicuous on this occasion, as it has been in many combats when he has acted under my immediate orders and supervision."

The President nominated Captain Charles R. Howland for promotion to Brevet Major, U. S. V., which was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs in executive session of the Senate of the United States, March 20, 1902, as follows:

"Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. Volunteers, for distinguished gallantry in action at Zapote River, Luzon, P. I. June 13, 1899** to rank from Aug. 16, 1899."

The War Department General Orders No. 10, March 25, 1924 in Section VI "Citations for gallantry in action," stated that "the following-named officers are cited for gallantry in action and three silver stars are awarded to such officers." One of those citations was as follows:

"Charles R. Howland, Colonel, Infantry, United States Army, then First Lieutenant, 20th Infantry, United States Army, For gallantry in action against insurgent forces at Zapote River, Luzon, P. I., June 13, 1899."

Brigadier-General John W. Bubb, U. S. A. sent a picture of himself to Captain Howland, on which he inscribed:

"To Captain Charles R. Howland, U. S. Army, Aide-de-Camp, to whom I owe much for his soldierly instincts and perseverence in watching so closely what was taking place near Imus, Cavite Province, P. I. on the 19th of June, 1899, constituting very materially to the saving of my command on that memorable day.

Very sincerely yours,

JNO. W. BUBB, Brig. Gen'l of the Army."

As General Otis had the advantage of interior lines, he prevented co-operation between Insurgents in the Northern and Southern Theaters. Aguinaldo finally became aware of the fact that his only chance was to defeat American forces in the theater in which Americans were defending. During the offensive in the Southern Theater the Americans were on the defensive in the Northern Theater. Aguinaldo grasped at the

chance and June 16, 1899 with a force of about 7,000 troops attacked the American garrison at San Fernando de la Pampanga, and was defeated with heavy loss, but his detachments tore up much railroad track from San Fernando south to Calumpit. Also, that effort to force General Otis to increase his force in the Theater he was defending, at the expense of the offensive force in the other Theater, failed. That defeat showed AGUINALDO that he would be permanently on the defensive.

General Otis estimated: that had defeat of Insurgent attempted offensives in the Northern and Southern Theatres forced the enemy to defend; that victory in the Northern Theater would end the war; that preparations should be made before the rainy season; and that a co-ordinated victoroius offensive should be launched promptly after passing of the rainy season.

General Otis planned to operate decisively in the Northern Theater after the rainy season, with three commands. General Lawton was to operate east of the railroad area, to deny passage into Cagayan Valley to the Insurgent army, and to force Insurgents to the east. General Wheaton, by surprise landing on the east shore of Lingayan Gulf, to deny enemy retreat on the west coast road and to maintain a base of supplies for his own command and for the command of General Lawton. General Mac Arthur to advance slowly until above occupation of enemy retreat lines frustrates them, then to advance rapidly, destroy Aguinaldo's capital at Tarlac, and mop up his dispersed forces. General Otis states: "The plan was ultimately fully executed."

General Macarthur planned a stronger base line through Angeles before the rainy season should begin. He assigned General Wheaton to his Second Brigade, with head-quarters at San Fernando de la Pampanga.

Captain Howland commanded scouting expeditions out of San Fernando for information of hostile positions and strength. He reported to General Wheaton that the Division could capture Angeles if ample provision were made to protect the right flank and rear.

The Second Division, General MacArthur, advanced Aug. 9, 1899 with the railroad as an axis upon which he used an armored short train to gain better artillery action. General Wheaton and staff-as usual—rode on the front line of his Brigade, which was on the right side of the railroad. The enemy defended all favorable terrain features. In each case, after softening him with shrapnel, the command charged. Those charges advanced until the troops came under hostile effective fire. The procedure was then repeated. That day the troops fought a succession of battles. The heat was intense, and advance over swampy land, through sugar cane fields and bamboo thickets, was physically difficult. General MacArthur ordered the advance to stop on the Calulet-Dolores line. The enemy casualty was over 300 killed and wounded.

General Wheaton asked Captain Howland to discover the enemy position, strength and intentions and report same to him. The Captain accompanied a battalion, 17th Infantry, Major L. M. O'Brien, reinforced by one 3.2 inch gun, Lieutenant Kenly, which started the next morning, at 5 A. M. June 10, on the railroad toward Angeles. At the curve in the track two miles from Angeles he said to the Major: "Please do not advance now beyond the curve because of danger of flank attack. Take a position in readiness. With a patrol I will advance and develop enemy fire. Then give the patrol protective fire."

That developed the enemy principal force on the left front (on Angeles side) and a smaller force on the right front. The enemy evidently expected the American force to

continue on the railroad and come under double flank fire. Kenly at the curve shelled the exposed enemy who fled along the track toward Angeles. The Major advanced to the vacated enemy position. The Captain gave the General's compliments to the Major, stated that desired information had been obtained, and asked him to return the command to Calulet.

The Captain reported to General Wheaton: that the enemy had not recovered from his defeat the day before; that under a thin outpost he was trying to assemble for defense of Angeles; that the enemy outpost was easily driven in by artillery fire, which terrified them and showed they were green troops; and that Angeles could have been entered, but not held without reinforcements.

General Wheaton reported the above information to General MacArthur, who directed the gathering of further information.

Nov. 20, 1900 Major O'BRIEN recommended that First Lieutenant, 20th U. S. Infantry (Captain, 28th Infantry, U. S. Vols.) Charles R. Howland be promoted to Captain, U. S. A. by brevet for gallantry in action on a reconnaissance in force from Calulet to Angeles, P. I., Aug. 10, 1899, and in detail stated that:

"Captain Howland's services on this occasion were most valuable and contributed largely to locating the position and force of the enemy, and were rendered at great personal risk."

General Wheaton directed Captain Howland to continue on his mission. The Captain accompanied a battalion, 17th Infantry, Captain G. H. Roach, reinforced by one 3.2 inch gun, Lieutenant Kenly, which started from Calulet at 5 A. M. Aug. 13, 1899 on the railroad toward Angeles. The enemy had strengthened his formed outpost line by coordinated trenches, left and right of the tracks, and by a stronger and better organized force, which as before evidently expected us to proceed between those two forces.

The Captain informed Captain Roach of enemy positions. Development of enemy fire indicated a force of more than 1000 on the left front who were armed with Remington rifles, and about 300 on the right front, armed with Mauser rifles. Advances made by small groups against both insurgent forces drew fire, which gave a target to the infantry and to Kenly, who stopped the enemy bursts of fire each time. The Infantry fired about 8000 rounds, and Kenly about 40 rounds of shell and shrapnel.

It was apparent that the enemy planned to hold Angeles with about 2500 troops assembled from different organizations. The enemy line could easily have been flanked and the enemy forced back, but the Captain did not deem it advisable that day. It was intensely hot. The troops had been firing and been under fire about 5 hours. The Captain gave the General's compliments to Captain Roach, stated that the desired information had been obtained and asked him to return the command to Calulet.

Captain Howland reported to General Wheaton: that the enemy outpost was entrenched and held about 1400 men, who were better troops than before, as they stood up under artillery fire a little better; that the enemy force was a grouping and not well coordinated; that the enemy was planning to hold Angeles with about 2500 men; that the next reconnaissance should be by a regiment, reinforced by one 3.2-inch gun and by two lighter, mobile guns for use in flank attacks; that the casualties inflicted had softened enemy attitudes, and that the time had come to drive the enemy out of Angeles.

General Wheaton directed Captain Howland to continue on his mission. He accompanied the 12th U. S. Infantry, Lieut. Colonel J. H. Smith, reinforced by one 3.2-inch gun and one 1.65-inch mountain Hotchkiss gun, Lieutenant Kenly, which force started at 5:15 A. M. Aug. 16, from Calulet on the railroad toward Angeles.

Captain Howland rode with Colonel Smith and informed him of terrain ahead and on the flanks; positions previously occupied by the enemy, and strength of the enemy on previous outpost duty.

Colonel SMITH found the main body of the enemy in two groups, one of the left and one on the right of the track.

Captain Howland, mounted, was with Colonel Smith on the raised railroad bed, overlooking the battlefield, Angeles and the highway were to the left of the railroad. Kenly and two guns were on the lower level to the right of the railroad, and could not fire to the left of railoard.

Colonel SMITH's attention was attracted to the above situation, and to the enemy reserve then marching from Angeles to reinforce enemy troops on the left of the raised railroad, and he decided that the reserve battalion be sent forward to reinforce the battalion on the left of the raised railroad. The enemy with well-armed forces greatly outnumbered the American force.

The crisis had arrived. Colonel Smith said he could win if he could get some fire against the enemy on the left, from Evan's battalion on the right and asked Captain Howland to so inform Captain Evans. Captain Howland rode down from the high railroad level to the location of Kenly's artillery, explained the maneuver to him, asked him for shrapnel covering fire for himself and for Evan's command. Kenly said "Trust me." As the Captain started forward, mounted, Kenly's men (whom Howland knew from previous battles) called "Good luck, Captain we'll give them hell."

The shrapnel fire decreased but did not stop enemy fire at the Captain, but made it wild and high. The sound of it hitting in the nearby railroad bank was like that of a stampmill. He galloped at top speed to get a message to Captain Evans as soon as possible. Fortunately the enemy's wild shots passed behind him. He delivered the message during rapid maximum shrapnel fire. Evans gave the new target to two left companies who lay down on the railroad track and delivered a rapid, enfilading, deadly fire on the enemy on the left, who broke and fled to the rear. The enemy on the right, terrified by shrapnel fire, finally fled. The battle was won.

Captain Howland climbed the church tower stairs and observed the enemy's confused retreat in three separate groups: one of well over 1000 men toward Magalang, headquarters of General Acuino; another of more than 500 men on the railroad toward Bamban, headquarters of General Conception and Assistant General Miguel and Hizon; the third column of about 1000 men toward Porac, headquarters of General Mascardo.

The Captain informed Colonel SMITH of the enemy retreat. The Colonel had outposts posted and ordered dinner. The Captain, joining the Colonel and staff for dinner, sat with his back against a tree. After a very short lunch he arose, and in a split instant a bullet hit the part of that tree where his head was before he arose.

The Colonel ordered an officer to select some good shots quickly and shoot or capture the hostile sniper, but he escaped. The accuracy of that shot, and the fact that only one shot was fired, identified that sniper as the one who later killed General Lawton with one shot.

The Captain then gave the General's compliments to Colonel Smith and said: "I shall now report to the General as soon as possible, and return here with his orders for your command. Please take a position in readiness." The Captain, with orderlies from his mounted detachment, mounted. He and each orderly were armed with a carbine and two revolvers. On the railroad bank at one place there was a small squad of insurgents, three of whom were killed by carbine fore, and the others fled to the woods. At Calulet the Captain reported the situation to General Wheaton and asked for orders for the 12th Infantry to remain at Angeles. General Wheaton said that "only General MacArthur could approve that request. Go to him with my approval and inform me of his decision." The Captain and orderlies continued on to San Fernando, where he reported the situation and with General Wheaton's approval asked for orders for the 12th Infantry to remain at Angeles. General MacArthur, much plased, thanked the Captain and said: "Notify General Wheaton to advance his Headquarters to Angeles, and to send reinforcements and supplies to the 12th Infantry as soon as possible."

The Captain and orderlies returned to Calulet and delivered General Macarthur's orders to General Wheaton. General Wheaton directed the Captain to return to Angeles as quickly as possible, and to convey his order to Colonel Smith as follows: "Hold and defend Angeles. Reinforcements and supplies will reach you early tomorrow morning." The Captain and orderlies continued back to Angeles. The Captain delivered General Wheaton's order to Colonel Smith, who formed his command in a position in readiness. An insurgent force on the railroadline attacked at dawn the next morning but was mowed down by accurate fire of defending troops.

After repulse of the enemy attack, Captain Howland with escort troops advanced to the destroyed railroad bridge, inspected the condition of the bridge and rolling stock dumped there, and reported that two much needed locomotives and eight box cars could be easily salvaged. Engineers from San Fernando reported promptly. They put one engine back on the track Aug. 18 and the other Aug. 19, under cover of friendly fire.

Upon completion of the above duties, Aug. 19, Captain Howland presented the compliments of General Wheaton to Colonel Smith and stated that having completed his mission he would return to Brigade headquarters.

Colonel Smith handed two sealed letters to the Captain and asked him to mail one to his wife and to deliver the other to General Wheaton. The Captain did that. After reading his letter, General Wheaton handed it to Captain Howland and said: "Keep that original. Later send a copy through me to your record in the War Department."

The letter read as follows:

"Dear General Wheaton: Please send Captain Howland of your staff to report back to me. He has been of very valuable assistance to me and I need him. Yours truly,

J. H. SMITH Lt. Col. 12th Inf. comdg."

The next day—August 20—General Wheaton said to Captain Howland: "I have recommended your promotion as follows:

"Agwar Aug. 20, '99. Washington. Recommend field Officer Volunteers Capt. Howland, twenty-eighth Infantry, my staff. Wheaton."

July 7, 1900, Captain Howland forwarded a copy of Colonel Smith's letter—above—to the Adjutant-General, U. S. Army, for file with his records. General Wheaton's action was a s follows:

"1st Endorsement. Hdqrs. Dept. of Northern Luzon Manila, P. I. July 8, 1900.

"Respectfully forwarded to the Adjutant General, Division of the Philippines, with the recommendation that within request of Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. Vols., 1st Lieut. 1th U. S. Infantry, be complied with. Captain Howland rendered valuable service at the time Angeles, P. I. was occupied by the 12th U. S. Infantry under Colonel Jacob H. Smith. Captain Howland's conduct on that occasion was greatly to his credit and if placed with his record at the War Department will in future time be useful to determine his capacity for important duty.

LOYD WHEATON
Major General, U. S. Vols.

commanding.

"Headquarters Third District, Department of Northern Luzon.

Dagupan, Pangasinan, P. I., December 1, 1900.

Adjutant General.
U. S. Army,
Washington, D. C.

(Through Military Channels)

Sir:

I have the honor to recommend Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. V. (1st Lieut., 20th U. S. Infantry) for Brevet Captain and Major in the regular establishment for conspicuous bravery at the battle of Angeles, Luzon, on the 16th of August, 1899. He was ordered to report to me for any duty I might require on that eventful occasion and I used him as Aide-de-Camp. During the action he carried, under heavy fire, an order for me which resulted in getting two companies at a point where the flank movement of the enemy was prevented. Again when the enemy were leaving their entrenchments and retiring, he accompanied a company of the 12th Infantry to a railroad bridge north of the town and assisted materially in saving several engines and the bridge from destruction. He volunteered to carry my dispatches to General Loyd Wheaton, under whom I was operating, through a country infested with Insurgents and at a time when others were exhausted. His services were of great assistance to me and I consider that he deserves the brevets of Captain and Major for the gallant, brave and efficient work performed by him on the 16th day of August, 1899.

I am, very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
J. H. Smith,
Brigadier General, U. S. Vols.,
commanding.

"1st Endorsement.

Headquarters Department of Northern Luzon.

Manila, P. I., December 3, 1900."

(For first part of endorsement see Battle of Zapote)

"I recommend that Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. Vols., also be brevetted Major of Volunteers for conspicuous gallantry at Angeles, P. I. on August 16th, 1899, as set forth in the within recommendation of Brigadier General J. H. Smith, U. S. Vols.

LOYD WHEATON,
Major General, U. S. Vols.,
commanding."

The President nominated Captain Charles R. Howland for promotion to Brevet Major, U. S. V., which was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs in executive session of the Senate of the United States March 20, 1902, as follows: "Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U. S. Volunteers for distinguished gallantry in action*** at Angeles, Luzon, P. I. August 16th 1899, to rank from August 16, 1899."

In Section VI, General Orders No. 10, March 25, 1924 the War Department cited officers to whom it awards three silver stars for gallantry in action. One of those citations was: "Charles R. Howland, Colonel Infantry, then Captain 28th Infantry, United States Volunteers. For gallantry in action against insurgent forces at Angeles, Luzon, August 16, 1899."

From General Wheaton's headquarters Captain Howland's principal duty was by scouting to discover location and strength of nearby enemy. General Wheaton's duty Sept. 28, 1899 was to demonstrate from Angeles to prevent enemy assembly at Porac, which General MacArthur was attacking. General Wheaton placed Captain Howland in command of the brigade advance guard. The Captain struck the enemy outpost at Maniboug at 6:30 A. M. and dispersed it. He then changed direction to northwest and cut the enemy retreat line from Porac to Mabalacat by 8:30 A. M., when the fire of General MacArthur's attack on Porac could be heard. There the General, by heavy fire from his brigade, defeated and dispersed a large Insurgent force en route to help defend Porac. They fled in confusion to the north. That operation by General MacArthur won protection for his left flank in his approaching campaign north along the railroad line.

The final operations against Aguinaldo's army and government began promptly after the end of the rainy season. General Otis knew that Aguinaldo planned a step-by-step defensive from his capital at Tarlac, along the railroad to Dagupan, and along the newly repaired west coast highway to north of the Caraballos Mountains. The general missions of Generals Macarthur and Lawton have been stated. General Otis' orders were:

"Sail to the Gulf of Lingayan, land at or north of San Fabian, place command on the road leading north and near the coast to prevent retreat of the Insurgent army to north along that road or trails leading in that direction. Inflict such damage as possible by combat, but do not attack Dagupan or south thereof. The Navy will cooperate as far as practical." General Wheaton planned to land in successive waves on the shore from the north bank of the first river south of San Fabian, along the shore north to the south bank of the river that empties into the Gulf in front of San Fabian, and advance east to the highway. The first wave to advance east and capture the bridge over that river, and advance south quickly on the highway and capture the bridge over the next river south, and then patrol south to the crossroad from Dagupan to San Jacinto. Expeditionary Headquarters and reserve to be near the town church.

When the expedition entered Lingayen Gulf, early afternoon of Nov. 7, Commander Henry Knox, the senior naval officer there, boarded General Wheaton's transport for conference. The details of bombardment of the enemy, and for transport of troops from ship to shore under the above plan were quickly arranged.

The General assembled regimental and detachment commanders with staff, promptly, and gave verbal orders as per plan. He added the following orders: allocation of waves to regiments; instructions for debarking into small boats; instructions that troops approaching shore in small boats return hostile fire from the enemy on shore. He then very carefully pointed out on the map and on the shore the beach for each wave. He asked all to check on the map, and by view of the shore, the mission allocated to him. After all had made the check, he called for questions but none were asked. After informing them that he would follow just behind the first wave with his flag flying from his boat, he said to them and to his Clearing Officer: "Proceed with the landing operation."

Some 13th Infantry staff officer gave incorrect orders for landing of the first wave and it veered to the left instead of to the right of San Fabian. In every possible way the General and his staff tried to attract attention of the pilot boat to change direction of approach, but enemy fire, naval bombardment, rifle fire, fire from boats, and concentrated attention of all in the pilot boat to the beach they were approaching, prevented attention of the pilot boat to the General's boat that should have been given.

As a result that pilot boat, the first wave, and following waves landed on a tidal sandbar, across the river from and north of San Fabian, with only an old, rickety fisherman's bamboo footbridge across the river available for reaching the mainland. The enemy fire was increasing by Insurgents rushing north to close the trap into which that expedition was landing. If the enemy could destroy that dry bridge by fire with a lighted match, or by cutting the bands that held it up, the expedition could not have been saved. The situation was critical. No time could be wasted. The instant that General Wheaton stepped onto that sandbar tidal trap under enemy fire, he called at the top of his voice for an officer to volunteer to lead a charge over that bridge against the enemy.

Realizing that such an emergency call released him from obligation as Aide, Captain Howland, inpired by chance to save the expedition, sprang forward, ran to the bridge calling on all to follow, ran over the bridge through point-blank enemy fire to the mainland, drove the enemy away from the end of the bridge, gave directions to followers for disposition and action against the intrenched enemy who fled. He turned and beckoned the command to come over the bridge. It did. One by one they came, out of step, and at considerable distance between files to avoid weaving or breaking that precious bridge. The expedition was saved in the few available minutes that gave the chance, and over that weak, weaving, rickety fisherman's one-man footbridge it landed.

The strategic importance of that charge which made the landing possible is best described by Senor Felipe Buencamino, then a secretary in Aguinaldo's cabinet at

-

Tarlac. As a sworn witness for the defense in the celebrated Tay Tay case, he testified that on learning Nov. 7, 1899 that American forces under General Wheaton had that day forced a landing at San Fabian, the following action was taken: the congress and the supreme court were discontinued; the army dispersed and never again functioned together; the use of a capital of government ceased; the whole conception of Aguinaldo's government was abandoned and ceased; Aguinaldo planned only to escape; Paterno went to Benguet. Buencamino himself said that he went with aguinaldo toward Taguig to escape.

After the expedition had arrived at San Fabian, General Wheaton selected Major Peyton C. March, 33rd Infantry Vols., to execute the mission that he planned for the first wave. Major March executed that duty in a masterly manner under heavy fire and inflicted heavy losses on the enemy. By promptly sending reconnaissance groups east and north, the General blocked the escape of any large group of enemy forces. Captain Howland participated in that activity.

General Tinio's hostile group from the north came to San Jacinto to receive Aguin-Aldo and as many troops with him as possible and to escort them north. But before any such concentration of insurgent troops could be effected, General Wheaton sent Colonel Hare with the 33rd Infantry Vols. and Captain Howland with his Gatling gun detachment, who decisively dispersed that force Nov. 11, 1899, but with loss of Major Logan (whose gallantry was reported by Captain Howland and a posthumous Medal of Honor was granted) and of other officers and enlisted men.

General Wheaton continued those blocking operations so that no armed force in uniform could pass. But disguised as a mere hombres, Aguinaldo and others escaped to the north as fugitives. The General supplied his own detachments and those from General Lawton's force for pursuit of Aguinaldo, a fugitive.

Nov. 14, Captain Howland reported to the General that under very difficult weather conditions the quartermaster launch San Francisco was disabled. He directed Captain Day, the Quartermaster, to save the launch at once. Captain Day tried everything, but the storm increased to the force of a typhoon. That night Captain Howland told Captain Day to build a bonfire near the beach, as he was going out to the launch to tell the Captain of that safety place. Over Captain Day's objection that it was not possible, Captain Howland said: "Their lives are at stake and I will try." The launch Captain, later Master of Q. M. S. Harrisburg, in a letter completed the statement of that effort to save their lives.

Under General Wheaton's orders, Captain Howland with escort of one battalion of 13th U. S. Infantry, Nov. 19 received surrender of Dagupan, organized a civil government there loyal to the United States, made a survey of navigability of the harbor, and made a list of the condition of all harbor and sea-going craft there. He also collected the following information of dispersed insurgents: Aguinaldo's plan Nov. 14, when hidden at Pozorrubio, was to go north via Alava, Aringay, San Fernando de la Union to the Province of Abra; Colonel Montenegro and Aguinaldo's mother and son were not able to pass through the American line at Manoag and were trying to reach Mangataren to join Generals Alexandrino and Pantaleon Garcia, who had 1500 men and artillery, and reported same to General Wheaton Nov. 20, 1899.

As information secured there was ahead of Aguinaldo, General Wheaton at once forwarded it to troops ahead of Aguinaldo, with the result that, frustrated again, Aguin-

ALDO'S importance was decreased and without many companions he, disguised as a barefoot native, escaped north as a fugitive and was not identified.

Captain Howland, Aide, met Captain Fowler with Company F, 33rd Infantry, U. S. V. at arrival by boat Nov. 20, formed a good opinion of him and his company, presented him to the General and recommended that he be sent with his company on reconnaissance to check data secured the previous day by Captain Howland with reference to Insurgents near Mangataren. The General approved and gave those instructions. Captain Fowler started 5 A. M. Nov. 22, fought his way to Mangataren, and there defeated General Alexandrino's force of about 1000 men and two batteries of artillery, released 96 Spanish and 7 American prisoners, and destroyed enemy supply of every kind. He sent word he would remain until relieved.

Under General Wheaton's order Captain Howland—with proper guard—went to Dagupan, and as Mangataren was under General MacArthur's Area, he wired the situation in the name of General Wheaton to General MacArthur, who sent Colonel J. Franklin Bell, 36th Infantry (less one battalion) who, assisted by Captain Fowler and his company, dispersed the force of 2800 men under Generals Alexandrino and Pantaleon Garcia, and destroyed an Insurgent powder mill and arsenal.

The pursuit of Aguinaldo, fugitive, was pressed by Generals Wheaton and Lawton, aided by the Navy.

On information furnished by Captain Howland, Nov. 20, General Wheaton issued orders that resulted n the capture of the mother and son of Aguinaldo, and Buencamino, cabinet officer of Aguinaldo, and entourage. Six days later the General issued the following verbal and secret order to Captain Howland: "Captain, I ask you to render a service of the highest order, that is exceedingly dangerous and sacred. The honor of our Country is involved. Take the mother and son of Aguinaldo and entourage, over land, to Manila, without injury or any humiliation to them. Make all arrangements with General Macarthur at Bautista for safe rail transportation, start as soon as possible, and travel secretly."

The Captain went to Dagupan, wired a secret statement of the situation to General MacArthur, and asked for rail transport and a guarded line to include Angeles. General MacArthur wired that he would have a train at the end of track at Calasiao at 3 P. M. Nov. 28. The Captain with a guard of selected sharp-shooters escorted the mother and son in early morning, Nov. 28, in covered ambulances to Dagupan, where breakfast was served within the walled hacienda of the pronounced Americanista, Senor Thomas Rous. The mother would not eat or drink or allow any of her entourage to do so until the Captain delivered the food or drink and after serving himself first, the Captain had eaten or drunk the offered food in her presence. Having gone through that ceremony she knew that the food and drink were good, and taking charge she served each of her party with apparent gratitude and grace.

At the scheduled time Senor Rous opened the gate. With great alertness and care he proceeded to Calasiao, and including guards, boarded the train which consisted of a repaired engine, and burned flat cars with repaired plank floors. Chairs and other comforts were provided and the mother did not restrain her happiness and gratitude. At Bautista General Macarhur called on her and asked if he could provide any further comfort for her. She was pleased and said: "No, my General, Captain 'Hurry-up' (Howland) has thought of everything, and we are safe. Thank you."

General Macarhur, without revealing who was on that train, gave it priority to Angeles. Food, bedding and all the needed things were provided. But the Captain and guards were constantly on the alert for their safety and care, and to prevent any attempt at rescue. A special train of comfortable, undamaged passenger cars was waiting at Angeles. With some appreciative ceremony the mother led her group onto the more comfortable train and after all were aboard and seated she led her group in prayer of thanks for safety. Upon arrival in Manila the Captain, under orders of General Otis, surrendered her and her group to Mr. Benito Legarda. She broke into tears, threw her arms around the neck of the Captain and asked God to bless him.

The Captain delivered the Spanish recaptured prisoners, recaptured American prisoners, the Philippino Barreto and a Philippino boy to 1st Lieut., 13th Infantry Arthur R. Kerwin. The Captain then delivered \$1192.50 in Mexican silver coin-captured Insurgent money—to Captain W. O. Wood, Treasurer of the Philippine Archipelago and Island of Guam.

Upon return, General Wheaton said: "Captain, I thank you. In this difficult and most dangerous duty you have served the Army and our country well, with good judgment, and dignity."

In reply to the request of the Colonel, 28th Infantry, U. S. V. for Captain Howland to join his regiment to fill, the position of Quartermaster, General Wheaton stated by endorsement: "San Fabian, P. I. November 28, 1899. Captain Howland's services are needed with me, not for my benefit but for that of the public service. I ask that he be permitted to continue on duty with me. He does not desire to be Q. M."

The decision by General Otis was as follows:

"General Wheaton's command is so important and so widely dispersed that the Commanding General declines to relieve Captain Howland from duty on General Wheaton's Staff at this time."

In his report Nov. 30, 1899 General Wheaton stated that: "Valuable service has been rendered during the month by Captain Charles R. Howland, Aide-de-Camp."

May 20, 1902, General Wheaton indorsed papers relating to the charge over the bridge at San Fabian, Nov. 7, 1899 as follows: "Respectfully forwarded to the Adjutant General of the Army, Washington, D. C. thro' Headquarters Division of the Philippines with request that these papers may be filed with the record of Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Infantry. Captain Howland has heretofore been recommended for the brevet of Major. In view of the information contained in these papers, a further brevet of Lieutenant Colonel, U. S. Volunteers, is recommended in this case. I was a witness of Captain Howland's gallantry. He has my highest commendation for his courage and good conduct."

The Division Commander referred that document to the Division Board, which Aug. 14, 1902 reported by indorsement as follows: "Respectfully returned by the Board recommending that: 'For gallant and meritorious service at San Fabian, P. I. in Nov. 1899 while serving as Aide-de-Camp to Major General Loyd Wheaton, U. S. Volunteers, Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Infantry, be brevetted one grade above his present rank in the Army. In case he has been brevetted to such grade for other meritorious service, then to one grade above such brevet.'"

The following corrects errors in the above report. Nov. 7, 1899: LOYD WHEATON was a Brigadier General, U. S. V.; Charles R. Howland was a First Lieutenant, 20th Infantry, U. S. A. and a Captain, 28th Infantry, U. S. V.; and no brevet promotions had been made for gallantry in the Philippine Islands.

The Division Commander concurred in that report and forwarded it to the Adjutant General of the Army.

As the former policy of promotion by brevet was discontinued, no action was taken by the War Department on General Wheaton's above recommendation for promotion of Captain Howland for gallantry. So, in order to reward the Captain, Major General Wheaton, Ret., recommended Oct. 21, 1907 that he be awarded the Medal of Honor "for distinguished gallantry in leading a charge under short-range fire from the entrenchments of the enemy, across the San Fabian Bridge, Philippine Islands, Nov. 7, 1899, while serving as Captain, 28th Infantry Volunteers, and acting Aide-de-Camp to Brigadier General Loyd Wheaton."

March 25, 1924 the War Department in Section VI, General Orders No. 10, cited Officers to whom it awarded three Silver Stars for gallantry in action. One of those citations was:

"Charles R. Howland, Colonel, Infantry, then Captain, 28th Infantry, United States Volunteers. For gallantry in action at San Fabian, P. I. Nov. 7, 1899 in leading a charge across a narrow bridge in face of close-range hostile fire."

Aug. 27, 1927 the War Department announced that the Silver Star should be a separate decoration, and that an oak-leaf cluster would be awarded for each more-thanone citation for gallantry. As Colonel Howland had three Silver Stars, that decision decorated him further with 2 oak-leaf clusters.

On request, in 1912, the War Department transmitted to the Treasury Department the papers forwarded May 1, 1902 by Major General LOYD WHEATON in reference to saving life Nov. 14, 1899 at San Fabian, P. I. March 28 the Treasury Department in a letter to Captain Charles R. Howland, stated that:

"There is transmitted herewith a gold medal of honor, awarded to you by this Department under Acts of Congress approved June 20, 1874 and May 4, 1882, in recognition of heroic daring exhibited in swimming to the rescue of the crew of the Quartermaster launch 'San Francisco' who were in danger of drowning during a typhoon at San Fabian, P. I., Nov. 7, 1899. It affords the Department great pleasure to have this opportunity to commend the services rendered by you upon this occasion." (Remark. The correct date was Nov. 14, 1899.)

The War Department in General Orders No. 25, Aug. 30, 1924 published the following:

"Award of life-saving medal. Under the provisions of the Act of Congress June 20, 1874 as amended by the Act of Congress May 4, 1882 a gold life-saving medal was awarded by the Treasury Department to the following named officer: Charles R. Howland, Colonel, Infantry, United States Army, then Captain, 28th Infantry, United States Volunteers, in recognition of heroic daring exhibited in swimming to the rescue of crewmen of the Quartermaster launch 'San Francisco' who were in danger of drowing during a typhoon at San Fabian, P. I. Nov. 7, 1899."

General MacArthur took over the Dagupan-San Fabian area with bases of supply, and General Wheaton relieved General Lawton, who left Taguig for mopping-up operations closer to Manila. Under the General's orders Captain Howland, with a mounted scout detachment, mopped up small groups of ladrones, and in a very difficult and fatiguing operation he finally located the residence of the prominent Insurgent Vicente Prado in the barrio of Inmalog, north of Pozorrubio, where he was printing in Pangasinan dialect an Insurgent newspaper. The people of the house had fled. The Captain had the type sowed in a nearby swamp, and the remainder of the equipment and supplies destroyed and burned.

After General Wheaton's landing at San Fabian in the Northern Theater, General Otis planned mopping-up operations in the Southern Theater by the First Division under Major-General John C. Bates, U. S. V. Brigadier General Schwan with his brigade was to establish an effective strong line to the east and south rear of the Insurgent forces assembling to his west and north. Brigadier General Wheaton's brigade from the vicinity of Imus was to drive the Insurgents against General Schwan's line.

General Wheaton and staff with a part of his brigade found Imus defending—under fire—against a large force of Insurgents on the east and south sides of that town, Jan. 7. 1900. General Wheaton's plan was to drive the enemy back immediately, far enough for his deployment the next morning for an aggressive action to drive the enemy east and south. For that clearing action he used two battalions of the 28th Infantry, Major E. F. Taggart, with two small-caliber artillery guns, Captain Buckey. He directed Captain Howland to give every assistance, and if necessary, instructions to Major Taggart in his name. Captain Howland's recommendation that the artillery take its place on the front line between the two infantry battalions was approved and he accompanied the artillery. The attack began its advance against stubborn enemy fire. Each artillery gun covered the advance of the other, and its fire was most effective. After driving the enemy back far enough to nullify his fire, the Captain informed the Major that his attack mission was completed, and to post a strong outpost. The enemy stopped firing at 2:15 P. M. because of his heavy casualties.

The next morning General Wheaton by successive and continuous reconnaissances in force, and by combat, dispersed a large number of the enemy and drove the remainder against General Schwan's Line, and moved his headquarters south to Silang, Jan. 13, 1900.

In his Report Jan. 9, 1900 Major TAGGART stated that:

"Captain Howland, Twenty-eighth Infantry, of General Wheaton's staff, remained on the firing line throughout the engagement and was noticeably cool and daring, and rendered valuable assistance."

General Wheaton in his report Jan. 31, 1900 praised Major Taggart's handling of two battalions, and stated that "He was assisted by Captain Charles R. Howland, Twenty-eighth Infantry, Aide on my staff, who rendered gallant service under fire."

Feb. 2, 1900 the General moved his headquarters to Calamba on the southwest coast of Laguna de Bay, from where he commanded 33 stations in the Provinces of Cavite, Batangas, Laguna, and Tayabas.

The time had arrived for use of Military Commissions under the laws of war, as authorized Aug. 22, 1898 by General Otts. Military Commissions use the procedure

provided for General Courts Martial. Captain Howland was selected by General Otis as Judge Advocate to try cases at Calamba. The full records will not be stated. The cases here and later will be considered very briefly.

In the first case Raimondo Hernandez, a native, charged with murdering one American soldier, and with assault and battery with intent to kill two other soldiers, was found guilty and sentenced to be hanged. In the second, third and fourth cases, charges were highway robbery and guerilla warfare. The accused natives, Ciriaco de los Reyes, Francisco Vellaneuva, and Baletin Mellano, each in his case was sentenced to be confined at hard labor for a long period. In the fifth and sixth cases the charges were assault and battery with intent to kill, and robbery. The accused natives, Adriano Arrero and Pulercarpio Caiman were found guilty except the words "intent to kill," and were sentenced to confinement at hard labor for 10 years.

Under the new division of the Philippine Islands May 5, 1900 General Wheaton was assigned to command the Department of Northern Luzon.

General Wheaton verbally directed Captain Howland, Aide, to assist General F. D. Grant in whose district Colonel Tecson had assembled a large group of ladrones on Mount Balubad, in the historic rebel Biacnabato Mountain area, and from which stronghold he was raiding the nearby American-controlled area. The Captain, with a good map and his small scouting detachment, reported to General Grant at San Miguel.

General Grant asked his view as to action to be taken. The Captain knew that the enemy considered his position so strong that the Americans would be forced to besiege it. He replied that a surprise attack would be the most effective, and that an approach march the next day, June 10, to within striking distance, and a rapid strong advance early June 11, would surprise the enemy and win. General Grant approved, appointed the Captain Adjutant-General, and told him to draw the orders accordingly. General Funstan with his Brigade was present.

The command marched to Sibul late June 10, and early June 11 advanced against the enemy. The surprised enemy had no troops out to defend the difficult and dangerous mountain trails. The advance guard struck the surprised enemy at 9:30 A. M. and artillery was placed within range of the enemy. Some of the infantry troops covered all other trails from Mount Balubad. Then the artillery opened a rapid and accurate fire, and at the scheduled moment infantry advanced to attack the front and both flanks of the enemy.

At 2:45 the enemy began to set fire to his housing and supplies. He then fled under cover of smoke, not along a trail but man by man through the deep jungle woods. His loss in killed and wounded was heavy. All that the enemy had not destroyed was destroyed by the American troops. The victory was decisive. The disillusioned ladrones never returned to that position. Some resumed work and obeyed the American law; some went home and made trouble.

General Grant reported Aug. 11, 1900 that "I am under the greatest obligations to Captain C. R. Howland of the Department Commander's staff, who acted as Adjutant of the expedition. Captain Howland showed great personal courage and was exceedingly efficient in the performance of all his duties."

Sept. 13, 1900, General Wheaton stated to Captain Howland: "You have not received sufficient recognition of your ability to command in War, and as a partial correction I have stated your ability in this personal letter, which you are free to use as you please."

"Headquarters, Department of Northern Luzon.

Manila, P. I., Sept. 13, 1900.

"To all officers of the United States Army whom it may concern:

"Captain Charles R. Howland, 28th Infantry, U.S. Volunteers, First Lieutenant, 20th U.S. Infantry has served with me since the beginning of the Spanish-American War of 1898. As an Aide he has participated in the greater number of the battles and combats of importance in the island of Luzon since Feb. 23, 1899. In these battles and combats he has exhibited the qualities necessary for the successful command of soldiers in battle. If an officer of courage, energy, and capacity for practical duty in the field in the presence of the enemy is needed, Captain Howland is commended for your consideration in time when such qualities are desired.

"Captain Howland will in my opinion be able to fill, with credit to himself and the service, any command to which he may be assigned.

> (Sgd.) Loyd Wheaton Major-General, U. S. Vols."

General Macarthur, the Military Governor, June 21, 1900 offered amnesty to all Insurgents—less those who had violated the laws of war—who would formally renounce all connection with the Insurrection and accept the sovereignty of the United States in and over the Philippine Islands. Many took the oath, but those who did not—quite generally—continued hostility in secret, now called "underground" warfare. Dec. 20, 1900 General Macarthur issued instructions that "men who participated in hostilities without being part of a regularly organized force * * * are not entitled to the privileges of prisoners of war."

In addition to his many other duties, Captain Howland's principal duty was to discover who were the secret enemies, and after capture, as Judge Advocate to try them by Military Commission. He inspected, discovered, and reported to the General that the attack on the railroad north of Caloocan was by a band of ladrones under General Torres. Dec. 29, 1900 he controlled so thorough a search for General Torres that Torres tried to avoid capture by taking the oath April 25, 1901, and thereafter conducted a secret outlaw ladrone postoffice in Manila, where he was captured and confined by Captain Howland. Aug. 26, 1901 the Captain reported to the General that Mariano, a ladrone, was organizing ladrone bands in Tay Tay, Antipolo, Boso Boso, and Morong, to reinforce the ladrone leader Malvar in the Province of Batangas, who would arm them.

Nov. 17, 1901 he reported to General Wheaton: that the ladrones were organizing a secret junta in Manila; that ladrone activities would be started by General Malvar in the Province of Batangas; that General Pantaleon Garcia, former Chief of Staff to Aguinaldo, in violation of his oath of allegiance was secret agent between that junta and Malvar; that ladrone leaders; General Trias in Cavite and Bataan provinces, Colonel Tecson in Bulacan province, and Generals Guitterez and Riveiera, were to send arms to Malvar; that there was a secret ladrone organization in Norzagary; and that Insurgent commanders before surrendering were passing all or a part of the arms under their control over to secret ladrone leaders who were not surrendering.

Under a new division of command in the Philippine Islands, Major-General Wheat-on was assigned Nov. 30, 1901 to command of the new Department North Philippines,

which included the Islands of Luzon and Mindoro. On the General's recommendation, Brigadier-General J. F. Bell was assigned to the new District of Batangas, Laguna, Cavite, and the Island of Mindoro.

Nov. 30, 1901 the Captain gave to General Wheaton: a description of General Malvar; a list of places frequented by him; names of his prominent supporters in the province of Batangas; the name of each subordinate to Malvar: the name of his organization, "Colorum;" and the name used by ladrones for Malvar, "Pator." General Wheaton directed Captain Howland to furnish the above information to Brigadier-General Bell, verbally. That information was in time and General Bell was thus able to forestall those ladrone-planned activities.

The Insurgent General Cailles, who was forced by General Wheaton's operations in the Southern Theater, early in 1900, to surrender, kept his oath of allegiance and gave the following information to Captain Howland at Santa Cruz, which he in turn reported to General Wheaton Jan. 4, 1902: that many Ladrones in Batangas Province who were discouraged over failure of plans there and who did not dare to surrender, were moving east to Binangonan, capital of the province of Infanta, where an attempt was being made to reorganize and build an arsenal.

General Wheaton appointed Captain Howland Judge Advocate of a Military Commission, Nov. 14, 1900. In the first case, Bonaventuro Domingo, a native who was elected Mayor of the town of Felipe Neri under the American Military Government, charged with communicating with the public enemy in violation of the laws and usages of war, was found guilty. In the second case the charge was murder and robbery of Archibald B. Wilson, an Englishman. The accused natives were Arcadio de los Santos, Atanacio San Pablo, Alfonso Reyes, Ciriaco Sandi de los Santos, and Jose Monsod, who were tried together, and each and all convicted as charged. After completion of the above case, General Wheaton verbally conveyed to Captain Howland the thanks of the Governor-General, Major-General Arthur MacArthur, "for work the Captain had just completed as Judge Advocate of the Military Commission."

General Wheaton appointed Captain Howland Judge Advocate of a Military Commission, Feb. 27, 1901. In the first case the charge was "violating his oath of allegiance." The accused, a native, Atilano Santa Ana, was the secret Insurgent Civil Governor of the Insurgent second zone, after he had surrendered and taken the oath of allegiance. He was convicted as charged.

In the second case the charge was murder. The accused natives were Caledonio Javier, Pablo Anorma, Florentio Antonio alias "Prudencio," Santiago Gadapia alias "Baldado," Pastor Santos and Francisco Felizardo alias "Quicoy." They were tried together. There were four Specifications, all alike except for date. Omitting—here—names and dates, the Specification was as follows:

"In that * * * natives, and each of them, constituting with others, names and numbers unknown, an armed band of outlaws, did wilfully, feloniously and with malice aforethought kill and murder * * * by striking the said * * * with a bar of iron or other blunt instrument, and by burying the said * * * alive; thereby causing the death of the said * * *. This on or about * * * in the Pueblo of Taytay, Province of Morong, Luzon, P. I., a place then as now occupied by the armed forces of the United States of America, and during a time, then as now, of insurrection against the United States of America."

In the first Specification the date was "on or about May 1, 1900," and names of natives killed were "Felipe Escamila, and Honorio, last name unknown."

In the second Specification the date was "on or about July 15, 1900," and names of natives killed were "Monico Garivalles and Gregorio Garivalles."

In the third Specification the date was "on or about Aug. 15, 1900," and name of native killed was "Juan Lucas."

In the fourth Specification the date was "on or about Dec. 10, 1900," and name of native killed was "Perfecto," last name unknown.

The Military Commission began this trial March 25, 1901 and completed the taking of evidence May 18, 1901. The record covers more than 1200 typewritten pages. The Counsel for the accused was Allison D. Gibbs, an American lawyer of Manila. The Assistant Counsel was Alejandro Casal, a Philippino lawyer of Manila. There were 34 witnesses for the prosecution; 21 for the defense; 2 in rebuttal; and 1 called by the Court.

Each and all of the above accused persons, who were tried jointly, were found guilty and sentenced "to be hanged by the neck until dead."

Major General Chaffee, Commanding General, Division of the Philippines, the Reviewing Officer in General Orders No. 339, Dec. 6, 1901, stated:

"It appears from the evidence that these accused were soldiers of the Insurgent army prior to the time when it was dispersed by the American forces in November, 1899, after which the so-called Insurgent government possessed neither a capital nor an army in the field, and resistance to the military forces and lawful Government of the United States had, by proclamation of the Insurgent chiefs, been expressly confined to guerrilla warfare as the only resource left to them for keeping alive the insurrection. These accused, abandoning even the show of open opposition of the half-uniformed guerrilla bands, left the field and took up their residence in Taytay, then protected by an American garrison.

"Following the proclaimed policy of the Insurgent chiefs, these accused organized a bolo band in Taytay, of which the accused, Florentio Antonio, alias Prudencio, was the captain: Pastor Santos, 1st lieutenant; Celedonio Javier, 2d lieutenant; and Ramon Gadapia, a sergeant. In all there were about 25 men in the bolo band. This band also possessed a few rifles which they kept concealed in the neighborhood, in charge of a trusted custodian.

"The men were not uniformed, but appeared in Taytay as ordinary citizens going about their peaceful pursuits; they had no regular cuartel or other known place of rendezvous, nor did they drill or give any outward sign of an existing organization. All their operations were conducted secretly and, it may be safely assumed, under an oath-bound obligation not to give information thereof to the American authorities. The Commanding General, having in general orders authorized the native population within the lines of the army of occupation to establish the forms of civil government for the better protection of life and property, these accused, already established in authority as Insurgent partisans, came forward under the leadership of a resident padre and suggested a time and place for holding an election, which the commanding officer, in accordance with the terms of the general order referred to (No. 43, of 1899), had authorized. An election was accordingly held, and these accused, as the evi-

dence clearly shows dictated and secured their election as municipal officers of Taytay, and entered upon their duties under American authority.

"Of the accused, Celedonio Javier was elected presidente, Pastor Santos and Francisco Felizardo, aldermen, or cabezas of barrios, and Pablo Anorma was appointed teniente, or chief of police. In his civil capacity as presidente, Celedonio Javier was first in authority both as American presidente and Insurgent presidente, which latter office he forthwith assumed and in which he was duly recognized by the Insurgent chiefs. In his military capacity in the bolo band he was, however, subject to the captain, Florentio Antonio, alias Prudencio, and the 1st lieutenant, Pastor Santos; but it does not appear that these two accused ever assumed any authority in their military capacity over the presidente in his civil functions, who was obeyed therein with blind, unquestioning obedience by all.

"In this relation, judicial notice may be taken of the fact that throughout these islands wherever a presidente of a pueblo or cabeza of a barrio was appointed or elected under American authority, he, with few exceptions, either acted in the same capacity for the Insurgents or maintained silence with respect to his neighbor who served in like capacity in the same jurisdiction. This dual form of government existed everywhere, in strongly garrisoned cities like Manila and in the smallest barrio alike; and all were doubtless oath-bound in the great Katipunan league. At least it is fully established that efforts to so bind them have been diligently pursued.

"History affords no parallel of a whole people thus practically turning war traitor, and in the genius of no other people was ever found such masterful powers of secrecy and dissimulation; but it is needless to say that no powerful state was ever erected or ever can be erected upon such immoral and unenlightened foundations.

"Having established themselves in all the places of trust and responsibility in the new civil government and of power as insurgent partisans, these accused now commenced the difficult task of serving two masters. In all lawful matters they served with due appearance of loyalty to the American Government, while at the same time they labored secretly and diligently in the interest of the insurrection. In gross violation of the laws of war they secretly levied and collected taxes and exacted contributions from the people, who, with universal accord, submitted silently thereto. They held communications with the enemy, and in all ways open to them gave to the guerrilla bands aid and comfort. They next entered upon a series of murders, and continued their deadly work until the growing number of persons mysteriously disappearing from the community led to the discovery of these accused as the perpetrators.

"No native inhabitant of Taytay opened his lips to the American authorities concerning the crimes being committed and of which all had knowledge. It appears that, following the general instructions laid down by the insurgent chiefs, any man might be put to death by the local authorities if the public witnessed and approved the execution. Accordingly many of the people of Taytay assembled at night to witness the execution of the selected victims,

and stood by at a short distance until the dead were buried, when they dispersed and made no sign of what had been done. As in all like cases, the people were warned that certain death would fall upon any one who disclosed the truth to the Americans.

- "The foregoing statement of facts is not denied by the defense, but justification is sought upon the grounds that these accused were following out a course laid down for them in the proclamations of the Insurgent chiefs. To strengthen its contention the defense attempted to show that the murdered men deserved their fate, and that these accused were seeking the good of the community in taking their lives. * * *
- "It is therefore plain to the meanest understanding that so long as the simple-minded and benighted natives remain under the teachings that they have no rights or liberty of action other than their chiefs may lay down for them, they will remain the most pliable of all human material in the hands of designing leaders; and it is quite as plain that those leaders lack the intelligence, and in most cases the desire, even, to give them good government. That upon such leaders should fall the greater rigor of the law for instigating their more ignorant followers to criminal deeds, all fair-minded men must admit, and upon these leaders in future must the more watchful attention of all officers be directed.
- "The number of peaceful men who have been murdered in these islands at the instigation of the chiefs, while impracticable of exact determination, is yet known to be so great that to recount them would constitute one of the most horrible chapters in human history. With respect to these chiefs the Commanding General has, therefore, no other recourse than to invoke the unrelenting execution of the law upon them and to appeal to the intelligent and educated among the Filipino people to aid him by renewed efforts to end a reign of terror of which their own people are helpless victims.
- "In confirming the sentence in this case, regard has been had to the fact that the attempt of the defense to show, as a mitigating circumstance, that the murdered men were engaged in depredations upon the community, wholly failed. * * *
- "While all of these accused are guilty as principals, the Commission by its recommendation, and the Department Commander in approving the sentence, have recognized different degrees of their culpability.
- "The sentence therefore, in the case of Florentio Antonio, alias Prudencio, Pastor Santos, and Francisco Felizardo, alias Quicoy, and each of them, is accordingly commuted to imprisonment at hard labor for life, and their place of confinement will be the Presidio de Manila, to which they will be sent under proper guard.
- "The sentence in the case of Celedonio Javier, Pablo Anorma and Santiago Gadapia will be duly executed at Pasig, Province of Rizal, on the 5th day of December, A. D. 1901, under the direction of the Commanding General, Department of Northern Luzon.
- "In the case of Leonardo de Posoy, this accused, upon his arraignment, asked for and was granted a separate trial.

II. Leonardo de Posoy, a native. PLEA.—"Not guilty."

FINDING

Of the 1st Specification, 'Guilty.'
Of the 2d Specification, 'Guilty.'
Of the 3d Specification, 'Guilty.'
Of the 4th Specification, 'Not Guilty.'
Of the CHARGE, 'Guilty.'

SENTENCE

"And the Commission does therefore sentence him, the accused, Leonardo de Posoy, to be hanged by the neck until dead, at such time and place as the reviewing authority may direct, two-thirds of the members of the Commission concurring therein."

"In the foregoing case of Leonardo de Posoy, native, this accused, upon his request, had been given the privilege of a separate trial when first arraigned with his alleged associates whose names appear in the foregoing Charge and Specifications.

"From the evidence it appears that the accused had been educated for the priesthood, and about 9 years ago had been regularly ordained to his holy calling. Early in 1900 Taytay was given a permanent garrison of one company of United States troops, and the accused was there found in the regular pursuit of his calling as curate of the place. Through his advantages of education, his spiritual relations with his people and his active interest in their secular affairs, the officers in command and serving with the garrison, according to their testimony, found him to be the most influential man in the community.

"The accused cultivated the goodwill of the American officers and, responding to their wishes, promised to aid them by giving information that might aid in keeping the peace of the community. The people of Taytay were known to be in sympathy with the insurrection, but they were well within the lines of the Army of Occupation and were given every possible protection of life and property.

"To aid them further to return to the normal conditions of peace, the commanding officer, under the provisions of a general order of the Commanding General, authorized the people to organize a civil form of government for Taytay and to elect their own officers for its administration under authority of the United States. At this stage the special activity of this accused became marked. He was instrumental in getting the day set for the proposed election of officers for the new government, and put forward and caused to be elected as presidente, Celedonio Javier, an illiterate and bigoted man whom he well knew was an officer of Insurgents and whom he commended to the people as the best man for the office because he was 'bold.' Many insurgent officers, non-commissioned officers and soldiers of the dispersed Insurgent army had taken up their resi-

dence in Taytay, and from them were selected men for all the places of trust in the new government.

"Having constituted themselves a band of war traitors, under the protection of the Government of the United States and by fraudulent representations established themselves in office under American authority, this accused and his associates now entered upon a series of offenses in violation of the laws of war, such as enforcing contributions in aid of the hiding guerrilla bands, holding communications with them and giving them all possible aid and comfort. They had been instructed by the commanding officer not to attempt the punishment of any person, but to aid the American authorities in maintaining order and to limit their administrative work to the collection of the ordinary taxes for the support of the native police of the town, and for the maintenance of schools. Disregarding these limitations, this accused and his associates entered upon a series of most cruel murders, three of their victims, at least, being buried alive; the accused first confessing his victims before they were given over to the hideous and savage method of their execution. * * *

"That the accused had full power of life and death over the helpless victims of the conspiracy is clearly shown by his successful intercession in the case of a man from Teresa arrested at the same time with the Garivalles brothers. Concerning him the accused said:

'I only know this man from Teresa begged me to also beg the presidente to forgive him, in view that he is innocent and is only a traveler and was only arrested because he was there with the two brothers Garivalles.'

"The evidence leaves no doubt that upon the mere suspicion of some unkown offense this stranger would also have met his death but for the intercession of this accused; an intercession he admitted he could successfully intervene. ***

"Such in his own language is the defense of this accused, but from the testimony taken as a whole there arises no doubt that this accused was the chief agent in the series of murders, many still wrapped in mystery, which has made the name of Taytay a reproach to the Filipino people. While the victims of the murderous conspiracy were being subjected to a most horrible form of death and their number was steadily being added to, this accused, with shameless falsehood, was assuring the American authorities that all was peaceful and well ordered among the people of Taytay.

"That he found neither authority nor inspiration from his ecclesiastical teachers nor in the doctrines of his calling for his conduct, there can be no question. So, too, there arises from the evidence no doubt that he had sufficient intelligence to understand his true criminal relations with his associates and that he must have known and did know that it was his duty, both as priest and citizen, to inform the American authorities of the atrocities being committed by the people of his curacy. Why he did not so inform the lawful authorities can only be explained by the fact standing prominently out upon the face of the record, that he knew that he was a principal actor in these atrocious crimes and hence dared not confess his true responsibility for the same.

- "Even, however, if his responsibility extended no further than the suppression of the truth regarding the part played by his criminal associates, he would still be particeps criminis in these murders. His silence, however, owing to his relation as spiritual guide to a simple-minded and ignorant people, had the evident intended effect of lending a spiritual sanction to the criminal course of his co-conspirators. Upon him, therefore, unmistakably rests the chief responsibility for the crimes they committed.
- "His attempted defense upon the grounds that the confessions of the doomed men were privileged, and hence he was restrained by his sacred office to keep silent, has no value. The confessional does not lay upon any man, priest or layman, the obligation of suppressing knowledge of crimes being committed by third parties, the consummation of which could have been prevented without violating ing the secrecy of the confessional. But, in fact, his knowledge of these crimes was brought directly to his notice and was not gained through the confessional.
- "It is convincingly shown that the motive for these crimes sprang from the criminal purpose of this accused and his co-conspirators to rivet their usurped authority upon the people of Taytay. In the pursuance of this common purpose the accused forgot the teachings of the Divine Master whose law is the law of love, and wilfully entered upon the path of violence and crime. That he is guilty as charged there is no doubt.
- "The sentence, approved by the Department Commander, is confirmed and exact justice calls for its execution. However, out of respect for his calling and of the great religious organization of which he is a most unworthy member, the sentence is commuted to imprisonment at hard labor for the period of 20 years, and as thus commuted will be duly executed.
- "The reviewing authority, however, desires it to be understood that his leniency in this case shall not be taken as a precedent. No person living in these islands can be permitted to plead his office, however sacred or exalted, as a protection for crimes committed."
- "The Presidio de Manila is designated as the place of confinement to which the accused, Leonardo de Posoy, will be sent under proper guard.
- "By Command of Major-General Chaffee:

W. P. Hall Assistant Adjutant-General."

The two Taytay cases are leading within the jurisdiction of military commissions. Exequil Ampil, native, Presidente of Cainta, an Americanista, gave much data to Captain Howmand re outlawry in Taytay and testified for the prosecution in the Taytay case. Feb. 28, 1902 outlaw ladrones under Colonel Timoteo Pasay kidnapped him and terrorized his town of Cainta. General Wheaton ordered Captain Howland to rescue Ampil. Troops called out under emergency conditions encircled the area, pushed the bandits so relentlessly that—in fear—they did not kill Ampil, but dispersed, one by one, to save their own lives. Ampil was rescued. A detachment of American troops was stationed at Cainta to protect its President, Exequil Ampil. General Wheaton included the Captain's report on this with his own report, May 6, 1902.

The bravery in battle of General Lawton won admiration. He was killed by a concealed sniper's single shot, Dec. 19, 1899 near San Mateo, Province of Rizal, P. O. With the view of showing his respect, Captain Howland discovered the spot where Lawton was killed, had it marked temporarily and identified by photographs. He purchased sufficient ground upon which to place a monument, deeded the ground over to the United States, and handed the deed, with a plan and description of a proposed monument to be placed at that spot on that ground, to the Commanding General, Division of the Philippines, Major-General Adna R. Chaffee, on the evening of his last day in the Philippines—on that tour—May 27, 1902. A monument was afterwards erected on that spot and dedicated with proper ceremonies.

Captain Howland, Aide, sailed May 28, 1902 for San Francisco, where June 23, 1902 he was relieved from duty as Aide-de-Camp, and General Wheaton handed to him the following letter:

"San Francisco, Calif. June 23, 1902.

"Captain Charles R. Howland, Twenty-first Infantry, A. D. C.

"Dear Captain:

Existing orders from the War Department having directed me to proceed to my home to await retirement, which will take place by operation of law July 15, 1902, and the members of my personal staff having been ordered to join their regiments, our long official association now terminates. You have been one of my Aides since May, 1898 and have rendered me most valuable service in the field, particularly in the Philippine Islands, where you participated in the most important operations from Feb. 23d, 1899 to the close of the insurrection in the Islands, April 30, 1902. Your gallant conduct in many combats and battles has my admiration, and your thorough and efficient discharge of the many important duties devolved upon you has my highest appreciation. You not only have my esteem for your professional qualifications but my highest regard as an officer and gentleman. Although our official relations are at an end, the terms of personal friendship which have long existed between us will continue while I live.

"With wishes for your continued success in the profession of arms,

Very truly yours,

LOYD WHEATON,

Major General, U. S. A."

After sick leave Captain Howland began command of Company G, 21st Infantry, Fort Snelling, Oct. 11, 1902. In addition to training his Company, Captain Howland executed the following duties: as Judge Advocate, tried two officers, one at Fort Snelling, the other at Fort Meade, S. D.; member of board of officers which prepared draft of order for physical training and for practical and theoretical instruction of troops in Department of Dakota.

He had desired duty at Army schools at Fort Leavenworth, but was called to duty as Aide to Major-General MacArthur.

Before leaving the regiment for new duty he received the following letter from Colonel Owen J. Sweet:

"Fort Snelling, Minn. March 15th, 1903.

"Captain Charles R. Howland, Commanding Co. G, 21st Infantry, Fort Snelling, Minn. "My dear Captain:

By reason of my promotion, and being about to sever my connection with the 21st Infantry, of which I have been Lieutenant-Colonel since April 13, 1901, I take this opportunity of bearing evidence and pleasure in giving expression in commendation and meritorious recognition of your status, services and duties with your command, which were performed most of the time in my battalion and invariably under my personal observation.

"When you assumed command of your company it was in the usual war status condition of drill, discipline, and equipment, that resulted from its three years of hard and trying yet highly creditable and meritorious Philippine war service. You immediately instituted and carried out a most creditable system of persistent, consistent executive and administrative personal work until at this date its military standard in all that pertains to a company is the highest in the regiment and all due to your excellent judgment, zeal, energy and thoroughness and military comprehensiveness, which method of performing your duty is characteristic of your execution of every duty, all of which stamps you as one of our model company commanders.

"I have ever found in you an exemplar for your men as well as for your subordinates, in officer-like bearing, general deportment, military courtesy, and devotion to duty.

"A student in your profession and your ability, experience, and high status of efficiency, explains that, from your study and reflection, how creditably you keep abrest of, and up with the military methods, problems, and questions of the day.

"I have ever known you to possess tact and an intuitive knowledge of the eternal fitness of military things, and to be liberally endowed with that rarest of gifts—hard, common, military sense,—and to be most intelligently versed in your every duty, and to evince a fortunate and praiseworthy aptitude in the handling of troops and the exercise of command.

"In military law, legal acumen, practice and procedure in courts-martial, and and in the duties of Judge Advocate, I commend you in the highest as being highly and fully qualified to perform any duty of the most technical and important character that your Government may require of you.

"I regard you as one of the ablest and most promising of our young officers.

"I know you to be of irreproachable habits and exalted character, and to possess every attribute of the officer and gentleman, and I predict for you a successful career and a brilliant future.

I have the honor to be,

Very sincerely yours,

OWEN J. SWEET,

Colonel, 28th Infantry."

Captain Howland reported to General Arthur MacArthur May 19, 1903 and was appointed Aide to the General and detailed as Inspector of Small Arms Practice. The General had maps showing the Pacific Basin, including countries on its east and west shore lines, and islands therein. He told the Captain: "There will be a war for control of the Pacific Basin during your life time". He was a master strategist and used all of his available time to study that situation, record facts, and post the maps. Sometimes he would ask the Captain to assist him, and then he would say: "Control of the Pacific Basin is the greatest prize in the world, and only the greatest of all wars will solve that problem." From that instruction the Captain became greatly interested in that problem.

The General said to the Captain: "An Army that can use its weapons correctly has an advantage. There has been no target practice in this Department for several years. There is no suitable range for full-course target practice. Some of the officers have never seen a properly equipped range, and only a few of the enlisted are qualified. I have asked for your services here to solve that problem and I am sure you can."

As very few officers were qualified as instructors, the Captain's request that promising officers be selected at once and, on an emergency basis, be taught how to instruct in small arms firing, was approved.

After a hurried but careful reconnaissance, land was leased near Monterey, Calif., a temporary range was built and local infantry and cavalry at ORD Barracks were instructed in the full course. The range for general use that year for full practice and for department competition on rented ground was Benicia. The practice and also the Department competition were surprisingly satisfactory.

After an extensive reconnaissance, with a survey of many sites, the Captain selected and recommended a permanent range for full practice and competition, near Point Bonita; a part of which was on Military Reservation land, and the remaining needed land was private and could be purchased. That recommendation was approved. The problem of a satisfactory range for full-course target practice was solved.

Oct. 1, 1903 General MacArthur asked the Captain to solve the difficult problem of erection of a safe protected range at which practice could he held at 200 yards and 300 yards. The Captain prepared a plan with a sketch for such a range and submitted it to the General, Oct. 22, 1903 with estimate of material and cost of \$2232.82.

On Efficiency Report June 30, 1903 General MacArthur stated: "An exceedingly zealous and highly qualified officer who, within my personal knowledge, has shown exceptional aptitude both in war and peace."

When the time came for relief from duty with General MacArthur the General handed the following letter to the Captain:

"Headquarters, Department of California

San Francisco, Cal., Nov. 17, 1903.

"Dear Captain Howland:

My personal knowledge of your valuable services in the Philippines with General Wheaton, together with the assistance you have given me in connection with the important matters connected with target practice in this Department, induce a feeling of keen regret that the mandatory orders of the War Department are about to separate you from my personal staff.

"I am satisfied that your professional career, in the future as in the past, will be a source of pleasure to your friends, and beneficial to the service.

"I trust that the vicissitudes of the service will soon bring about a renewal of our pleasant associations; and in the meantime I remain with warm esteem

Very sincerely yours,

ARTHUR MACARTHUR"

Upon relief from duty as Aide to General MacArthur, the General reported that the Captain was "fitted for any duty to which assigned."

When General MacArthur forwarded the report of Captain Howland to the War Department, Feb. 9, 1904 he stated, inter alia, that:

"The annual report of Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Infantry, A. D. C., Inspector of Small Arms Practice, Department of California, is respectfully forwarded herewith, and in that connection, attention is invited to the many valuable suggestions embodied therein. The commendable zeal and ability this officer has shown in the performance of the important functions appertaining to the duties of small arms practice in this Department, recommend him for consideration as a qualified expert whenever the Department shall need the services of such an officer for any special purpose."

In addition to command of Company G, 21st Infantry, and usual Post work, Captain Howland was: President of a board to recommend rules and schedules for care and use of new gymnasium; instructor in International Law, Minor Tactics, and Troops in Campaign, and inspector of the organized militia of South Dakota.

Jan. 25, 1904 Colonel JACOB KLINE in a letter to Captain Howland stated:

"I thank you for your support as Instructor in Law and Minor Tactics and as Company Commander, for the example you have set for younger officers, and for the enthusiastic manner in which you have advanced the interests of the Regiment. Efficient, progressive, and zealous in your profession, you are certain to win advancement, and I shall always know that it has been merited."

The new Regimental Commander, Colonel WILLIAMS, stated that Captain How-LAND was "peculiarly qualified for staff duty but it would be a great loss to the line."

Under War Department orders Captain Howland reported May 16, 1904 to General MacArthur to construct the protected small arms target range at the Presidio of San Francisco, that he had recommended. Dec. 29, 1904 he had constructed 12 targets at 200 yards and 12 targets at 300 yards, and reported completion of the range.

Jan. 16, 1905 General MACARTHUR reported to the War Department:

"I am able from personal knowledge, to make a preliminary report to the effect that the range is a great success, and has effectively accomplished everything that was expected. It is not only safe in itself, but the practice thereon has demonstrated to my satisfaction that the general principles involved in its construction are susceptible of indefinite evolution and practical application to all distances and to all locations. For example, a range of this type can be located within the limits of a large city, or, for that matter, so far as safety only is concerned, in the center of a city. "I make the above recommendation for his assignment to special duty, preferably in the War Department, and if possible to the General Staff, for the specific purpose of insuring the rapid evolution and installation of protected ranges. His qualification for such work is so exceptional, and the work itself is so important, I suggest action, by telegraph, looking to his retention in this country, in the event of the Department regarding it as expedient."

Jan. 31, 1905 Captain Howland joined his regiment in the 21st Infantry—which was in San Francisco—enroute to war duty against Insurgents in the Island of Samar. That little war was called the Pulajane (red legs) Insurrection.

DAGUHOB, leader of the Insurgents in Samar, used religious and military methods. Those who feared him supported him.

On request for field service, Captain Howland with his good shooting Company, reinforced, was sent to Oras on the northeast coast of Samar, which was popularly called "the white man's graveyard." March 9, 1905 he relieved there two regular Army companies and one Philippine scout company.

The only building standing was the ruin of the stone church. The people, from fear of the Pulajanes, had gone to the hills. A previous garrison had used the burned church: as a fort, a barrack, a guardhouse, a supply warehouse, and a hospital. The relieved officer stated that: there were many false alarms; and natives would rush screaming to a refuge on the beach made by upending logs and tying and bracing them together. The Mayor and the local Padre remained.

The Captain put his command into tent camp on land of the church. After the relieved command had left by ship he sent for the Mayor and the Padre and said: "We have come to protect the people. Our soldiers are perfect shots." He gave an exhibition to them of the perfect shooting of his veteran soldiers, and said: that he had participated in most of the battles in the Aguinaldo Insurrection on Luzon, and knew that no hostile attack could be made on Oras without their previous knowledge; that there was nothing to fear; that he would not put the soldiers in the church; that there would be no more false alarms; that his soldiers could not tell the difference between screaming people and Pulajanes; that the refuge would be torn down and its logs would be used for building a dock; that if a false alarm should be staged, his soldiers could not tell whether the rushing people were merely frightened or were Pulajanes, and would shoot down all who might try to rush the town. He then said to them; that they should send word to the Pulajane leaders in the hills to let the Oras people come home and resume a peaceful life; and tell the leaders that "we are friends of the Philippinos" and that they should stop fighting at once. "We are not on the defensive and they know it."

By following those military principles the American Command "had prestige;" about 4000 natives, many of whom had been Pulajanes, came back to Oras, accepted protection by our garrison and took the oath of allegiance to the United States. They built their houses and brought food. A Municipal Government was organized and functioned loyally. There were no false alarms. With \$300 gold the Captain built an Army Post of 26 buildings with Philippine labor. With Philippine labor he built a dock out into the river for unloading of supplies from the periodic two-week transport. Fear disappeared.

The Pulajane leader sent in word that he would like to call on the Captain. The Captain replied: "that he could come with five leaders; but must leave all their arms

with my guard; and if the leader would designate the time the Captain would have him and his five join the officers at dinner." He accepted. They enjoyed the food, and said that they were not of Oras, but would take the oath of allegiance if permitted, and would return to their towns and work for peace.

Oras had become an American center from which the Captain operated at a distance against the wild Pulajanes. On one such expedition he, leading his men, started over a bridge that turned out to have been trapped, and fell upon the set sharp stake, but by a powerful lunge when falling, escaped a fatal wound.

From scouting and from information received from surrendered Pulajanes, Captain Howland sent to the Department Commander a complete organization table of Dagueros's forces.

Although he had no one to take his place, the Captain urgently and successfully recommended promotion of his 1st Sergeant, F. O. Smith, to be 2nd Lieutenant, Philippine Scouts.

Sept. 25, 1905 a typhoon blew down every building in the Post and town. The condition of the natives was pitiable. At daylight, under the Captain's orders, reconstruction of the Post began by Philippine labor, from the debris. The natives took heart. Some went for building materials, some for food, some worked on their own houses, and others with compensation worked on reconstruction of the Post. Aid was given to all nearby towns, and none returned to the Pulajanes. That action prevented a recrudescence of Pulajanism in northeastern Samar.

The policy and action by the Oras command won the loyalty of the natives there and in northeastern Samar: forced Daguhob and his forces out of that area; and prepared that formerly hostile area for use as a center from which operations were directed against the remaining Pulajanes.

Upon completion of the mission at Oras, the municipal authorities commended the American troops and their action in a letter of which the following is a translation:

"Oras, Samar, P. I. November 24, 1905.

"We, the municipal officials of this town of Oras, Province of Samar, P. I., representing the town, moved by gratitude for the many and good services rendered by Company G of the 21st Infantry, give this document as evidence thereof.

"The principal favor of which we have to speak is the pacification of the district which they have brought about. At the time they arrived here alarms were continuous, and for the protection of the inhabitants of the town the preceding company was obliged to fortify itself in the church and to make a strong inclosure in which the people could take refuge. A few days after the stationing here of Company G, that disappeared, as confidence had been restored and alarms were no longer frequent.

"Our gratitude therefor also moves us to mention the favors rendered us during the month of September last, not only by Captain Charles R. Howland, but by the officers and men of said company, in the difficult stituation in which we were placed by the terrible typhoon which struck this locality. During the succeeding days their kindness was extended to all whom they found in need, and they overlooked no means of bettering the situation in every possible way.

"Through all of this, and the good comportment displayed by them from the day of their arrival, and their irreproachable conduct, they have gained the appreciation and love of all of the inhabitants of this town of Oras, who recognized them as soldiers of the class that are an honor to their nation.

JORGE DONCERAS, Municipal President.

Leon Guardo,
Councilman
Francisco Nofies,

Councilman

MAMERTO MONCARE

Councilman

IGNACIO NEBRIDA, Coincilman Pablo Montances, Councilman

Damiano Mengote
Councilman

Gomes Montances, Councilman

Louis Sobremonte, Councilman

Antonino Montances, Councilman

Pedro Burgos,

Municipal Sec'y."

The Captain, after return to Regimental Headquarters, in addition to Company and Battalion command executed routine administrative duties there and at Department Headquarters, and detained a Japanese who with modern instruments was surveying the beaches near Calbayog and mapping them, as though they were to be used by a landing party. Superior Headquarters directed his release.

A rapid and somewhat effective insurrection having broken out in northern Leyte, the Captain was placed in command of the Second Battalion and ordered, Jan. 8, 1906 to prepare it for field service. Aug. 12, 1906 he was ordered to take two companies—leaving two on emergency call—and with his command to report at Camp Bumpus for orders for field duty. He was informed there that Abuyog was the critical area; that American control there would stop the spread south of the insurrection. His orders were to proceed to Abuyog and operate according to his best judgment.

On debarking at Abuyog at 7:30 P. M. Aug. 13 there were no natives in sight. Each house had a lighted candle in the window and the man of the house was standing there. That meant that the Insurgents had notified the town that they would enter and take over that night. The American arrival was just in time for a battle, but the Insurgents did not attack. By 3:00 A. M. Aug. 14 the Captain had his men and property under temporary cover and the command organized in a "position in readiness."

With a squad of sharpshooters the Captain went to the stone convent and sent word to the Mayor that a strong, friendly force of American troops had arrived and that the Commander requested him to come down for a conference. The Captain asked: "Where are the Insurgents?" The Mayor said: "They did not attack. They are in Barrio Bito, just to northwest." The Captain said: "I have a sufficient force here to defeat all of them in Leyte. Tell your people that we are establishing a permanent garrison here and that they should go about their business without fear." He then arranged with the Mayor for occupation of permanent quarters and warehouses the next day, the 14th. That day the command went onto a cantonment basis, with a written contractual agreement that compensation for the use of buildings would be the protection of life and property given.

At daylight Aug. 15 the Captain, with a strong column, advanced northwest seeking combat with the enemy, but they had fled north. Their camps were abandoned. The

country was scoured, not even a sniper remained. The Captain returned to Abuyog late Aug. 17.

The people of Abuyog were freer but not without some fear of the enemy. The Captain planned to discredit the enemy totally by daring them to contest his crossing of the island. With cargadores and guides he and his hard, tropically-trained command started in a driving rain at daylight from Abuyog over the difficult trail along stream bottoms, over Mount Nepga, through mud, and literally through leaches, reaching Bay Bay at 2:00 P. M. Aug. 21. The enemy did not accept the challenge. At daylight Aug. 22, with all present in good condition, he started back, prepared to fight at any point on the trail, but the enemy did not accept that second challenge, and he and his command reached Abuyog in good condition at 3:00 P. M. Aug. 24.

The fact that the enemy did not accept any of those daring challenges changed the attitude of the people at Abuygo and middle Leyte, from fear to realization of effective protection by the Americans, and those poor Philippinos with joy hurriedly resumed their peaceful pursuits.

Under War Department orders March 29, 1907 the Captain reported to General George B. Davis, Judge Advocate General, for duty. As an assistant he performed office-work duty of reviewing many court-martial cases, of preparing data for some of the General's Opinions, and of preparing draft for some of his Opinions and other documents. His first draft of an Opinion was adopted and became a leading Opinion. It held that in order that a State may qualify for sharing in the annual apportionment of the appropriation provided in Section 1661, R. S., as amended, it must provide an organization for its Organized Militia which is the same as that provided by statutes for the Regular or Volunteer Armies of the United States.

The town of Brownsville in Texas was "shot up" on the night of Aug. 13-14, 1906. Many investigations followed. As a result, 167 enlisted men in Companies B, C, and D were discharged "without honor" by Special Order No. 266, War Department, Nov. 9, 1906.

Under a Resolution of the Senate, its Military Committee was directed to take and have printed testimony for the purpose of ascertaining all the facts with reference to or connected with that shooting affair. It began the investigation Feb. 4, 1907. That investigation continued into March, 1909 without settling the issues involved. So, in the Act of March 3, 1909 the Congress passed the further investigation of those issues to the War Department with instruction that it appoint a Court of Inquiry to hear and report upon all charges and testimony relating to that shooting affair, and determine which soldiers, if any, so discharged without honor, are qualified for re-enlistment in the Army.

That Court of Inquiry met May 4, 1909 in Washington, D. C. The Recorder assembled from all sources all sworn statements by each person who had made any; digested such sworn statements by each such person; bound the sworn statements of each person and digest of same into a book, and furnished such a book for each such person to each member of the Court.

Nov. 8, 1909 Brigadier-General A. S. Dagget, U. S. Army, Retired, and N. B. Marshall, a lawyer, qualified as counsel, each to represent some of the men so discharged, and the Recorder recognized them as senior and assistant counsel for all such men.

Aug. 27, 29 and 30, 1909 the Court, with senior counsel present, held sessions at Brownsville to "take a view" and hear any new evidence offered. At each bullet hole in

a house the Recorder asked each member to look through the bullet hole from the inside of the house to see from whence the bullet came. Also he had a vertical plane extended to the ground and along the trajectory of the bullet backwards to the place from which the bullet was fired, and had such plane, trajectory, wall struck, and place from where the bullet was fired, traced on drawing paper for the record. Each such shot was thus found to have been fired from Fort Browne. Evidence was taken at each place where such bullets hit, and also along the route followed by the raiders through the town. Other new evidence was also taken.

Of the 167 men so discharged, the Recorder was not able to contact 45. Of the remaining 122 he presented 83 who were sworn and testified, and one who made deposition before the Court. Of the remainder of 39, one was dead, one was insane, and 37 for various reasons did not accept the offer of appearing before the court, in connection with their eligibility for re-enlistment.

March 23 the senior and assistant counsel addressed the Court, and March 28-29, 1910 the Recorder addressed the Court.

April 6, 1910 the Court stated its conclusions. Briefly, they were as follows:

First: Some soldiers at Fort Brown, Tex. "shot up" Brownsville, Tex. on the night of Aug. 13-14, 1906.

Second: If officers and men had complied with Army standards the shooting could not have occurred. Also, a careful inspection of the command immediately after the shooting would have discovered some of the guilty men. General Schwan did not concur in that finding.

A majority of the Court found favorably for eligibility for re-enlistment, 14 men. Generals Young and Sanger did not concur in that conclusion.

Brigadier-General John M. Wilson, U. S. A., Retired, recommended Captain How-LAND for promotion to the grade of Brigadier-General, as follows:

"Hon. Wm. H. Taft,

President of the United States.

"Mr. President:

Permit me to commend to your favorable consideration for appointment as Brigadier-General in the U. S. Army, Captain Charles Roscoe Howland of the 21st Infantry, U. S. Army. Captain Howland is now about 41 years of age, in the prime of life, full of physical and mental energy, about the same age as were some of our best and most distinguished General Officers who made such magnificent records during the great war of 1861-1865. I have known him personally for over 20 years, as he was a cadet at the U. S. Military Academy when I had the honor of being its Superintendent in 1891-1892; it was also my good fortune to serve on the Brownsville Court of Inquiry in 1909-1910, when the Court had the benefit of his valuable services as its Recorder.

"I regard him as a most able and accomplished officer both in peace and war, a man of great personal courage, and of the highest type of character."

After completing staff duty as Assistant to the Judge Advocate General of the Army, the Captain welcomed troop duty as the road to duty as student at Army Line School at Fort Leavenworth—so long delayed by other use of his time. Shortly after

reporting for duty with his Regiment he again requested assignment to such student duty and was told by Colonel Young, the Regimental Commander, that he had recommended approval.

The book entitled "The Valor of Ignorance," by Homer Lea, pointed out that a hostile Asiatic force could land on ocean beaches of Washington State, at Gray's and Willapa Harbors, capture the Navy Yard at Bremerton; Seattle, and the Strait of Juan de Fuca, and while remaining south of the Canadian border could hold the State of Washington by defense of the mountain range on the east and the Columbia River and the mountain range on the south.

As his Regiment—21st Infantry—was stationed in that area, the Captain was happy to study that problem on the actual ground described, and the fact that a maneuver problem, involving that very issue, was to be held soon, drew the Captain quickly to his Regiment.

The Captain, placed in command of a reconnaissance in force from Gate toward Oakville, developed enemy infantry and artillery fire July 26. The mission accomplished, that command was ordered to retire. It did by setting up successive fire lines of defense for protection of retirement to a fixed line of defense on that front. July 27 the enemy, taking advantage of heavy fog, advanced secretly over land deemed by the Blue Brigade commander impassable, and threatened the undefended Blue flank. The Blue commander directed the Captain to select a position suitable for a force of two regular and four Washington companies, with machine guns, to protect retirement of the Blue Brigade. The Captain did protect that retirement, but that retirement ended the maneuver in favor of the invading Red Force, on the morning of July 28.

He organized his company on a squad basis and recognized a corporal as the commander of his squad, and a sergeant as the commander of his section. The Regimental Commander then required all companies to use that squad system. He paid special attention to the non-commissioned Officers' School, and taught them how to be good citizens, good soldiers, and good commanders in their grade. He gave similar instruction to the privates on how to be good citizens and good soldiers. He informed them of their rights, privileges and duties as military men, and asked that they come to him to talk over anything on which they wished help or advice.

To cause them to love and be proud of their Company, and regard it as their home, he authorized them to organize boxing matches, comedy shows, musicals, etc., and always with a lunch for refreshment. It was successful and they asked permission to invite guests. He granted them the right to invite soldiers of good standing. He gave them plenty of well-cooked food for their meals, and made the holiday meals real feasts, and allowed them to print their holiday cards, stating their menu, and send with their good wishes to their "folks" and friends.

In the Officers' School, with others he studied the war game and practiced open warfare on the Military Reservation inder Lieutenant-Colonel John F. Morrison.

He was in close contact with the excellent Oregon National Guard and at their request addressed them March 11, 1914 on "Riot Duty." He participated in a Joint Camp of Instruction for Regular Army and Organized Militia of Oregon and Idaho, in 1914, under the leadership of Colonel Morrison, at Gearhart, Ore.

In 1914, instead of attending the Army school of the Line as a student, as he had planned, he was selected by the War Department to command the Pacific Branch, U. S.

Military prison, at Alcatraz, Calif., and change it to a Disciplinary Barracks, and to formulate and put into operation a plan for the rehabilitation of character of dishonorably discharged soldiers, with restoration to duty of those whose offense was only of a military character.

He found, on assumption of command Sept. 1, 1914 that he did not have jurisdictional control of the expected number of prisoners, which delayed the execution of his mission. Prisoners sentenced to confinement were held for labor by Department Commanders, and the prisoners received from other Departments were delayed in delivery at Alcatraz by the Western Department for the same reason. The Commanding General, Western Department, had an exercised authority: to limit the number of prisoners held daily at Alcatraz to the minimum required for routine duty there as laborers; and to require the commandant to send all the others daily to the mainland to work under the Department Commander. A detachment of prisoners for work daily at the rock quarry at Angels Island was kept there, contrary to orders. In addition, on recommendation of the Commanding General, Western Department, the prison was to be transferred to the casements of the long-abandoned "Old Fort Point," near the junction of the bay with the ocean, as a "detention barracks." That was associated with the plan of the Commanding General, Western Department, and the Commissioner-General of Immigration to use Alcatraz as an "Ellis Island" and exhibit it as such during the World's Fair at San Francisco in 1915.

While Captain Howland was faithfully preparing plans to meet his mission, the main obstruction was brushed aside by an "Act of God" Feb. 1, 1915 when terrific wind and water blowing from the ocean ruined Old Fort Point beyond use for occupancy by men. All the other obstructions mentioned above promptly fell, the prison on Alcatraz was changed to the Pacific Branch, U. S. Disciplinary Barracks, and complete jurisdiction over delivered prisoners was vested in the Commandant. Control in the War Department passed from the Judge Advocate General to the Adjutant General.

The base upon which the Captain proposed to build his plans was as follows:

"The objective in Life is to achieve perfect character."

The causes of the commission of offenses for which enlisted men are dishonorably discharged and sentenced to confinement are "Basic" and/or "Exciting." The Basic Cause in nearly every case is insufficient moral instruction during childhood by parents, and insufficient school education. The ensuing mental attitude toward moral obligations becomes habitual through lack of self-instruction. The restraint on such men is fear of punishment. The Exciting Cause in most cases is intoxication with its attendant desires and irritations, in connection with the immediate environment, which cause the man temporarily to forget the ensuing punishment.

The objects sought by sentencing such men to confinement are: punishment, which will have been effective when the prisoner shall have accepted his sentence as just, and has become willing to serve it in expiation of his offense; determent of others, which will have been effective when the example afforded is sufficient to deter others from similarly offending. Reformation will have been effective when there shall have been such growth of character fiber as will cause the man, after release, to lead an honorable life through choice.

Upon assuming command the Captain sensed the fact that the attitude of the prisoners was one of despair. He instructed the Chaplain to inform them that the statement:

"The Stone which the Builders rejected is become the Head of the Corner" (Mark XII:10)

should be their hope and standard, as the builders had rejected them; and each of them can become the head of the corner, if he will, and that the Commandant will give them a chance to do that.

It was a happy beginning. As rapidly as the situation permitted, the Commandant improved the conditions under which they were living. The food was not well selected or prepared and the diet was not well balanced. A new mess officer and a new mess steward corrected that, and the men looked better, worked better, and showed gratitude.

The knock-down and drag-out treatment of prisoners, the close cropping of hair, the use of the big, painted "P" on each garment of a prisoner, the humiliating inspection of almost nude prisoners on Sunday morning, the absurd system of absolute silence at mealtime, the folding of arms by prisoners in the presence of officers, were all stopped, and normal methods substituted. The destruction and filling in of the old underground dungeon was rated as constructive progress. A mirror was placed in each man's room so that he could appear with a clean face and hair combed. Two suits of clothes were furnished each man, one as a work suit and the other for use when not working.

The herding of men with change in assignment each day was changed to assignment—when possible—of each man to a permanent task which resulted in interest in their work. A half holiday was allowed on Saturday afternoon from work. Selected men from disciplinary companies, as ushers under direction of overseers, controlled the assemblage and dismissal of the prisoner body at church, moving pictures, concerts, etc. Selected prisoners for good conduct and work were designated as acting foremen under the direction of overseers, over labor of other prisoners. Selected prisoners for good conduct, attitude and intelligence were used at fatigue call to assemble a detail of prisoners, march it through the gate for checking, and turn it over to the overseer in charge.

Non-sectarian church service was held each Sunday morning with average attendance of 402, and religious song service each Sunday evening with average attendance of 211. Many stated that they received spiritual comfort from attending, and 27 openly declared their intention of living a Christian life. Many who were interested in the work gave books or money, with which 4510 suitable books were received, catalogued, shelved, and the drawings were more than 20,000 from that library. A reading room, where prisoners during scheduled time according to class could read current papers and magazines, was created and used by class during available hours. Moving pictures with censored reels were shown on Friday evenings to an average attendance of 447. Athletic exercise was limited to baseball. The four Disciplinary Companies each organized a team, and they played on the parade ground. The other prisoners organized two teams and played inside the wall. Two hundred and twenty-five games were played, all on Sunday afternoons. Letters to the parents were encouraged, and increased harmonious attitude by the writers.

The long-established bad custom of released prisoners selling their railroad transportation in San Francisco was corrected by escorting the prisoner to the train, turning his transportation with aproved form and receipt over to the conductor, who would turn same over to the released man at a designated place well distant from San Francisco,

which system was co-ordinated with the policy of furnishing the released men one, two, three-day lunch boxes of food as the length of travel home demanded. The forbidding, barren appearance of the island was corrected by planting on the sides, vines called "ice plant," bushes called "mallow," and eucalyptus trees, as all three live on water from the air. A monthly magazine called "The Rock" was published by the Chaplain. A copy was furnished to each prisoner and to others who were interested. Its effect on the prisoners was good. Many encouraging and congratulatory letters were received. The "Army and Navy Journal" stated: "Very beautiful in conception and noble in purpose is 'The Rock'." The "Post News," Vancouver Barracks, stated: "It is a magnificent purpose which at once raises its standard above the ordinary type of journalistic effort."

The Captain divided the prisoners into two groups: Those who had committed a criminal act, and those whose offense or offenses were military only and not criminal. The two groups were separated all the time. The criminal group wore black clothing. Those military offenders who were chosen for military training as candidates for restoration to duty wore Army-brown fatigue clothing at work and at other times the obsolete service uniform, with campaign hat and red band on the left arm above the elbow, with the number of the Company in white.

In the School of Instruction the free personnel became the faculty, to care for and instruct the prisoner personnel in the following three departments: Graded school education, vocational training, and military training.

The mission of the Graded School was to correct educational deficiences. The method began with music—as harmony was needed—one evening a week, at which popular melodies, college, patriotic and sacred songs were sung. On another evening each week, after singing the first verse of "America," instruction was given progressively by censored moving pictures and by lectures, which taught cleanliness, citizenship, character, etc. Upon promotion from that preliminary course, instruction was given in reading, writing, arithmetic, grammar, history of the United States, and geography. The attendance: at singing, 33,325; at motion pictures and concerts, 22,092; at courses beginning with reading, 7,360; and 734 graduated.

Arrangement was made for qualified graduates to take one or more courses in the University of California extension division by correspondence. One hundred and eight qualified for and took that instruction.

At release, the ratings of students in the Graded School on Morals and Manners were: courteous, 297; polite, 367; discourteous, 3; thoughtless, 40; uncouth, 38; rude, 6. The ratings on Character were: excellent, 16; very good, 244; good, 373; fair, 6; poor, 4; bad, 5; trifling, 31; mischievous, 64; vicious, 2. The ratings on Citizenship were: desirable, 536; undesirable, 215.

The Mission of the Vocational Training School was to discover for what trade each man was best suited and to teach him to become a skilled workman in that trade. The instructors were officers and civilian employes. The assistant instructors were enlisted men. This school functioned on the regular work at the barracks.

The principle upon which the instruction in this school was based was that an increase of a man's earning capacity is an increase of his power to resist the temptation to live by crime.

The courses in which instruction was given were: clerking, cooking, baking, stationary engineering, laundering, teaming, machinist, plumbing, blacksmithing, printing,

book binding, tailoring, carpentry, painting, masonry, cobbling, weaving, tool house man, gardener, bridge carpentry, street cleaning, barbering, janitor, quarrying and laborer.

In order to assist these trainees in getting a job after discharge, a nearly complete set of telephone books of cities and larger towns was collected, so that recommendation of a qualified man in a particular trade could be made to employers of such labor in the city or town in which such discharged man planned to live.

In the above courses 481 men graduated, and employment was secured for 383.

The mission of the Military Training School was to train those who had been convicted of military offenses only, in the duties and obligations of an enlisted man.

One of the reasons urged for transfer of prison (later barracks) was that there was no parade ground on Alcatraz for military training. That objection was overcome by cutting away enough rock to clear a sufficient area for close order training of a battalion with band.

For that training a battalion of four companies and a band were organized in which the officers and non-commissioned officers were from the two prison guard companies.

The training in ranks was in the school of the soldier, the school of the squad, the school of the section, the school of the platoon, the school of the company, and the school of the battalion, as required by the War Department for training of infantry. No ammunition was furnished, and the firing-pin had been removed from every gun used, to prevent accidents. The trainees were called "Disciplinarios." The object of their instruction, outside of ranks by selected officers and non-commissioned officers, was to turn their minds toward the growth of good characterial fiber.

Whenever a Disciplinario was restored to duty by the War Department, his restoration was emphasized. The Commandant had the Battalion Commander form the battalion. The Commandant then directed the restored man by name to march to the front and center, facing the Commandant, who then in the hearing of the man and the battalion, read the War Department order, and said—in the hearing of all:

"You are no longer a general prisoner. Your sentence is a matter of the past. Neither I nor any one has authority to lock you up as a prisoner. You are an enlisted man, a soldier, and this day counts on your enlistment as the next day's service after the day upon which you were dishonorably discharged."

That restored soldier was sent to the Quartermaster, who issued uniforms to him. He then went to the office of the Commandant, where under the National Flag, with the Commandant on his right and a sergeant drill instructor on his left, the flag was saluted, and the restored man read and signed the following:

'Pacific Branch, United States Disciplinary Barracks, Alcatraz, California. The Restored Legion. I love the United States. I love its institutions, its people and its flag. I am grateful for the privilege of again serving it as a soldier. I will give honest and faithful service during the rest of my enlistment and show by my attention to neatness of uniform, accurate execution of duty, and excellent conduct that I mean just what I say. I can do this. I will do it, and I will be true. I am a man and can be trusted."

The Commandant then congratulated him and clasped his hand.

Five-hundred and one Disciplinarios were restored to duty. Eighty-eight percent of them served through to an honorable discharge. At least one was commissioned as a second lieutenant, and nearly all of them served as non-commissioned officers in the war. Many who were trained but not restored, and many who were not trained militarily, did not claim exemption under the law and served honestly and faithfully during the war.

Under War Department authority the Commandant prepared a course of instruction, detailed a senior and an assistant instructor of the 13 non-commissioned officers selected,

who qualified and were commissioned in the National Army.

The faithful officers who assisted in this demonstration of making good men out of bad men, by changing their respective characters from "bad" to "good," were given credit on their efficiency reports.

Letters received from restored men, and from those who were not restored, who qualified in their Army service and in their respective trades in civil life, are inspiring.

At first the public regarded the proposition that characterial growth could change "bad character" to "good character" as absurd. But as Alcatraz Island was changed physically, so, many of the dishonorably discharged enlisted men who were sent there for training were changed in character from bad to good. The public gradually became aware of that demonstration and was intensely desirous of helping in any way possible. The article in the "San Francisco Call," May 15, 1917 on the subject of "The Road to Glory," brought approvals and congratulations to the Commandant from all over the country. The paragraph which states that:

"Last Saturday I stood on the parade ground at Alcatraz and was thrilled beyond any thrill I had ever felt at the sight of over 450 Disciplinarios as they passed in military review before their Commanding Officer, Major Charles R. Howland. They wore the uniform of Uncle Sam's service. The only difference between their uniforms and those of the regulars was a red band on each arm. The 'red badge of courage,' it might be called, for it tells the tale of an inward courage which has found the strength to fight and overcome the enemies—selfishness, idleness, revenge, and a dozen and one other hobgoblins which knock at the door of every human consciousness."

was the recognition that bad character had been changed to good character.

Another article, published in the May, 1917 edition of "The Redwood," Santa Clara College, entitled "The Gibraltar of San Francisco Bay," states in one paragraph that:

"That thought of making men of the prisoners, of so aiding them that after their release, whether they enter civil life or re-enter the Army, is the guiding principle of the regime of Major Howland."

Another article published in the January, 1917 edition of "Success Magazine" states "How Colonel Charles R. Howland, when commanding Alcatraz, proved to his charges that life was not against them, but that they had been working against life."

The Inspector General, U.S. Army, reported his inspection March 4-7, 1916 as follows: "The discipline of these barracks throughout is excellent; this condition is due, in my opinion, to the ability, energy, and zeal of Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Infantry, in the discharge of his duties as Commandant."

April 2, 1917 Major Howland asked for relief, and field service in the presence of the enemy. He was appointed a Colonel in the National Army, Aug. 15, 1917.

To help in continuation of the work, Colonel Howland, National Army, left for his successor the codified Regulations for Government of the Pacific Branch, U. S. Disciplinary Barracks.

Because of the dangerous situation in Mexico and the war in Europe, two generals under whom the Captain had served recommended him for promotion to the grade of General Officer. Major-General Jesse M. Lee, Retired, recommended Feb. 20, 1915 as follows:

"Though I am a retired officer, I most cordially recommend Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Infantry, for advancement when the opportune time comes.

"When I was in command of the Department of the Visayas in the Philippines, a widespread tragic insurrection broke out in the Province of Leyte in 1906.

"Captain Howland had an important command; with his untiring energy and splendid judgment he most successfully solved the difficult problem under his jurisdiction.

"I am familiar with his military career since he became a Captain. I regard his record and capacity as one of the best in our Army.

"I have an abiding conviction that Captain Howland is fully able in every respect to command successfully a brigade or a division.

"I commend him to the War Department, that his name should pass on the eligible list as a General Officer, when the opportunity arrives. At that time his conspicuous merits should receive due consideration. I believe this promotion would reflect the highest honor on our Army and country.

"I request that this letter be filed with Captain Howland's record in the War Department."

Major-General Loyd Wheaton, Retired, recommended March 10, 1915 as follows:

"Captain Charles R. Howland, 21st Inf., served under my immediate command and observation in the Spanish-American War, 1898, and in the Philippines in 1899, 1900, 1901 and 1902. I have a most thorough knowledge of his qualifications and capacity as an Army officer in the field in the presence of the enemy. His professional knowledge is excellent, and his action in time of difficulty and great responsibility merits the highest praise. Captain Howland I know to be Qualified for high command and in the event of war it will be for the interest of the United States that he be given command as a General Officer of Volunteers.

"I make this recommendation entirely in the interest of the service, and I request that it may be filed where it receives early consideration when the nation is next engaged in war."

Jan. 16, 1923 Major-General H. P. McCain recommended the D. S. M. be awarded to Colonel Howland for pre-eminent service as Commandant, Pacific Branch, U. S. Disciplinary Barracks.

The acute cause that involved the United States in the—then existing—World War was the sinking, without warning by German submarines, of the American ship "Algon-

quin," March 2, and three others off the English coast, March 18, 1917. The Congress declared war against Germany to be effective at 1:18 P. M., April 6, 1917.

Promoted Aug. 5, 1917 Colonel Howland, National Army, reported Aug. 25, 1917 to Major-General Thomas H. Barry, Commanding General, Camp Grant, at Rockford, Ill.

Colonel Howland was assigned to command the 343d Infantry, Aug. 25, 1917 by the Camp Commander. That Regiment was in the 172d Brigade. He assumed command of the 343d Infantry Aug. 26, 1917.

As the situation was new to the officers and enlisted men, schools were organized at first for all officers in the Regiment, and in each Company for all its non-commissioned officers. They met on all days except Saturdays, Sundays and holidays.

The Regimental School met at Regimental Headquarters, where it studied the administrative requirements for the next day, and training requirements for the next Training Day.

Later that day, in the Battalions the Company schools met and the Company Commander, assisted by his lieutenants, instructed the Company non-commissioned officers as to their duties in training the Company privates on the next Training Day. The Model System was always used when training the privates, and in this instance it greatly simplified the training of non-English-speaking privates.

When satisfactory efficiency had been attained in the School of the Company, under inspection of the Battalion Commanders and acting Regimental Inspector, a Battalion School was organized. Under that change, only Battalion commanders and staff officers attended the Regimental School, where the training of the Battalion as a unit was studied. Later that day, each Battalion Commander at his Battalion School instructed his Company officers regarding their duties in operating their Companies inside the Battalion at Battalion training on the next Training Day.

When satisfactory efficiency had been attained in the School of the Battalion, the Regimental School advanced to regimental war maneuver training on map and field problems under war-condition standards, in which each unit from Regimental Head-quarters down to the lowest unit, in each such problem, functioned as in war. Each unit commander was instructed how to make an "Estimate of the Situation," and how to prepare and issue his "Field Orders." Then written exercises were given and solutions were marked according to excellence.

For above instruction and field training, the Headquarters Company, Machine Gun Company and Supply Company were considered as a Battalion in the Battalion training period, and the senior Company Commander functioned as an acting Battalion Commander.

To emphasize harmony, regimental and company songs—in addition to camp songs—were selected or prepared. Those draftees loved that, and bound themselves together in harmonious singing.

Civilian public opinion, and especially the reporters of Chicago newspapers, believed at first that a regiment could not be built from the stockyard non-English-speaking men.

PAUL R. LEACH of the "Chicago Daily News" went below the surface to find out the facts, and published the following. Nov. 12, 1917: "There is a spirit among the selected soldiers and chosen officers in the regiment, composed solely of Chicago men, that is hard to beat in any military unit. It is a spirit that has brought a unity of action among the men and a fine willingness in everything."

After they realized that the problem had been solved, they named the regiment "The Melting Pot Regiment". Then Mrs. Ruth (Hanna) McCormick of Chicago, at a beautiful ceremony, presented a flag to the Regiment, on behalf of the wives and mothers of the men.

To replace the Pension Policy, the Federal Government adopted a Military and Naval Insurance Policy. On call by the War Department for a man "with Natural Gifts of Leadership, Popularity and Power of Clear Explanation," General Barry selected Colonel Howland who, in addition to his regular duties, at public assembly meetings by unit, insured officers and men for a total of \$112,623,000.

Dec. 1, 1917 the football game between Camp Grant and Fort Custer was played on Stagg Field in Chicago. Among the troops from Camp Grant was the 343d Infantry. The Chicago American, Dec. 1, 1917 stated:

"'Oh, what a change!' It was the universal cry of the thousands of spectators in the Union Depot as the first of the men came in, 700 of them.

"That crowd was there to witness the departure of the drafted men. They remembered the confusion, the shouting, the waving of hats and signs, the discordant cries, the little bands, the weeping mothers and sweethearts and wives. They remembered the men wore their poorest clothes and carried nothing but a few toilet articles. Today it was a new body of men.

"Here was marvelous discipline, soldiers detraining without confusion, with speed, with certainty.

"It was marvelous transformation. Under command of Colonel Charles R. Howland, this first section of the Three Hundred and Forty-Third Infantry formed into companies and marched with swinging, snappy strides out to the street, where they formed in line. The crowd was too overwhelmed at the absolute discipline, the grandeur, the splendidness of these boys to be over-familiar."

During the exceedingly cold Winter of 1917-18, training proceeded as usual, except that rifle practice on the target range was not permitted when temperature was below a fixed degree, and practice marches replaced other out-of-door training on very cold days. But on every training day the Regiment trained—as above—and the barracks were well aired and cleaned. As a result, the Regiment was the only one there which was not quarantined during that Winter, and the Regiment responded to the idea that "you can't be superior to the enemy unless you are superior to the weather."

The training was successful, and at the end of the 16-week period the portion of the Regiment that came in the beginning was ready for training in France. A considerable number of the enlisted men were transferred to National Guard regiments, leaving for France. The Regiment filled with new draftees whose training problem was easier, as they regarded the earlier arrivals as veterans.

The time had arrived for the Division to proceed to Port of Embarkation. The 343d Infantry was selected to send a Model Battalion through Canada, and join the Regiment at port of embarkation for passage across. The Colonel selected the Battalion of Major Marshall, and its high efficiency greatly impressed Canada. It arrived at Camp Mills too late—except its band—to sail with the Regiment Sept. 7, 1918.

After completion of all tests at Camp Mills, General NANCE, the Commanding General, told the Colonel that the 343d was better prepared for foreign service than any other Regiment that had passed through the port of embarkation.

The Colonel applied for earliest possible passage for this Regiment. In the Division convoy it was assigned to the British transport "Agapenar" which made Liverpool Sept. 21, 1918. The Master, Mr. Tillotson, in a letter stated that: "We esteem it an honor to have been entrusted with the care of such a splendid regiment, and our association with you will live with us all as a proud and pleasing memory."

The Division and Brigade Commanders went ahead. The Colonel was the senior with those troops, and after crossing from Southampton to LeHavre the night of Sept. 23, 1918 was the first with Colonel I. P. Swift, Division staff, to step ashore in France at 7:30 A. M. as the officers and men cheered. The band played the troops off the ship, playing first the "Marseillaise," "America," "Star Spangled Banner," the "Stars and Stripes Forever," then other appropriate music.

At the depot the next morning the Quartermaster reported with tears in his eyes that: "They have taken our Browning machine guns away from us." The Colonel replied: "They are needed now in the great, decisive campaign that is beginning, and we will soon follow." At daylight Sept. 28 the Regiment detrained at St. Andre de Cubzac and was ordered by the Receiving Officer to proceed at once to its billeting station at St. Loubes, where a Zone Major would assign billets. There was no officer at St. Loubes to receive or billet the regiment, and no arrangements had been made for such reception. The Mayor had died, and a representative of the Mayor, M. Common, was found by the Adjutant, Captain Poole, who produced an ancient billeting list prepared for French soldiers. The Colonel detailed Lieut. Col. Holdeness as Billeting Officer and directed him: to billet the Headquarters, Supply, Machine Gun companies, and the Sanitary Detachment in town; to apportion the adjoining outlying area into billeting areas for the three Battalions, and to billet the Officers in areas in which their troops were billeted.

The people were surprised. The French flag was raised at the Mayor's office building. The Colonel formed the regiment astride that building, with two columns of lines on each side—the band, the Colonel and staff in front. The Regiment stood at salute while the band played the "Marseillaise." That won the good-will of those French people.

The Colonel directed that the Regulations for Barrack Life would be applied to billlet life, and that the billets would be cleaned and placed in order for inspection at the end of two days. That was an easy task and gave the troops some chance for rest.

Under the Division Training Orders which were from Training Program, A. E. F., for the first month, the Regiment "struck its stride" as learned at Camp Grant.

Major Marshall's Battalion was exposed to an influenza epidemic on the ship "Olympic" on which it crossed. When they detrained for St. Loubes, Oct. 3, 1918 they were met by Colonel Howland who had ordered coffee for them. They were happy to join. The Regiment was united and happy and treated the emergency training, except trench warfare, as a refresher.

A limited number of selected enlisted men were sent to specialist schools.

Oct. 5, Colonel Howland and the Colonels of the other three infantry regiments left for attendance at a special course of instruction at the Army Field Officers' School at Langres, which session lasted to Oct. 20, 1918. Except for emphasis on coding, billeting, and trench warfare the instruction was nearly the same as given to officers of the 343d Infantry.

Upon return to the Regiment, Oct. 23, 1918 the Colonel found some influenza—evidently brought by carriers from the "Olympic." Emergency measures—especially by the medical personnel—restored the sick to health.

The emergency training for battle by all personnel was enthusiastically carried forward.

The great decisive campaign of the war was on. There were no replacements for the American Army. Its location was such that the decision would be made in its area. General Pershing wisely decided to use Divisions in France, but not yet on the battle line, as replacements, on an individual basis. The 86th Division was in that group. The official notice to break up the 86th Division into individual replacements came Nov. 1.

In addition to regimental command, Colonel Howland was temporarily in command of the 172d Brigade, and the last Brigade Commander to be present with the troops. He knew that his mission required him to take such action as was best suited to maintain morale of individuals in their new assignments, on the same plane as in their "mother" units which they were about to leave, and accordingly he commended the 344th Infantry, the Brigade Machine Gun Battalion, and the 343d Infantry. Not to have commended the 343d Infantry would have discriminated against that Regiment, and its individual personnel would have reported with lower morale to their new units.

In the case of the 343d Infantry there were three phases of service that required mention, and three commendations were prepared. They were received by the personnel of the Regiment most gratefully, but they were not available for use by the Colonel personally, because he prepared them. As Regimental Commander he had efficiency reports prepared for each officer, which included a statement of the particular service for which the officer was best qualified. He had service records prepared by each commander of enlisted men, which stated the service for which each man was best qualified.

All officers were present during preparation of commendation letters and efficiency reports, for simplicity, accuracy and speed in such preparation, by assisting the staff. Information received—informally—since indicates that the officers and men who went forward with statements of their service rendered creditable service to their new units. The staff was exceedingly busy: with above personnel work; with fitting detachments of officers and men for new units and sending them, with transfer or turning-in of equipment and supplies no longer needed; with preparation of the part of the command to proceed to Le Mans, for final breaking up of the units; and with auditing and balancing of company funds.

Nov. 6, 1918 the Acting Mayor of St. Loubes wrote to the Colonel as follows:

"As the hour approaches when you must leave our commune, I am happy in turn to express to you in my name and in the name of the population of St. Loubes the satisfaction that we have felt in having you with us and the deep regret caused by your departure."

Nov. 8, early A. M., the Headquarters Detachment, 172d Brigade, and 343d Infantry entrained for Le Mans and arrived Nov. 9, with the whole Regiment less replacements sent forward, and reported to the Commanding General, Major-General E. F. GLENN.

Nov. 3, 1921, Brigadier-General Charles H. Martin recommended Colonel How-Land for the Distinguished Service Medal and stated:

"Colonel Howland was in command of the 343d Infantry from the time of its organization in August, 1917 to November, 1918 when it was broken up to form replacements for Divisions at the front. By his unusual energy and resourcefulness, coupled with a keen sense of duty, he brought his regiment to such a high state of training and discipline that it excelled in all competitions with other regiments of the division. The remarkable esprit in the regiment is attributable in a large measure to the whole-hearted spirit with which Col. Howland undertook each new duty or camp activity. When his regiment left for France it was thoroughly trained and properly disciplined and would have undoubtedly given a creditable account of itself had it been sent to a combat division. Colonel Howland's services have been of such a high degree of merit as to warrant suitable recognition. I was in command, first of the 172d Brigade and later of the 86th Division, to which this regiment belonged, from August 25, 1917, to November 16, 1918, and had full opportunity to observe Colonel Howland throughout this period."

Under the Armistice, effective 11 A. M. Nov. 11, 1918 the Allies held three bridge-heads, each with a radius of 30 kilometers, west of the Rhine. The American bridgehead was occupied by the American Third Army, called the Army of Occupation, commanded by Major-General J. T. Dickman, whose headquarters was at Coblenz. It included the following Divisions: First, Second, Third, Thirty-second, Forty-second, and Eighty-ninth. The 165th Infantry (the 69th Infantry, National Guard, New York) was in the Forty-second Division commanded by Major-General C. A. F. Flagler, which Division was in the Fourth Army Corps commanded by Major-General Charles H. Muir, whose Chief of Staff was Brigadier-General Briant H. Wells.

Colonel Howland was assigned to command the 165th Infantry. After delay caused by error at G. H. Q. he reported—on telephonic orders—Nov. 17 to the Division Commander, Brigadier-General Douglas MacArthur, who assigned him to the 165th Infantry with confirmation later by written and signed orders. He found the 165th Infantry at Baalon under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Charles A. Dravo.

This Regiment, which had rendered magnificent service in many trench war battles, was fatigued almost to collapse. Improvement was needed along all lines—except personal courage. The Colonel felt his mission to be to: improve living conditions; clean, clothe, and equip for the advance to Remagen on the Rhine; enforce the blockade in that sector against Germany; be prepared and in readiness to attack or defend; raise training standards on general lines high enough to impress Germans; to satisfy General Pershing.

He assembled the officers and stated to them that the selection of the Regiment was a recognition of its great war record; instructed them to so inform their men; directed that inspections be made and requisitions prepared at once; and that at a suitable place on the march, "we would bathe, de-louse, clothe and re-equip, as a regiment; but that health demanded as much cleanliness of body, clothes and equipment as can be gained, now, by means at hand." He further stated that it was the duty of each officer to prepare complete data of service, beyond the demand of duty, of any officer or enlisted man under him or formerly under him, so that recommendations could be made for action by higher echelons of command, on the type and kind of recognition that should be given for such "above duty" action. He then said to them all: "Gentlemen, this great Regiment should lead in this Army. Let us do just that."

The advance from Baalon began Nov. 20. In four marches the Regiment reached Useldang in the Grand Duchy of Luxembourg, and remained there until Dec. 1. While

there, all were bathed, de-loused, and were issued new uniforms and shoes. All equipment for men and the train was cleaned and put in condition. Nov. 26 the Division Commander, General Flagler, reviewed and inspected the Regiment. After completion the General said he was "well pleased with the review and inspection." Nov. 30 the Colonel called on the Army Commander, General Dickman, and his Chief of Staff, Brigadier-General Malin Craig, in Luxembourg. They were old friends.

On the march, Dec. 1, from Useldang to Mertch, Colonel Howland started the innovation of bringing the rolling kitchens forward at the noonday halt, so that hot coffee, etc. could be served. There was a noticeable improvement in the morale, and the

men began to sing.

Dec. 3 the march was scheduled to cross the German boundary at Bollendorf on a bridge across the Sauer River. The advance guard consisted of one rifle company, one section of machine guns, and one 37 mm.gun. Lieutenant-Colonel Dravo; Major Lawrence, Surgeon; Major Duffy, Chaplain; Captain Meany, Adjutant; Captain Allen, Personnel Adjutant, and Mr. Boothby, a war correspondent, rode with the Colonel at the head of the main body. After crossing the bridge the Colonel and staff took position on the left of the road. Before reaching the bridge the band played "Over There." The band crossed the bridge, countermarched, took its place on the right side of the road and played the Regiment into Germany to the music of "The Red, White, and Blue" and "The Stars and Stripes Forever." Lieutenant-Colonel Dravo conducted the march beyond the bridge, while the Colonel and staff, with the Brigade Commander, Brigadier-General Caldwell, observed the march-past.

The nearby German people were all there. They were tremendously inspired when the tattered old flag came by. They all uncovered and stood transfixed. Afterwards they said to the Colonel "Guten Morgen." So many children were never before seen at one place by that command. Those children were all happy and smiling. The people assembled that evening at Retreat. All uncovered when the National Anthem was played, ex-

cept one man, and another German promptly knocked that man's hat off.

The hard roads, covered with about an inch of gravel and mud, literally chewed up the soles of marchers' shoes. A few English shoes came on requisition. After entrance into Germany, shoes needing repair were listed each day by the Organization Commander, and after arrival at billet were tagged, collected and turned over to the Burgomaster, who was instructed by the Colonel to collect enough cobblers to repair them before 4 A. M. the next morning, when they were to be delivered. The claim for compensation was signed as a voucher and left with the Burgomaster for collection and pay. In that manner the men were well shod for the march, and were grateful. No man fell out or was lost on that long, difficult march: a remarkable exhibition of grit and discipline!

Before arrival, Colonel Howland selected the guard personnel for duty in the Remagen sector west of the Rhine—including Remagen bridge. The orders to the guard—briefly—were that the blockade against Germany would be strictly enforced in the Remagen sector. No supplies: could be taken across the Rhine into Germany, except for American forces; could come out except empty cars or boats or other vehicles used for taking in supplies to American forces; and no German or American would cross the Rhine unless ordered by American authority.

Immediately upon arrival in Remagen the Colonel: assumed command of the Remagen sector; assembled the sector-bridge guard at a selected guardhouse; had that guard

divided into three reliefs; had one relief posted while the other two remained at the guardhouse as "support;" with the commanding officer of that guard he inspected the relief on Post and the support at the guardhouse, on knowledge of duties and how they were executing them.

The Colonel then—with the billeting officer and the Burgomaster—inspected the billets. He found some not good enough and instructed the Burgomaster to furnish better ones. He required the Supply Company, the stables and corral to be close together, and billets for Regimental staff to be near the billet of the Colonel. He ruled against use of the castle on the hill for headquarters or quarters. He directed that Headquarters would be near the bridge, that the hospital would be near the city hospital, and that the assembly place for each organization would be near the billet of that organization. He then gave instructions to install communication lines essential for an emergency "Alert."

The local problem that required immediate and continued attention was threat to health by dirt left by the German troops in the town, and contagious and infectious diseases including typhus fever. The Burgomaster was instructed to clean the town and keep it clean from dirt from a sanitary point of view, and to carry out strictly the instructions of the exceptionally well-qualified Regimental Surgeon, Major George J. Lawrence, who was present. Major Lawrence is entitled to credit for the fact that from Dec. 1, 1918 to Feb. 20, 1919 there were no deaths in the Regiment, and that the percentage of sick was less than in any other organization in the Division. The percentage of enlisted sick was only eight-tenths of one per cent. and of officers only seven-tenths of one per cent.

Local skilled labor was used for cobbling and other repair work, and claim vouchers for such labor were approved.

The Regiment attracted much attention. One instance: Christmas Day, 1918 Burr MacIntosh attired as Santa Claus motored in with barrels of candy and cigarettes for the Regiment. After dinner, as guest of the Colonel, he visited the companies at their sumptuous Christmas dinners. All were delighted, and Burr asked, "How did you do it?"

A 30-acre tract of land, south of Remagen on the west bank of the Rhine, was set aside as a drill ground for the Regiment. It was subdivided to meet the need of all organizations in the Regiment.

Dec. 26, on other ground, the Colonel selected areas for target practice with infantry regiment arms. Two small arms target ranges, one of six targets and the other of 12, each offered practice at 100, 200, and 300 yards. A machine gun target range for each Battalion was established. Ranges for one pounder guns and for trench mortars were established. A "strong point," ample for protection against fire by small arms machine guns, one pounder guns and trench mortars was established, and a bayonet range was prepared.

On request for a well-trained expert in small arms practice, Colonel "Sandy" McNab, the Small Arms Staff Officer at G. H. Q. inspected the situation at Remagen and had Captain Brookshire attached to the Regiment as Inspector-Instructor of Small Arms Practice, Jan. 12, 1919.

The training in care and use of animal transport, including all equipment, and cleanliness, attracted attention and the Regiment was selected to demonstrate to the rest of the Division the proper care of animals, transportation and equipment, Feb. 15, 1919.

The condition of its kitchens, supply rooms, mess-halls, and the manner in which its food was prepared and served, won first place for the Regiment in the Division.

As it became generally known that the Germans would not counter-attack, and that the 165th Infantry would soon return to New York, the Colonel prepared, Feb. 21, a drill schedule for two weeks, with emphasis on review and inspection, and training daily in preparation for the review and inspection of General Pershing, the Commander-in-Chief, and in preparation for reception of the Regiment in New York.

The Colonel's mission with the 165th Infantry (69th National Guard of New York) was completed. In his farewell order to the Regiment, Feb. 22, 1919 he stated:

"The Regiment is now being prepared for its return to the States, which it is hoped will be in the near future, and the undersigned, who remains in the Military Service, will always entertain the kindliest feeling for those who have served with him in the 165th Infantry."

That day he bade Regimental and Brigade officers goodbye at 8 A. M.

The war in all its phases was over, and troops were being returned to the United States. General Pershing was intensely interested in sending them back clean, healthy, creditable and happy. Instead of giving them leaves to roam over Europe at will, he established Leave Areas and selected 10 Colonels to command the Leave Areas.

Colonel Howland was selected to command the Herault Leave Area at Lamalou les Bains.

Eight thousand three hundred and eighty-eight men came from the First Army for about two weeks each. The Colonel took action at once under the French law against sale of strong, intoxicating liquor by the French in that Area. All men on arrival were formed into organizations with responsible officers and non-commissioned officers over them, and they were under correct but not harsh discipline while there. At once the Colonel instituted the system of meeting all the men on leave shortly after their respective arrivals, in the theater, on which occasions he considered quite informally, and apart from the military idea, the ethics which govern the enlisted men in the matter of wearing the uniform and caring for it; the salute, the proper treatment of the French and their private property, the use of intoxicating liquor, and the dignity of a soldier.

Those meetings proved most profitable, and increasingly so, and it was a pleasure to commend the men of the last Cadre (29th Division) to their Division Commander as follows:

"These men while on leave in this area have acted as self-respecting Americans might be expected to act in time of peace, who would visit this place for the purpose of rest and a desire to see something of France and French life. The men are an exceptionally fine exhibit of American manhood and their conduct has been excellent. I commend them to you and I congratulate you on having such well-behaved soldiers in your command."

The food, the living rooms, and in fact everything that made for physical health and mental poise, was inspected by an able staff.

The Y. M. C. A. furnished entertainment for the soldiers. April 19, 1919 Hon. WILLIAM E. SPRATT, Divisional Y. M. C. A. Secretary, A. E. F., in charge of Y. M. C. A. activity in that Area, sent the following letter to the Colonel:

"In one's life we meet and make friendships that we cherish and hold forever. I am indeed grateful for the opportunity to have been associated with you in the co-operation of the Soldiers' Leave Area work over here in France. I shall never forget your kindness and consideration. You have been so helpful, thorough and efficient in your position as ranking officer in command of this soldiers' Leave Area, that it is with pleasure that I count it my good fortune to have been with you."

The Colonel closed that Leave Area at midnight April 25-26. April 26 he forwarded to the Chief Leave Area Bureau his formal historical and statistical report which he ended as follows:

"The officers and enlisted men under my command have all faithfully executed the respective duties assigned to them, and I commend them. I also commend the Y. M. C. A. for an excellent execution of the difficult obligation assumed by them of furnishing entertainment to these homesick American soldiers."

Under General Pershing's policy of preparing troops to return home as qualified and happy soldiers, Colonel Howland was selected April 29, 1919 to so train personnel to be forwarded to the port of embarkation at Bordeaux, and Camp Shannon was created that day for his command.

The camp was promptly organized as a School of Practical Instruction in which instruction and training were given in: Preparation and service of good food; Military discipline, courtesy, loyalty, proper wearing of the uniform; personal and camp clean-liness; preservation of health by control of appetite, and not exposing oneself to contagion or infection; physical exercise by group calisthenics and athletics; entertainment at camp moving picture theatre; drill, individual and by group; marching without and with music; preparation for creditable appearance and conduct after arrival in America; preparation for suitable occupation after muster-out in America; ceremonies without and with music. No sickness originated in Camp Shannon.

General Pershing visited the camp and inspected each man in the line of columns, and was Reviewing Officer for the following Review. After completion of the ceremony he delivered an address, in brief as follows:

"You are soon to return to the States and I want to give you some correct data to talk about after your return, as you are to be important men in your home community. You will remember that in 1917, when we entered the war, our friends the Allies were nearly exhausted, and when in 1918 Germany brought fresh troops from Russia, the situation in which the Allies found themselves was very dubious indeed. I decided to throw in some American divisions that really had not been prepared for the battle. They went in separately, where greatly needed on the Allied line, and won locally, and the final decisive action of the war was conducted by American troops solely, viz. in the Meuse-Arggonne."

The men listened with the greatest respect and all applauded freely when he finished.

Colonel Howland took three days' leave of absence with permission to visit Paris and 10 days leave of absence without permission to visit Paris. June 16, 1919 as a guest at the Hotel des Reserviors in Versailles, he was the only American officer to see the French

rudely push the draft of the Treaty across the table at 6:39 P. M. to the German representatives, and later in the evening to hear and see the booing and hooting by the people as the Germans left their quarters for the train about 11:00 P. M.

Colonel Howland, assigned to command of troops on the naval Transport "Santa Ana," assumed command June 26, 1919. He organized the troops as a unit, gave necessary instructions for administration; compliance with orders of Ship's Commander; cleanliness, entertainment, exercise, religious services, morale, and debarkation. The life aboard the transport was not merely that of passengers, it was that of a well-organized, disciplined and happy military command, prepared to obey orders and instructions at once under the best custom of movement of troops by ship over the Atlantic ocean. Emphasis was placed on building and maintaining good morale. July 4, patriotic addresses were to the assembled troops by the Transport Commander, Charles H. Lawrence, Lieut.-Commander, U. S. N. R. F., and by the Commander of Troops, Colonel Howland. Also the whole command was entertained by a boxing tournament, tug of war, three-legged race, potato race, sack race, obstacle race, vocal solos, song and dance, and an original musical playlet.

The transport carried 1266 Troops, 24 Officers, 57 French brides of men aboard, one civilian, four welfare workers, two Army nurses and 80 general prisoners.

All statistical reports were prepared, and there was no delay in debarking.

At inspection, July 5, 1919 Captain LAWRENCE, Ship Commander, stated that "the ship's compartments were cleaner than they had ever been before."

The Colonel emphasized contentment, happiness and high morale. He commended staff and command officers for efficient execution of their various duties. In pursuance of the idea of high morale he gave a prize of \$10 for the best original song composed by an enlisted man. The one composed by Sergeant William H. Naber, 234th Company, Military Police Corps, was selected, became popular at once and was sung singly, in groups, or by all together. It was as follows, to the tune of 'No Man's Land:"

"Hello, Central! Give me U. S. A.

I want to say
That I am coming
Back to the Land I know
For You we fought the foe.
Your Sammies never did blunder
But gave the poor Heinies thunder.
They were not afraid to chase the HUN;
They thought it fun.
So now we're coming.
I used to dream about you in my sleep.
Your liberty we'll always fight to keep.
Good bye, Central! I am coming HOME."

Detail as a student at the General Service School at Fort Leavenworth, Kan., met the long held desire of Howland. He finished the 1919-1920 course as an honor graduate, and qualified to attend the Army Staff School.

During the Summer of 1920 he conducted a short course, Minor Tactical Training of R. O. T. C. Infantry, Camp Devens, Mass., by order of the War Department. With

the assistance of six Lieutenants from the Infantry School at Fort Benning, Ga. he formulated and conducted instruction of 191 students on: Military information; military security; estimate of a military situation; military verbal orders; attack in a meeting engagement; and attack against a prepared position. One hundred and seventy-six won a rating of 75% or higher, and several were later selected as Second Lieutenants in the Officers' Reserve Corps of the Army.

He commended the Fort Benning Lieutenants for "valuable assistance," and was commended by the Camp Commander, Colonel George J. Holden, July 23, 1920 as follows:

"You put on your course with tact and efficiency, and the students attending are unanimous in their expression of appreciation of your efforts."

The mission of a student at the General Staff School in 1920-21 course was to win "Eligibility for General Staff Duty" and "Eligibility to attend the Army War College." He became eligible for both.

In addition to routine duty of an instructor at the General Service Schools he delivered map-projected lectures on: the Russo-Japanese war; General U. S. Grant's conduct of war; the American Expeditionary Force; the World War as a whole; and strategy.

The Commandant, Major General H. E. Ely, directed the Book Department to publish the lectures on the World War as a whole in book form.

Professor Ralph H. Gabriel, Department of History, Yale University, wrote Dec. 3, 1927:

"It is incomparably the best military history of the war."

General Charles G. Dawes stated, Nov. 12, 1923 that:

"I have read it and regard it as the most wonderful contribution to the history of the war I have seen. With its great perspective and unusual condensation, it gives the reader a bird's-eye view which I did not think anyone would be able to get in this generation."

Colonel F. W. GLOVER, President of the Command and General Staff class, stated May 16, 1923 regarding the strategical study of the World War:

"The Command and General Staff Class, 1923, Fort Leavenworth, U. S. Army, to whom Colonel Howland presented this subject in the form of a series of lectures, are unanimously of the opinion that it is the best and most scientific course of instruction in the Principles of Strategy and Grand Tactics that has ever been given in our service. It is a master text book on the art of war."

Colonel Howland did not desire duty as Instructor, as due to service from 1907 to 1912 in the office of the Judge Advocate General, War Department, he did not accompany his regiment to foreign service, and was due for foreign service while at General Service Schools, and desired to go forward to the Army War College, and to go on foreign service after completion of the course there. But he yielded on announcement of War Department Policy, A. G. O. Nov. 8, 1921 that officers detailed as instructors "have assurance that they will be detailed for course at Army War College on completion of duty as instructors at General Service Schools," which policy was confirmed in paragraph 2, letter

A. G. O., Dec. 22, 1922 which stated that he would be detailed as student for the next course at Army War College. But he was not so detailed, and over protest of Major General H. E. Ely, Commandant, Army Service Schools, the War Department ordered him to foreign service "in accordance with position on the roster."

The Transport "St. Mihiel" sailed Nov. 20, 1923 from New York for Colon, Panama, with Colonel Howland in command of troops. The health of the troops was excellent and none entered the hospital. Among other recommendations, Colonel Howland urged that fresh fruit be made available for sale by the ship's commissary, as it was not included in the ration, and that Army transports be equipped for moving picture entertainments when at sea.

Assigned to command the 14th Infantry, Colonel Howland arrived at Cristobal, C. Z., Dec. 4, 1923 and was assigned to the above Regiment.

The enlisted strength of the regiment was so reduced that they were used almost entirely on post upkeep work, at expense of military training. Some companies were rationed and messed with other companies, and the morale of the enlisted men was low. The morning and evening gun was not fired. As the duties of officers were accordingly decreased, they had almost complete control of their time except officers engaged in administrative work.

The first advance in fostering morale was to require obedience to orders. Compliance with War Department orders that forbade serving of intoxicating liquors on an Army Post, was required. Each Company Commander was required to submit ration returns and to conduct a company mess. The firing of the morning and evening gun was resumed. Training programs were issued and training even in small numbers was required. As recruits arrived they were trained in the companies.

Colonel Howland installed an enlisted men's club and library on the Post where the men read the papers and magazines, and had their dances. Indoor and outdoor athletics were emphasized by companies, battalions, and by the Regiment, and the regimental basket ball team finally won and held the Canal Zone championship. The baseball team finally defeated the other Army teams on the Canal. The Regiment did well in boxing and in all field day contests.

Gradually the men of the regiment remained on the Post in the evenings to attend the excellent moving picture shows. Prizes were given for superior execution of certain activities. As recruits came and men began to re-enlist in the Regiment, recommendation was made that barrack capacity fix the strength of the regiment, which was finally approved, and the Regiment was greatly increased in number. With pride the companies celebrated holidays with special dinners, and mailed the menu and songs to their home folks and to friends. The establishment of a Regimental Recreation Center high up on Mount Bruja, where it was cool, above the mosquito plane, where fresh, cool, potable water flowed freely and wild turkeys could be lifted from low limbs of trees at night, was used for weekend passes and longer furloughs. As no government money was available the Regiment raised \$3000 by contribution, with which Captain Cloud constructed a suitable concrete swimming pool which gave satisfaction to all. Those proud men and officers of that Regiment subscribed a contribution of \$1,000 to gain a "bay" for the 14th Infantry in the new stadium at the Infantry School at Fort Benning, Ga.

During Department maneuvers for 1925 Colonel Howland's Regiment represented a hostile force brought to the shore of the Canal Zone and landed there by a hostile fleet

on the Pacific side, with the mission of stopping passage of vessels through the Canal, by damaging the Canal. He and Lieutenant Crawford, Regimental Plans and Training Officer, reconnoitered the beaches and land terrain on the Pacific side, and the Colonel prepared his plan. He with his Regiment (less detachments left at Post), 37 officers and 658 enlisted men and a pack train which would join after the landing by the troops, constituted this attacking force against the rest of the troops on the Canal, consisting of two Infantry Regiments, Coast artillery, field artillery, engineers and air forces, etc. of over 8,000 troops.

At the close of the joint Army-Navy maneuvers the following commendation was received April 10, 1925, Captain W. B. Wells, Commander U. S. Special Service Squadron, U. S. S. "Rochester" Flagship, addressed a letter to the Commanding General, Panama Canal Department, U. S. Army, on the subject: 14th Infantry, U. S. Army, participation of in Army maneuvers, Canal Zone, April, 1925.

"The Commander, Special Service Squadron takes this opportunity of informing the Commanding General, Panama Canal Department, U. S. Army, that during the night of 7-8 April, 1925 with the 14th Infantry embarked on board the USS Cleveland and Rochester they came directly under his personal observation. During this maneuver which included embarkation, transportation, disembarkation and landing of the troops, every detail was carried out as previously arranged for.

"The Squadron Commander was impressed with the excellent discipline of the troops which characterized all their movements. These were carried out in almost complete silence, the men in single file when embarking in boats, both at the landing in Balboa and on board ship, kept well closed up without crowding or lagging. This was also noticed and commented upon by ships' officers when the men were served with food and coffee.

"The discipline of the 14th Infantry was one of the factors which tended to make the maneuver a success and the Squadron Commander desires to congratulate the Colonel commanding this organization upon the excellent conduct of his troops under trying conditions."

H. Q. P. C. Dept., Quarry Heights, Balboa Heights, C. Z., April 16, 1925.

"To Commanding Officer, 14th Infantry, Fort Davis, C. Z. Thru Commanding General, Panama Canal Division, Fort Amador, C. Z.

"For his information and that of the regiment. The Department Commander forwards with much pleasure this appreciation of the showing made by the 14th Infantry while associated with the Navy during the recent maneuvers.

WM. LASSITER

Major-General, U. S. Army, commanding".

As the date of his departure approached, Colonel Howland was the guest of honor: of the officers of the Regiment at a dinner party; of the non-commissioned officers at a dinner party; of the Brigade Commander at a dinner party, and on their own initiative the officers and enlisted men in regimental formation under the command of Lieutenant-

Colonel H. M. Nelly, as an escort guard of honor marched to the dock at the harbor, where amidst friendly expressions of goodbye and inspiring music by the band, the Colonel boarded the S. S. "Manchuria" Aug. 4, 1926 en route for New York and duty as a student at the Army War College.

Colonel Howland reported at the College Aug. 15, 1926. The Commandant was Major-General Hanson E. Ely. There were 76 Officers of the Regular Army, 16 of the National Guard and Officers' Reserve Corps, and officers of the Navy and Marine Corps in the class.

The course included: an Informative Period in which instruction was received from lectures and committee work; a War Plans Period which was subdivided into a War Plans Course in which Army-Navy Joint Plans and plans that flow from them were prepared for training purposes; a Command Course which advanced instruction on practical lines to the execution of map maneuvers, field exercises, command reconnaissance, Army-Navy joint exercise; and a Co-ordination Period in which there were practical studies of the operation of a staff as a whole.

After graduation Colonel Howland was detailed as a member of the General Staff and assigned to duty as Chief of Staff of the Third Division, whose Headquarters were to be at Camp Lewis, Wash.

The Third Division did not then exist. The Colonel was happy to win a new duty rather than routine or maintenance duty. The Chief of Staff, General Charles P. Summerall, instructed him to convey verbally to Brig. Gen. R. P. Davis, designated to command the new Division, the directive to expedite the organization and training of the Division so that it could be used efficiently in defense against a hostile invading-force, or overseas offense against an enemy. The Colonel arrived at Camp Lewis, Washington State, before the Commander of the new Division, and upon his arrival delivered the above message. Colonel Davis said: "You prepare orders for organization and training for my approval." But his stay was to be but brief. War Department orders Feb. 15, 1929 assigned him to command the Fourth Brigade with the rank of Brigadier-General and he and his personal staff, Lieutenants Read, A. D. C. and Stanton, A. D. C. reported departure from Fort Lewis and started for Fort D. A. Russel, May 21, 1929.

Fort D. A. Russel had been neglected for many years and General Howland assumed command May 26, 1929. He was tendered by the officers and their wives—with many civilian guests—a reception May 31. His inspection of the Post, of Pole Mountain military reservation, and of the troops, showed: that the 76th Field Artillery was ready for war, but Fourth Brigade and Post troops were not so ready; that Post upkeep and administration was not efficient—except hospital; and that neither the Post reservation, because of incorrect location of housing, nor Pole Mountain reservation, because of woods, homestead areas and lease limitations, had capacity for a two-sided maneuver by the garrison troops.

The public funds for that fiscal year had all been expended, and greatly restricted allotments of public funds were foreseen because of the approaching depression. But he was under instructions from superior Headquarters, "Upkeep is of the same importance as military training, and must go on with training."

To balance the duties on a time schedule, the forenoon was designated as Tactical Day, except that target practice, field training, inspections and special occasions were not so limited; the afternoon of work days as Administrative Day, which also included thero-

etical military instruction including schools; Wednesday and Saturday afternoons for athletics and recreation.

Military training was controlled by orders from superior Headquarters, and the following general principles;

Troops must become superior to weather conditions in order to become superior to an enemy.

Modern types of warfare must be considered and used to the extent practicable. Because of the barrenness of the terrain, troops were taught protection by concealment, and by anti-aircraft fire by available weapons, against hostile aircraft. Leaders on each level of command must be given the opportunity to develop their own teams and be responsible for results.

In maneuvers: care should be exercised that initiative is not killed by too drastic decisions by umpires; as a rule, officers who have been through a maneuver have been able to size up their own faults and do not need a public and humiliating reminder; and senior officers should not overrule the authority of the senior umpire. The two-sided war maneuver is the best activity for training troops.

Senator Francis E. Warren reviewed the Frontier Day parade July 24, 1929 in Cheyenne. He referred to the troops from Fort Warren as follows: "The troops of this Command made a better impression upon me than has previously been made by any other troops of the Regular Army."

Senator Francis E. Warren died Nov. 24, 1929 in Washington and was buried in Cheyenne, Wyo., Nov. 28, 1929 with honors due a Major-General, by the troops from Fort D. A. Russel. In honor of the Senator, who was Chairman of the Military Committee of the Senate, the War Department changed the name to Fort Francis E. Warren.

In honor of her late husband, Mrs. Warren donated \$1,000 for the planting of 200 American elm and 135 European white birch trees on Warren Avenue, Fort Warren.

Mrs. Warren donated \$1,079.37 and Mr. Fred Warren, son of the Senator, donated \$500 for construction of the beautiful gate now at the entrance to the fort.

Two American-captured German howitzers were purchased and placed as an essential part of the gate by General Howland.

As soon as funds were available the roads were oiled, and alfalfa was planted in the barrack and stable areas to stop the wind-carried dust and gravel nuisance, and a wide windbreak of small evergreen trees from Pole Mountain and other places was transplanted on the exposed side of the Post.

A new ward and an elevator, added to Post Hospital, made service available there for dependents of officers, of warrant officers, and of enlisted men.

The Post exchange was improved and enlarged sufficiently to meet the needs of personnel in the Post in sale of foods not furnished by the commissary, and in sale of confectionery, tobacco, soft drinks, gasoline and lubricants.

The buildings had been neglected, and looked almost like buildings in a ghost town. Requisition for paint, held as surplus at various depots, was approved and buildings were repaired and painted under "Upkeep Program."

The period from Christmas to New Year's Day was observed as a holiday, except for necessary upkeep, including supply and administration and any emergency work.

General Howland kept "open house" New Year's receptions for all officers, their ladies and their guests.

The custom of a Post Christmas tree, in addition to unit organization trees, was started and resulted in much happiness.

The improvement in food served to enlisted men was carried forward by use of an Instructor in Mess Management until the men preferred barrack meals over restaurant meals in the city.

To stop trespassing and fires incident thereto, the Fort and Pole Mountain Military Reservations were fenced and posted.

Two of the three bachelor apartment (club) houses were changed to apartment quarters for married officers. Six one-story barracks in the 20th Infantry area were repaired, and additions made it possible for men to go from one part of such barracks to another without going out of doors. Additions were made to the fire house and roads made for quicker action in case of fire. More roads were built to the hospital to expedite receipt there of emergency cases. The laundry was enlarged so that it could do the work for the whole Post. The new buildings erected were: one quartermaster barrack; six noncommissioned officers' quarters; and four officers' quarters.

In the beginning, Lieut. Read organized a polo team and set up a field. Great interest was aroused, and Senator Warren and many others in Cheyenne hired parking space along the field which at first financed that activity. Promptly a Post athletic and recreation officer, and athletic officers in the regiments, became active, and training and competitions were held to the satisfaction of the whole command in: polo; baseball; football; boxing; ladies' polo in the riding hall; children's riding classes in the riding hall; golf; tennis; basket ball; bowling; skating; horse shows; enlisted men's transportation shows; which produced local competition and competition with teams from other places. The moving picture show house was improved and new pictures were shown each day, once in the afternoon and twice in the evening. It was popular, and the War Department 20% dividend on net profit built up a fund for financing athletics.

The books in the library increased to 1500 fiction and 1800 non-fiction and were widely read.

A Service Club was organized by enlisted men under supervision of the Post hostess who acted as chaperon during dances and entertainments.

The Officers Club was improved. Regular scheduled parties were held there once a month with dinner parties and dancing. The first Little Theater in the Army was installed there for the production of amateur plays, by Lieutenant Stanton, Aide.

The ladies of the Post organized a Music Club, a Study Club which produced several plays a year, and four weekly Bridge Clubs.

Hunting and fishing in the vicinity were much enjoyed by officers and men.

Every Sunday afternoon there was a ride to the hounds by officers, ladies and civilians, followed by a tea at the Officers Club.

Request that 17,500 acres adjoining the Fort be purchased so that service practice with the 37-mm. guns, and with the 75-mm. guns could be held without endangering life or property beyond the Post boundary, finally brought the purchase of 1600 acres.

Request that unoccupied public land on the road (Happy Jack) between the reservations be added to Pole Mountain Military Reservation, for use as camping places or "points of resistance" in maneuver problems, was approved and several such parcels of unoccupied land were granted as requested (1357.G. O. 5, July 6, 1931).

Envisaging that more than a mile high area, as a crossroad of traffic over the Rockies, and along the eastern slope of the Rockies, where a great airfield or base should be located rather than ground troops, in a continental or global war, General Howland's recommendation that a radio station and associated radio-beacon be placed there was approved, and the Post was used in World War II as a Base.

To correct the feeling of isolation, a finished road and a sidewalk were built from the inhabited part of the Post to connect with road and sidewalk to Cheyenne.

To shorten marching distance, a road and bridle path were built from the Barracks through Crow Creek Valley to the Happy Jack road.

In response to a request by the Chamber of Commerce of Cheyenne that some troops participate in "Cheyenne Frontier Days," the greatest rodeo in the World, Battery C, 76th Field Artillery was selected. By galloping into action and firing blanks over the crowd, that battery "stole the show," and each year thereafter it was staged last to hold the crowd. The Chamber co-operated by furnishing a ticket for each officer and enlisted man then and thereafter. In 1930 the Chamber of Commerce in a letter to the General stated that it was "deeply grateful for your co-operation which made possible the staging of the best Cheyenne Frontier Days celebration during its 34 years of existence."

The General, Lieutenant Stanton, Aide, and Mr. George E. Brimmer, guest, with a reinforced battalion under command of Major S. M. Montesinos, participated in the "Covered Wagon Centennial" at old Fort Laramie, Aug. 15, 1930. Thousands of people were present. The Old Post was occupied as "a going concern." The ceremonies by the command, and the final "Retreat" ceremony when the flag was lowered, thrilled the people and made the men of the command very proud.

Having stopped the dust and gravel stones by oiling the roads and by planting alfalfa, it was clearly to be seen that evergreen trees and more evergreen trees in the windbreak and elsewhere were necessary to slow down the severe wind storms from the Pass. Lieutenant-Colonel George C. Lawrason, 20th Infantry, with prepared detachments rendered exceptionally fine service under difficult conditions by having dug and prepared more than 1000 young evergreen trees at Pole Mountain and elsewhere, which were transplanted in the windbreak or in the nursery at the Post.

Mr. George E. Brimmer of Cheyenne, who was intensely interested in forestation and its importance in public welfare, in parks, and use of trees, bushes and flowers for adornment, became interested in our problem, and at his own expense purchased a tremendous number of suitable trees of various kinds for use on the Post, in parks in front of the regimental and staff areas, and for use in the windbreak. He helped in all endeavors. He even had a full-grown evergreen tree successfully planted in front of the Commanding General's Quarters which, when decorated with colored electric lights, attracted the attention of all. It was called "The Christmas Tree." That and the benefit from the forestation activity put a little Christmas tree in nearly every home on that Post.

From the remnants of the old artesian well and tank water system, a greenhouse was made, in which evergreen seeds were planted, raised and transplanted. Thousands of those little trees, if still living, are standing guard as protectors of the Fort against wind storms. Under the protection of those trees the Post—more and more—became a homey place in which there was much happiness. In the Crow Creek valley 6,232 trees were

planted. In the shelter belts 11,590 trees were planted in one Winter, and many other thousands were planted. Not only did they make the people in the Post happy; the birds came and, being happy too, sang for them.

The increased interest in athletics could not be satisfied without a properly equipped field. To meet that need a modern stadium was planned, and when constructed it gave great satisfaction. It had a capacity for football, baseball, running track, field and track events, horse shows, carnivals, etc. No public funds were available. However, it was started in the belief that its necessity would eventually promote its completion. Mr. Brimmer, a public-minded citizen of Cheyenne, became interested and turned over to the Bowl Fund \$4,875 donated by those interested in the improvement of Fort Warren. It was known by all, that complete jurisdiction was in the Commanding General, Fort Warren. At its dedication Oct. 15, 1930 with proper ceremonies, General Howland stated that:

"This Bowl stands as a monument for fairness, loyalty, comradeship, and justice."

Its ground capacity was 600 feet by 450. There was ample seating capacity for spectators. That Bowl met a great need at that Post.

The designated next Chief of Staff of the Army, Major-General Douglas Mac-Arthur, visited Fort Warren Nov. 3 and 4, 1930 on his way to Washington. He was received in due form, and after completion of his Inspection stated:

"I desire this command to know that I have formed the finest impression of the individuals and of the units stationed here; that the officers and men are all clean and in excellent uniform; that they excel in military bearing; that the equipment, the animals and the arms are all in excellent condition; and that the command is magnificent in its marching and in the rendering of ceremonies."

Major-General William Lassiter, commanding Eighth Corps Area, in a letter July 24, 1929 to General Howland stated:

"At my inspection of the activities at Fort D. A. Russel on July 17, 18, and 19, the troops serving at Fort D. A. Russel, and the Post itself made a most favorable impression upon me. The troops struck me as alert and soldierly. The combined training being carried on for the Reserve Officers, Reserve Officers Training Corps, and for the Civilian Military Training Camp appeared to be progressive and effective. The Post was well kept.

"I desire to express to the troops under your command and to you, as the Commanding General, my appreciation of the high standards being maintained."

Major-General J. L. Hines, commanding the Ninth Corps Area, in a letter to General Howland stated:

"I thank you very much for your kindness in cooperating with the National Guard of the State of Wyoming in arranging for their use of the facilities at Fort Warren.

"As Corps Area Commander I appreciate very much your action in helping the National Guard in carrying on their training."

Six school busses from the Board of Education were sent on request so that the children of the Post could attend school in Cheyenne.

Dec. 3, 1931 General Howland was informed of a change of station to Fort Sam Houston, Tex.

The Officers Reserve Corps bade the General goodbye at a beautiful banquet at 6:30 P. M. Dec. 7.

Dec. 10 the Chamber of Commerce and civic clubs of Cheyenne bade him goodbye at a farewell banquet. Governor Clark spoke on that occiasion.

Dec. 16 the General left Fort Warren. On initiative of the command, the troops lined both sides of the street from his Quarters to the gate, and as his car passed through, those troops stood at attention. When he reached the gate a battery of the 76th Field Artillery fired a salute. The procession to the station was headed by the combined military bands of the Post, which played military airs and "Auld Lang Syne" at the station. It was a moving experience for even a seasoned soldier.

He assumed command of the Third Brigade at Fort Sam Houston, Tex. March 19, 1932 after a leave of absence with his brothers in Cleveland, O. At a West Point dinner that evening, when called on for remarks he responded briefly and stated that West Point's principal objective was to develop officers of superior character and who are always loyal to those above, and to their obligations to those below them in rank.

He inspected his Brigade, including barracks, equipment, supply, and allowance of time for athletic or recreational activity, and found that most of the men were working as laborers under orders of the Post Commander, because funds were low for hiring civilian labor, but the local press claimed it added to unemployment, and nothing was saved to the Government.

Preparation for the approaching annual maneuvers May 12-26 occupied the attention of such portion of the Brigade as was available. That maneuver was two-sided, with the Second Division defending against a hostile reinforced cavalry brigade, in the Area (north to south) Christine-Tilden (map of Texas, Grid Zone D); boundary between friendly Blue State and hostile Red State, grid line 545. The Blue and Red. G. H. Q. Commander and Chief Umpire was Brigadier-General Dorey, Commander of Second Division. General Howland commanded friendly infantry under General Rockinbach, the Blue Commander.

Believing that it is well to know what the objective is before an important undertaking, the General opened the Brigade Officers Troop School in Tactics with statement of a "Bird's-eye View of Strategy." That approach to tactical instruction was new. It was eagerly received. On request of the "Infantry Journal," permission was granted to publish and it was published in the May-June, 1933 issue of that magazine.

As with previous commands, emphasis was placed upon athletic competition. In all such activities the units in the Brigade produced exceptionally fine teams, and the Brigade brought out the champion polo team in all that general area.

Oct. 4, 1932 he spoke to the Scientific Society of San Antonio, of which he was a member, on the subject of "Individualism," which on the initiative of the Society was published and the reaction was favorable.

The request for General Howland to speak at the State Convention of Reserve Officers of Texas at Galveston, April 22, 1933 was approved by the Corps Area Commander. Upon arrival Major Clark W. Thompson, Reserve Officer, reported as Acting

Aide. On and from that date grew a friendship. The Major later was called to a seat in Congress, and during World War II to exceptionally valuable service in higher grades in the Marine Corps.

Very briefly—we quote:

"My friends, let us consider together for a few moments the growth and present status of our policy on preparation in peace for war. During the past three centuries the nations of Europe maintained large standing armies in peace in order to be ready for war. The service of those soldiers was forced. Usually they served far from home on a mere pittance for pay, with the result that the people hated standing armies in peace.

"The news slowly filtered down that in America a man could make his home and raise his family without being forced to serve in a standing army in peace-time. The early immigrants came for other reasons, but the later ones came quite generally to escape forced peacetime military service. Our wars of defense against the Indians and against Great Britain were fought on a voluntary citizen-soldier basis. When our long, difficult and heart-breaking War of Independence was over it was clearly understood by all that if there had been a corps of good and well-trained officers the victory would have been won more quickly.

"The long struggle for such a corps of trained officer, finally under President Madison succeeded in a steady flow of such officers from the Military Academy, sufficient to meet the needs of victory in the Mexican, Spanish-American, Philippine and Boxer wars. But that supply of officers was not enough to meet the needs of the first World War, and officers were furnished from extemporized training camps.

"It was and is clear to all that if under the advice of Washington we are to 'Prepare in peace for war' without maintaining a large standing army, we must prepare and have on the rolls an ample supply of well-qualified officers for all phases of war, in the Regular force, in the National Guard, and in the Reserve Officers' Corps. We must never permit ourselves to measure the needs of defence by merely filling the peacetime positions. NO! Most emphatically NO! We must maintain in peace the potential number of officers for all conceivable phases of the next war.

"Never again should the door be slammed in peace through which trained officers must come for their war duty. If we do that we will win the victory in the approaching great war."

Due to a serious accidental injury, the permanent Commander of the Second Division was hospitalized, and General Howland assumed command of the Division and Post July 8, 1933.

The Corps Area Commander required the Division and Post to absorb the Texas District of the Civilian Conservation Corps.

The General prepared his directive for absorption and operation of the C. C. He directed that the General Staff at Second Division and Special Staff at Division and Post would be used for C. C. duty, in addition to their other duties, and that the C. C. C. records would be kept separate from Division or Post records, but that they

would be kept at Post headquarters. That directive in full statement of detail of operation was approved July 11, 1933 by the Corps Area Commander.

He detailed Lieutenant John H. Hinds as acting Aide-de-Camp.

By June 28, 1933 the field organization had progressed to 24 camps with two sub-District headquarters, and the activity was proceeding in a normal way under the national plan. A method of competition between camps was initiated and in September, 1933 the work camp at Blanco won.

Sept. 12 request was made, and later approved, for use of some Captains, O. R. C. as Camp Commanders.

Sept. 8, 1933, Division and Post maintenance and repair orders were issued.

Under Corps Area policy, requests were made July 28, 1933: for a new War Department Theater, the cost to be paid from War Department theater funds; and for a new Officers' Club House, to be built from Army appropriation funds. Both requests were approved and buildings were eventually erected.

Sept. 16, 1933 a recreation program was issued, which was much needed at Fort Sam Houston.

March 27, 1934 General Howland was informed of his assignment to command the Second Division upon departure of Major-General Dorey.

April 3, 1933 he recommended Colonel Ovenshine for promotion to Brigadier-General. He was so promoted and was assigned to the Third Brigade.

The annual Maneuvers were held at Camp Bullis. The hostile force was represented by a small detachment which operated with flags.

General Howland assumed command of the Division May 20, 1934 while on maneuvers at Camp Bullis. He inspected: the command there May 22, 23 and 24; the Fourth Brigade at Fort Warren June 4, 5, and 6; and the Second Engineers at Fort Logan June 8 and 9. All units were satisfactorily prepared for active war service except that the Second Engineers was short of officers.

At Fort Warren and at Cheyenne he was received in a most friendly and hospitable manner. A banquet was prepared by the Chamber of Commerce for June 5, for General Howland. That afternoon the Secretary of Agriculture, the Hon. Henry Agard Wallace, came to Cheyenne. So, as of higher rank, he took precedence at the Banquet and in his speech stated:

"It is up to right-thinking Republicans and Democrats to support our policy of retiring acreage from production and provide a market for foreign products."

As Division Commander General Howland issued the necessary orders for military training in all its phases, and also orders for administration, maintenance and up-keep, and orders encouraging athletics and recreation, at scheduled periods.

He emphasized the policy of providing activities for pleasant and constructive occupation of time outside of strictly military training, for officers and men and their families. Just treatment of those serving under him; ample and suitable quarters on the Post for all; food and other necessary articles for sale—on limited credit—by the commissary and the Post exchange; Officers' Club; Service Club for enlisted men; library with books, magazines and current newspapers; recreation facilities for all; clubs made suitable for dancing and dinner parties; limited credit at the War Department theater; playgrounds properly equipped for children of officers and of enlisted men; athletic

facilities for officers and enlisted men; baseball park; football stadium; field and track courses; polo field; golf course; boxing rings; basketball courts; horseback riding for ladies and children in the riding hall. And in the cases of enlisted men who returned voluntarily from absence, trial by inferior courts for "absence without leave." instead of triel by general court-martial.

The benefits to enlisted men were much appreciated. For instance, preceding his assumption of command of the Division, the entire Division had seldom gone longer than two or three days without cases before general courts-martial. But under the above policy, by Nov. 11, 1934 two weeks had passed without a single case before a general court, which was a new record. At Fort Sam Houston the policy was surprisingly effective. Formerly there were more than 200 soldier prisoners crowded into a guard house insufficient for such a number, and an entire battalion of soldiers was required for prison guard duty.

When the General assumed command of Fort Sam Houston a fine new guard house was nearing completion, with capacity for a large number of prisoners. But after installation of the new policy the number of prisoners dropped to 37 by September, 1934. He used the greater part of the new guard house for other purposes, as it was not needed for confinement of prisoners. His trust in enlisted men was thus exhibited, and that trust was not broken by them.

As Post Commander, in addition to war training military orders he issued orders to direct and control: Administration; maintenance; upkeep; repair; athletics; recreation; and decentralization, viz., if the incumbent of an office could legally issue instructions, such instructions should not be issued by a superior officer.

In co-operation with the local Air Corps Commander he furnished needed ground troops in November, 1934 for filming of the moving picture "West Point of the Air."

Every assistance was given to the Constructing Quartermaster on new construction of: ninety-three officers' quarters; 94 non-commissioned officers' quarters; a general hospital; a dispensary; a modern Post exchange; an officers' Club house; a motor pool; a radio transmitter building; and divers warehouses and shops.

The Constructing Quartermaster courteously and efficiently greatly assisted in construction of the new War Department theater. During the period from condemnation of the old rickety and non-fireproof theater to dedication of the new, modern air-cooled and fireproof theater, the moving picture exhibitions were out-of-doors at a specially prepared central place on the parade ground.

The old Officers Club, in the cantonment area, was changed to "Service Club" for enlisted men and their families.

The destruction of the old cantonment buildings, to make space for the new construction, furnished salvage material, with assistance from War Department theater profits, sufficient for the construction of a football stadium, with capacity for football games, field and track events, and horse and transportation shows, with ample seating capacity for the eager "fans" and others who wished to see the sport. Here the courteous Constructing Quartermaster assisted in plans and gave advice on construction.

What was needed most of all for outdoor athletics was a modern baseball field. Decision was made to build such a park. The funds came from profits of the Post exchange, and here again the Constructing Quartermaster helped with plans and in the construction of a modern baseball park that was the best in all that area.

Incident to that new construction, new roads were built, and the training and ceremonial field between the quarters of officers and non-commissioned officers was leveled and graded. That field was named after Lieutenent-General Arthur Macarthur, who served with great distinction in command of American troops in the Philippine Islands during the Spanish-American War and the later Philippine Insurrection, and still later as Governor-General of the Philippine Islands. A new map of Fort Sam Houston was made and the new fields, roads, etc. were named after other distinguished officers.

July 7, 1934 the General assumed command of the Eighth Corps Area during the

temporary absence of the permanent Corps Area Commander.

Under the policy of motorizing the Army, the last review of the celebrated Third Wagon Company, Oct. 29, 1934 was noted generally, as it became the Seventh Motor Transport Company.

The Secretary of War, Honorable George H. Dern, was accorded the honors befitting his position Nov. 2, 1934, and stated that he was "much pleased with the review and with the conditions at Fort Sam Houston."

In the Texas District C. C. C. great progress was made. There was careful selection of Officials at District Headquarters, at the several sub-District headquarters, and at each camp headquarters. Clearly-stated instructions were issued for all phases of that activity. The training was of rotating groups, with more than 10,000 enrollees under training all the time in 42 camps. Inspection of all camps and sub-detachment headquarters was efficient and constructive. The low cost of \$4,671,996.76 for maintenance of that activity from May 20, 1934 to Feb. 15, 1935 was due to use of Army personnel for whose services the only charge—practically—was cost of travel. That non-military instruction: in how to live out-of-doors in a field or in the woods; in how to work; in how to live pleasantly with those over them, with other workmen, and with those under them, was constructive and did not injure self-respect, as they realized that they were attending a school of instruction on fundamental lines, and were not on relief.

On request by the War Department on him as Division Commander, General How-LAND forwarded July 24, 1934 to the Adjutant-General, U. S. A. a plan to provide for promotion in the Army.

In compliance with request by a War Department Board on revision of training methods, he forwarded his plan Aug. 12, 1934 and received a letter from that Board Sept. 29, 1934 which stated:

"It is desired to thank you for your valuable comments submitted in connection with the revision of training methods. These comments have been of great assistance to the Board."

The General's mobilization assignment, effective M-Day, was commander of the VIII Army Corps. The appropriate rank for incumbency of that office was Lieutenant-General.

He learned later that Mr. Sheppard, Chairman of the Military Committee of the Senate, introduced a bill relating to retirement of Brigadier-Generals of the Army, as follows:

"BE IT ENACTED BY THE SENATE AND HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA IN CONGRESS ASSEMBLED, That any brigadier-general of the line of the Regular Army

who has been or will be, upon the date of his retirement for age, actually executing the command duty of a major-general of the line and who has, as a brigadier-general of the line, actually executed the command duties of a major-general of the line for a total of one year or more shall be retired as a major-general or, if already retired, be raised to the grade of major-general on the retired list, but in either case with the retired pay of a brigadier-general."

Brigadier-General Howland had exercised the command of a major-general, viz. a Division, for more than a year and was retiring from a major-general's command.

The War Department ruled that such promotion would be contrary to its policy, as there was not sufficient time before his retirement for him to exercise command as major-general of a Division for one year.

The period just preceding his retirement was largely taken over by the command, and by organizations in civil life. Officers of the Reserve Officers Corps gave a farewell dinner to him Feb. 13, 1935. When he was called on for remarks, he said:

"In the past our country has waited until attacked before preparing for war. Our present preparedness plan for: a small Regular Army, a larger National Guard and a large group of Reserve Officers is a good basis—as far as it goes—for instruction of the large army needed for the approaching war, but even that plan cannot be used unless sufficient appropriations are made before the enemy attack.

"Having commanded Regular Army, National Guard (Federalized) and Reserve (National Army) Regiments, I can state that if properly trained and commanded they will all do equally well to the extent of their ability in whatever is required for the protection of our country. In fact, they are now ready to do for our country, what your heroes did at the Alamo."

General Howland held open house on his 64th birthday, Feb. 16, 1935. On initiative of the command, in the presence of a great assemblage, the troops, just motorized, bade him goodbye in a beautiful review.

The officers of the Post of Fort Sam Houston honored him by a reception, dinner, and dance, Feb. 23, as the first social function in the new Officers' Club House.

The non-commissioned officers of Fort Sam Houston honored him by a dinner in the ballroom of the St. Anthony Hotel in San Antonio. When the toastmaster called on him for remarks, he said:

"Non-commissioned officers are the backbone of the Army. Officers come and officers go but the non-commissioned officers remain, and preserve the organization, and keep the spirit of their unit alive. You are dependable and loyal. Our country trusts you, and I know that its trust will not be broken."

He relinquished command of the Second Division Feb. 28, 1935 because of retirement from active service at age 64, under the law. He left his quarters at 4:00 P. M., accompanied by his aide, Lieutenant Sudduth, to take a train to his home.

The Chief of Staff of the Army expressed the War Department's appreciation of his services, as follows:

"WAR DEPARTMENT OFFICE OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF WASHINGTON, D. C.

Mar. 2, 1935.

Brigadier-General Charles R. Howland, U. S. A., Ret., Fort Sam Houston, Texas.

My dear General Howland:

At this time of your retirement from active service, due to the operation of law, upon reaching the age of sixty-four years, I wish to express to you the appreciation of the War Department of your valuable service covering a period of almost forty-four years.

A review of your military career from your graduation at the United States Military Academy and appointment as Second Lieutenant of Infantry, shows evidence of outstanding accomplishment and high professional attainment. As a young officer you participated in the campaign in the Philippine Insurrection, for which you were awarded three Silver Star citations by the War Department for gallantry in action. Soon after the United States entered the World War you assumed command of the 343rd Infantry, and later accompanied this regiment to France, and subsequently commanded the 165th Infantry.

"In December, 1927, you were selected and appointed to fill a vacancy in the grade of Brigadier-General in the Regular Army, and since that date you have commanded the 3rd Field Artillery Brigade, the 3rd Brigade and the 2nd Division.

Throughout your long career on the active list your services have been of great value in matters pertaining to National Defense, and I feel that I voice the sentiment of the Army, as well as my own, in wishing you many happy years following your release from active duty.

Sincerely yours,

Douglas MacArthur General Chief of Staff."

As a retired Brigadier-General of the Army he devoted full time to compilation of this Book, and in execution of duties, first as Chairman of the Executive Committee, and later as President and Chairman of the Board of the "Pilgrim John Howland Society."





BACON

1. NATHANIEL BACON, b. in England, came to America from Stretton, Eng. He d. Oct. 1673 at Barnstable, Mass. where he had lived since 1640; m. Dec. 4, 1642 HANNAH MAYO, daughter of Rev. John Mayo. She survived him and was living as his widow as late as Aug. 6, 1691.

NATHANIEL BACON was a well-educated gentleman, particularly in statecraft. Being a Non-conformist, he left England, came to Plymouth Colony and settled in Barnstable. He was popular and highly respected by the people, who having decided to use his good judgement and knowledge of government, selected him to represent them in the General Court from 1652 to 1667, and as Assistant to the Governor from 1667 to his death in 1673. He built a comfortable house in Barnstable and made his friends among the better-educated members of the Colony.

Children, all born at Barnstable:

- (2)
- i. Hannah, m. 1st, Mr. Thomas Walley, son of Rev. Thomas Walley of Barnstable; m. 2nd, Rev. George Shove of Taunton, Mass.
- ii. NATHANIEL, bapt. Feb. 15, 1645; m. SARAH, dau. of Gov. HINCKLEY.
- iii. MARY, b. Aug. 12, 1648.
- iv. Samuel, b. Feb. 25, 1650.
- v. Elizabeth, b. Jan. 28, 1653.
- vi. JEREMIAH, b. May 8, 1657; m. ELIZABETH HAWES, Dec. 10, 1686.
- vii. Mercy, b. Feb. 28, 1659; m. Hon. John Otis July 18, 1683.
- viii. John, b. June 1665; m. Mary Hawes June 17, 1686.
- 2. Hannah Bacon, b. Sept. 4, 1643; bapt. Dec. 8, 1644 by Rev. Thomas Walley, Pastor at Barnstable; was carefully educated by her father and mother, and was a devoted church member. She m. 1st, Mr. Thomas Walley Jr.; m. 2nd, Rev. George Shove of Taunton.

References: "Topographical Dictionary of New England" (Banks), p. 136, and "Genealogical Notes of Barnstable" (Otis), Vol. I, p. 26-27.

BAKER

John Baker, b. 1601 in Norwich, Co. Norfolk, Eng.; was apprenticed in 1613 (or 1616) to Isaacke Grandidge to learn "the art and trade of a grocer." He was made a citizen of Norwich, Aug. 15, 1628. He m. about 1632, ELIZABETH (

They were Non-conformists. In the examination proceding the sailing for New England, Apr. 8, 1637 it is recorded that his party consisted of himself; his wife ELIZABETH, aged 31; his three children, ELIZABETH, JOHN, and THOMAS, and his four servants: Marey Alexarson, age 24; Anne Alexarson, age 20; Bridgett Boulle, age 32, and Samuel Arres, age 14,2 and that they requested passage to "Charles Town" in New England, where they intended to make their home. He and party were given passage on the ship "Rose of Yarmouth" in 1637. He did not settle at Charlestown. After purchasing very considerable landed estates at Watertown and at Newbury, Mass. he did settle at Ipswich, Mass. in 1638. He was made a freeman June 2, 1641. He continued the purchase of land and bought an estate in 1661 at Reading, Mass., and was on the tax list at Topsfield, Mass. in 1669. He was a man of property. In addition to other gifts by which he disposed of his estate, he gave his silverware to his son Thomas.4

The last record of John was that he was in Topsfield June 28, 1680. We do not have the date of death of either John or Elizabeth.

Children:

- Elizabeth, bapt. Aug. 18, 1633.3
- John, bapt. Nov. 30, 1634; m. May 13, 1667 Katharine, dau. of William Perkins of Topsfield; lived in Ipswich; d. in 1718, leaving children.
- (2)THOMAS III.
 - Martha, b. at Ipswich; m. 1st Obadiah Antrim (some say Andrews) IV. of Salem, who d. on a voyage to Nevis in 1655; m. 2d, June 22, 1670, THOMAS ANDREWS.
- Captain Thomas Baker, b. Sept. 18, 1636 at Norwich, Co. Norfolk, Eng.; d. March 18, 1718; m. March 26, 1672 Priscilla Symonds, who d. Jan. 2, 1733-4 (age 85) at Ipswich.

For the offense of smoking tobacco on the street on the Sabbath day he was fined 10 shillings and costs and court fees by the County Court, March 26, 1661.

By deed from his father, Feb. 22, 1662 he received his father's estate of about 150 acres of land and all buildings thereon in Topsfield, the consideration being payments to his father and mother of 10 pounds per annum. His name is on the list of church members of Topsfield as of 1684.

 [&]quot;Founders of New England" (Drake, 1860) p. 44-45.
 "Utah Magazine," Vol. 20, p. 26-27.
 Register of the Parish of St. Peter Mancroft. Norwich, Co. Norfolk, Eng.
 "Ancestry of Priscilla Baker" (Appleton 1870).

He was liberal in rendering public service to the people of his town, and to the people of his colony. He served many times on committees to defend—in legal proceedings—the boundaries of Topsfield, which were constantly in dispute with neighboring towns. He was chosen as a Selectman several times between 1675 and 1700. He was chosen Constable in 1688. His public service to his Colony (then called "his Country") occupied much of his time. He was appointed May 16, 1683 by the General Court to the military office of Lieutenant in a troop of horse (cavalry) of 48 men, raised by Topsfield, Andover and other adjoining towns. In 1713 he was promoted to Captain. As Lieutenant Baker he was chosen by Topsfield as its Deputy to the General Court in 1683, 1684, 1686, 1690, 1692, 1693, 1694, 1698 and 1708, and May 7, 1689 he was chosen to that (then) all-important office of Deputy from Topsfield to consult with the Colonial Council of Safety.

His Will was dated Jan. 17, 1717. It was proved at Ipswich April 7, 1718. He made liberal bequests to his beloved wife to provide for all her needs, including "also to have a horse and man to waite upon her to meeting on ye Sabbath days

and at other times as shee shall Desire to see her friends."

He made a bequest to each of his heirs. The Argilla estate in Ipswich with the commonages, which he inherited from his father, he bequeathed to his son John. That estate was still owned by his descendants in 1880.

All the Children of Thomas and Priscilla were born in Topsfield:

- I. Priscilla, b. Dec. 8, 1674; m. about 1695 Isaac Appleton of Ipswich.
- II. Martha, b. Oct. 14, 1682; m. Apr. 17, 1712 Joseph Sargent of Gloucester who d. about 1750. She d. May 27, 1713. They had one son.
- III. Rebecca, b. Nov. 16, 1685; d. March 12, 1780; m. Apr. 30, 1712 Jacob Peabody of Topsfield who d. July 24, 1749. Children born at Topsfield:
 - i. JACOB, b. Feb. 18, 1712-3.
 - ii. Rebecca, b. Feb. 3, 1714-5.
 - iii. Abigail, b. Feb. 25, 1716-7.
 - iv. NATHANIEL, b. Feb. 25, 1718-9.
 - v. Priscilla, b. March 25, 1721.
 - vi. Thomas, b. Aug. 24, 1723.
 - vii. Martha, b. Aug. 19, 1724.
 - viii. Elizabeth, b. Oct. 25, 1728.
- (3) IV. Thomas.
 - V. John, Esq., b. Jan. 6, 1691; d. Aug. 1, 1734 at Ipswich; m. Mary Perley. He was one of the King's Justices of the Peace for the County of Essex, Mass. Mary with their four small children survived him. He left a considerable estate for their support.
 - VI. ELIZABETH, bapt. Sept. 17, 1693.
- 3. Captain Thomas Baker, b. Feb. 17, 1687-8 at Topsfield, Mass.; d. Sept., 1725; m. Jan. 5, 1709-10 Mary Capen, who with their nine Children survived him, and Aug. 11, 1730 m. 2d, John Griffin of Bradford.

¹ "Ancestry of Priscille Baker" (Appleton, 1870) p. 11.

Children of THOMAS BAKER and MARY:

- (4) I. Thomas
 - II. MARY, bapt. "13-5m. 1712".
 - III. MARTHA, bapt. Apr. 4, 1714.
 - IV. JACOB, bapt. "28, 9m. 1714;" d. May 17, 1719.
 - V. Joseph, bapt. May 3, 1716.
 - VI. Priscilla, b. Apr. 14, 1718; d. May 17, 1719.
 - VII. John, b. Dec. 18, 1719.
 - VIII. ELIZABETH, bapt. March 25, 1722.
 - IX. Priscilla, b. Aug. 4, 1724; bapt. Aug. 9, 1724.
- 4. Captain Thomas Baker, b. Nov. 20, 1710; d. Sept. 16, 1777; m. Nov. 26, 1729 Sarah Wade of Ipswich, who survived him and d. as his widow, June 29, 1780.

Thomas left his estate in Ipswich to his son John, and his estate in Topsfield to his son Thomas.

Children of Thomas Baker and Sarah were b. in Topsfield.²

- I. Thomas, b. Mrach 3, 1729-30.
- II. Jасов, b. Apr. 3, 1732; d. same day.
- (5) III. John.
 - IV. Symonds, b. Jan. 6, 1735; made his residence in Andover.
 - V. WILLIAM, b. Feb. 15, 1737; made his residence in Gloucester.
 - VI. Samuel, b. Feb. 26, 1739-40; d. Feb. 25, 1740.
 - VII. JOSEPH, b. May 23, 1741; m. HEPSIBAH THORNDIKE.
 - VIII. SARAH, b. May 24, 1743.
 - IX. ELIZABETH, b. Apr. 6, 1745; d. Apr. 14, 1745.
 - X. Mary, b. June 4, 1746; m. Dudley Smith, Sept. 24, 1767.
 - XI. Jonathan, b. June 25, 1749.
 - XII. DAVID, b. June 28, 1751; d. July 15, 1751.
 - XIII. REBEKAH, b. Feb. 17, 1753; m. Sylvanus Wildes, int. Feb. 11, 1781.
 - XIV. MARTHA, b. Dec. 15, 1755; m. Joseph Towne, March 11, 1784.
- 5. Major John Baker, b. Nov. 23, 1733; d. Nov. 11, 1815; m. Oct. 21, 1761 Mary Emerson who survived her husband and d. as his widow, Dec. 16, 1816 at Topsfield, aged 80.

John was commissioned and served in the French and Indian War. He served in the Revolutionary War as a Captain from May to Dec., 1775 in Col. LITTLE's Massachusetts regiment, and as a Captain from Jan. 1, to Dec. 31, 1776 in the 12th Continental Infantry.

They lived at Topsfield, where all their Children were born:3

- I. Mary, b. and bapt. July 23, 1762.
- II. John, b. July 2, 1764; bapt. July 8, 1764; enlisted and served in his father's command in the Revolutionary War as a "Fifer."

¹ Vital Records of Ipswich, Mass.

Vital Records of Topsfield, Mass.
 "Ipswich Emersons' (Benjamin Kendall Emerson), p. 138.

(6) III. EMERSON

IV. Thomas, bapt. June 19, 1768.

V. EBENEZER, bapt. Dec. 23, 1770.

6. EMERSON BAKER, b. 1767; bapt. Dec. 23, 1770; d. Nov. 22, 1862 at Meadville, Pa.; bur. in Pierpont, O.; as a resident of Topsfield, Mass he published int. Jan. 12, 1798 to marry Elizabeth Porter of Chester, N. H. and they married, int. Jan. 14, 1798. Elizabeth d. Oct. 7, 1851 at Pierpont, where she was buried.

He was interested in shipping and commerce, and successfully established such activity, first at Newburyport, Mass. and later at Bangor, Me. As Elizabeth objected to his going on voyages on his ships he discontinued his shipping and commercial activity and moved to Boston. Their house at that time was No. 27 Union Street, but Boston has changed and where they lived is now in the great warehouse area.

Like many other "well-to-do" men in Massachusetts he yielded to the attraction of the so-called "Eldorado" in the West, and with his family moved to new land in Crawford County, Pa. and settled first at "Penn Line," a village of Conneaut Township. Penn Line is on the Pennsylvania - Ohio boundary line and is astride the road used then for passing from northern Pennsylvania into the Connecticut Reserve in Ohio. About 1825 he moved across the State Line and settled in Pierpont, O. Of the five School Districts in Pierpont, Oct. 25, 1827, his estate was in the Third District, called Rockwell School District. Others in whom we are interested, who lived on that date in that District, were Anson Leonard; Esther (Brown) Leonard, widow of Asa Leonard; Samuel Brown; Manoah Ellis Sr.

Oct. 12, 1830 EMERSON was appointed a Grand Juror, and Apr. 2, 1838 he was elected Township Trustee.

His estate in Pierpont was well situated to meet his need, as his favorite sport was hunting. It was good in that area, and with friends he would mount and ride the field, properly attired for the hunt. In addition to the sport, those hunters brought home plenty of game.

He was a leader in the community who had no ambition to hold public office for the honors involved, but both he and ELIZABETH his wife exercised a good influence there and were highly respected.

As in the case of many others he did not present the deeds to his estates for record; probably partly because the Counties as well as the Towns were then in an organizational state of flux.

Children of Emerson Baker and Elizabeth:

- I. EBENEZER PORTER, b. 1799; d. Feb. 11, 1859 at Penn Line, Pa., unmarried, and is bur. in Pierpont. He was a school teacher.
- II. Mary Emerson, b. Oct. 1805; d. 1897 at Cleveland, O.; m. 1st in Feb. 1828 Mark Emerson who was b. 1801 in Brookline, N. H. and who d. in March, 1832; m. 2d, 1837, Andrew Platt, who was b. in Connecticut near the New York boundary line. He d. at Cleveland, O., age 89 years.

¹ Topsfield Vital Records.

MARY specialized as a student at the Boston Latin School. Later, before marriage, she was a successful school teacher.

Children by her first marriage:

- i. Porter Kilton, b. in Dec., 1828; d. in Aug. 1831.
- ii. Mark, b. in Feb. 1831; d. about 1908 in California, where he was a physician.

Children by her second marriage:

- iii. Harriet H., b. 1839; d. in Cleveland, O.; m. John Mead, an oil producer in the Pennsylvania field. Res. Cleveland, O. Children: i. Mary Emerson. ii. John Andrew. iii. Mark Baker.
- iv. Jennie, b. 1841; d. 1926 in Bethlehem, N. H.; bur. in Arlington National Cemetery, Arlington, Va.; m. Colonel Albert Barnitz, U. S. Army, who served in the Civil War and in Indian wars. He was a distinguished officer who was wounded in battle and promoted by brevet three times for gallantry on the battlefield. He d. 1912 at Ocean City, N. J. and is bur. in Arlington National Cemetery. Res. Cleveland, where their children were born. i. Bertha Rose. ii. Mary Emerson, called Maidie; d. 1910 and is bur. in Arlington National Cemetery. iii. Blanche Clare.
- III. EMERSON, b. about 1807; d. Oct. 12, 1853; m. Jane Wright, the first white child b. in Pierpont, O. and who d. March 22, 1897. Children, all born in Pierpont:
 - i. Barzillia Emerson, m. 1st Adaline (); m. 2d Ellen (); m. 3rd Lida Throop. His children were by the 1st wife and were born in Pierpont: i. Plato. ii. Lelia. iii. Reed.
 - ii. Porter, was killed in battle in the war between the States.
 - iii. Newell, m. Harriet Clark and had: i. Everett. ii. Vandalia.
 - iv. Corwin, m. Parma Marsh and had: i. Blaine M. ii. Mary.
 - v. Alvin, m. Florence Beckwith and had: i. Guy. ii. Alta. iii. Gordon. iv. Emerson.
 - vi. Harriet, m. Barzillia Seager and had: i. Hattie. ii. Jennie.
 - vii. Lydia, m. Robert Stewart and had: i. Mary. ii. Lilie. iii. Orpha. iv. Adelaide.
 - viii. Jane, m. Alonzo Lewis and had: i. Corwin. ii. Essie. iii. Edith. iv. Emerson. v. Alvin. vi. Dora.
- (7) IV. ELIZABETH
- 7. ELIZABETH BAKER, b. Nov. 27, 1810; m. July 27, 1828 Anson Leonard of Penn. Line, Pa.

BULKELEY

COAT OF ARMS

The Coat-of Arms of Rev. Peter Bulkeley of Concord, Massachusetts was1

Arms —Sable a chevron between three bull's heads cabossed silver armed gold.

CREST —Out of a crown of gold a bull's head silver armed gold (Burke).

1. Peter Bulkeley, a scion of the Bulkeleys of Bulkeley, Co. Chesire, Eng.; m. Nicola, dau. of Thomas le Bird. In right of his wife he held Haughton, Co. Chesire. Sept. 28, 1390 King Richard II. issued Letters Patent granting annuity of 100 shillings to Peter Bulkely of Haighton.

Child:

- (2) I. John
- 2. John Bulkeley, d. 1450; m. Audrey, dau. and heir of John Titley of Woore, Co. Shropshire. In 1399 Letters Patent were issued granting to John a six-pence pension as Archer of the Crown.

Child:

- (3) I. Hugh
- 3. Hugh Bulkeley of Woore; m. Ellin (Hellen), dau. of Thomas Wilbraham of Wordley, Esq.

Child:

- (4) I. HUMPHREY
- 4. Humphrey Bulkeley of Woore; m. Cecily, dau. and heir of John Moulton of Moulton.

Child:

- (5) I. WILLIAM
- 5. WILLIAM BULKELEY of Oakley, d. March 4, 1571; m. Beatrice, dau. and co-heir of William Hill of Buntingseale, Co. Shropshire, by his wife Alice, sister and heir of Richard de Bunbury. Arms of Hill—Gules, a Chevron between three pheons argent.

Child:

(6) I. THOMAS

^{1 &}quot;New England Hist. Gen. Register," Vol. 82, p. 157.

6. Thomas Bulkeley of Woore, b. 1515-20; d. 1591; bur. at Market Drayton; lived in Buntingseale in the parish of Market Drayton, Co. Shropshire; m. Elizabeth (b. 1520), dau. of Randall Grosvenor of Bellaport, Co., Shropshire.

Children:

- I. ROWLAND of Woore, living 1596; m. ELIZABETH, dau. of GEORGE BARKER of Coulshurst, Shrophire, Eng.
- (7) II. EDWARD
 - III. MARGARET, m. THOMAS SMITH of Longstowe, Co. Shropshire, and is named in his will dated July 24, 1597.
 - IV. ANNE, m. WILLIAM GREENE.
 - V. CATHERINE, m. as his 2d. wife George Barker of Coulshurst, Co. Shropshire, whose will was proved in 1599.

7. Rev. Edward Bulkeley, D.D., b. about 1540; d. early in Jan., 1620-1 at Odell; bur. Jan. 5, 1620-1; m. about 1566 Olive, dau. of John and Rose (Overton) Irby. Olive was b. about 1547 and was bur. March 10, 1614-15 at Odell.

He matriculated pensioner at St. John's College, Cambridge, Michaelmas, 1555, Scholar 1555; B.A., 1559-60; M.A., 1563; B.D., 1569; D.D., 1758; Fellow, 1580. He obtained the rectorship of Odell in Bedfordshire about 1571. He "compounded" for "the living" at Odell May 6, 1571-2, which means that he paid his first year's salary to his superior; this was an established practice in the Church of England. He was Prebend of Chester, 1574; of Westminster, 1583; of Lichfield, 1594; and Vicar of St. Mary's, Shrewsbury, 1578-82. In 1608 he was one of the commissioners appointed by the Bishop of Lincoln for the "Levye of Armour" in Bedfordshire among the clergy.

He, wife Olive and daughter Elizabeth received legacies from Rev. Richard Madockes of Woodhull (Odell), Co. Bedford, and Edward was appointed sole executor of the will which was dated Aug. 15, 1606.

EDWARD was a moderate Puritan. He resigned his pastorate in 1609.

The will of Edward Bulkeley, late of Woodhall, Co. Bedford, Doctor of Theology, deceased, was proved Jan. 1620-1 and a commission to administer was granted to his son Peter.

Children (ages of 1st eight are correct):

- I. MARY, b. 1567.
- II. Frances, b. 1568; m. 1595 RICHARD WELBY.
- III. JUDITH, b. 1570.
- IV. MARTHA, b. 1572; m. ABRAHAM MELLOWES.
- V. NATHANIEL, b. 1574; d. in London, 1602.
- VI. DEBORAH, b. 1575.
- VII. Dorcas, b. 1577; m. as his 2d. wife, Rev. Anthony Ingoldsby.
- VIII. ELIZABETH, b. 1579; d. Oct. 14, 1643 at Boston, Mass.; m. 1st RICHARD WHITTINGHAM of Suttetton, Co. Lincoln, who in his will, March 6, 1615 made provision for his wife; his father-in-law, Doctor Bulkeley; his brother-in-law, Mr. Peter Bulkeley, and the latter's son Edward: m. 2d Atherton Haugh.

- IX. SARAH, b. about 1580; m. OLIVER St. JOHN.
- X. PAUL, b. about 1581; bur. Oct. 19, 1610.
- (8) XI. Peter
- 8. Peter Bulkeley, b. Jan. 31, 1582-3 at Odell, Co. Bedford, Eng.; d. March 9, 1658-9 at Concord, Mass.; m. 1st, Apr. 12, 1613 at Goldington, Co. Bedford, Jane Allen who d. and was bur. Dec. 8, 1626 at Odell; m. 2d, early in Apr. 1635 Grace Chetwood, who was b. about 1602 and who surviving Peter, as his widow, d. Apr. 21, 1669 at New London, Conn.

He was graduated from St. John's College, Cambridge, with D.D. and was chosen "a fellow" but was silenced for non-conformity.

In 1635 he and family emigrated to New England. He with the children came in May, 1635 on the ship "Susan and Ellen" and his new 2d wife was enrolled on the list for the ship "Elizabeth and Ann." He settled at Cambridge, where he was a householder Feb. 8, 1635. He was wealthy, and did great good. He gave books to Harvard College, and wrote the Gospel Covenant.

He had permission, Sept. 1, 1635, with about 12 more families to organize a town at Musketaquid. They organized the twelfth church in the Colony there and made him Pastor. They named the town Concord.

He made his will Apr. 14, 1658. It was probated "20 (), 1659."

Children by the 1st wife were all born at Odell, Co. Bedford, Eng.:

- (9) I. EDWARD
 - II. MARY, bapt. Aug. 24, 1615; bur. Jan. 13, 1615-16.
 - III. THOMAS, bapt. Apr. 12, 1617.
 - IV. NATHANIEL, bapt. Nov. 29, 1618; bur. Feb. 11, 1628-9.
 - V. John, bapt. Feb. 6, 1619-20.
 - VI. MARY, bapt. Nov. 1, 1621.
 - VII. Joseph, bapt. May 4, 1623; was living in 1658; d. a single person.
 - VIII. Daniel, bapt. Aug. 28, 1625; d. probably at Fairfield, Conn. by 1648.
 - IX. JABEZ, bapt. Dec. 24, 1626; bur. Dec. 2, 1629.

Children by the 2d wife:

- Х. Gershom, b. Jan. 1635-6.
- XI. ELEAZER, b. 1836; d. unmarried.
- XII. DOROTHY, b. Aug. 2, 1640 at Concord.
- XIII. Peter, b. Aug. 12, 1643 at Concord.
- 9. REV. EDWARD BULKELEY, bapt. June 12, 1614 at Odell, Co. Bedford, Eng.; d. Jan. 2, 1695-6 at Chelmsford, Mass. and was bur. at Concord; m. Lucian (or Lucy Ann).

He matriculated pensioner, St. Catherine's Hall, Cambridge, Easter, 1629. He emigrated to New England in advance of the rest of the family and was admitted a member of the First Church, Boston, March 22, 1634-5. He was given a letter to the Church at Concord, Aug. 15, 1641. He was ordained at Marshfield, 1642-3 and lived there from 1642 to 1656. He became his father's successor at Concord in 1659. He delivered the Election Sermon in 1679 and in 1680.

Their children were:

- (10) I. ELIZABETH
 - II. Peter, b. Jan. 3, 1640-1; d. 1660.
 - III. Jane, b. about 1645; d. Apr. 28, 1706 at Concord; m. Mar. 20, 1683-4 Capt. Ephraim Flint, who was b. Jan. 1641-2 at Concord and d. there. No children.
 - IV. Mary, b. about 1653.
 - V. John, bur. Feb. 26, 1655 at Marshfield.
- 10. ELIZABETH BULKELEY, b. about 1638; m. 1st, Dec. 7, 1665 at Concord, Mass., as his 2d wife, Rev. Joseph Emerson who d. Jan. 3, 1679-80 at Concord; m. 2d, March 29, 1682 Capt. John Brown.

Note: The greater part of the above ancestry of Elizabeth (Bulkeley) Emerson is in agreement with the "Bulkeley Genealogy" compiled in 1933 by the eminent genealogist, Donald Lines Jacobus of New Haven, Conn., who allows Rev. Peter Bulkeley descent from Saher de Quincy, first Earl of Winchester, a Surety of the Magna Charta, and his wife, Margaret de Beaumont, dau. of the third Earl of Leicester and descended from the Capetain Kings of France.—Ed.

BURGESS

1. Thomas Burge(Burgis), b. 1603 in England; d. Feb. 27, 1685 at Sandwich, Mass.; m. in England Dorothy (); came with his young family to Salem, Mass. about 1630, settled temporarily at Lynn, Mass.

On July 3, 1637 Plymouth allotted to him a parcel of land in the area called Duxborough. His stay there was short, and by Nov. 5, 1638 he had forfeited that allotment by moving to Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, but received compensation for improvements that he had made on his Duxbury allotment from Nicholas Robbins, his successor allottee. Thomas was an original member of the church organized in Sandwich in 1638 by Rev. William Leverich; became a large landholder in Sandwich, and was liberal of his time in rendering public service locally and also as a member of the General Court at Plymouth between 1642 and 1668; was listed as able to bear arms, 1643, in field service against the Indians. He made his will Apr. 4, 1684; the inventory was taken Feb. 7, 1684-5. In his will he spells his name and that of his children "Burg" and calls his son-in-law Ezra Perry "my son." The place of his burial is marked by a stone imported from England. His wife Dorothy died Feb. 27, 1687.

Children:

- i. Thomas, b. 1627¹; d. 1687; was enrolled as able to bear arms, 1643; was Constable, 1654. Removed from Plymouth Colony, 1661 and admitted freeman of Newport, R. I., 1667. He was a grand-juror in 1667; m. 1st, Nov. 8, 1648 ELIZABETH, dau. of WILLIAM BASSETT; m. 2nd, Lydia, dau. of Peter Gaunt. She died 1684.
- (2) ii. John
 - iii. ELIZABETH, b. 1629 in England; m. Feb. 12, 1652 at Sandwich, EZRA PERRY, b. 1625 in England, d. Oct. 16, 1689 at Sandwich, Mass. He was executor of the will of his father-in-law.
 - iv. Jacob, took the oath of allegiance 1657. He inherited the family estate in Sandwich in behalf of his son Thomas, as the other sons of Thomas Sr. had removed from Sandwich; m. June 1, 1660 Mary, daughter of Benjamin Nye. She died June 3, 1706. Jacob d. March 17, 1719.
 - v. Joseph, a landholder in Sandwich in 1658; was employed to drill the cavalry company in 1660; sold his property in Sandwich to Richard Bourne in 1677 and removed to Rochester; Deputy to the General Court in Plymouth, 1689. Will dated Aug. 5, 1695; proved Oct. 3, 1695; m. Pateince, dau. of Edmund Freeman by his 1st wife Rebecca Prence, whose mother was dau. of Pilgrim William Brewster

¹ "Genealogical Dictionary of New England" (Savage).

2. John Burgess, was admitted a freeman in 1657; served on the grand jury, 1661; removed early to Yarmouth, Mass.; was Deputy to the General Court, 1680; m. Dec. 8, 1657 Mary, dau. of Peter Worden. He died 1701. Mary died 1723.

Children, all born at Yarmouth:

- i. John, m. Sarah, dau. of Nicholas Nickerson. She d. Feb. 4, 1723, aged 49.
- ii. Thomas, m. Feb. 26, 1696 Sarah Storms of Barnstable. He removed with his family to Windham Co., Conn.
- iii. Joseph, m. Thomasine, dau. of Jonathan and Mary Bangs of Harwich, Mass. She was born 1673.
- iv. Samuel, m. Elizabeth ().
- v. Jacob, b. 1680; member of the church at Yarmouth June 29, 1735; d. Aug. 15, 1772; m. Sarah () who died Apr. 17, 1765.
- vi. Martha, m. 2nd, Oct. 31, 1700 Samuel Storrs of Windham Co., Conn.
- vii. Patience, m. () Nye.
- viii. Mercy, m. () Winslow.
- (3) ix. Mary
 - x. SARAH
- 3. MARY BURGESS, m. 1680 MANOAH ELLIS of Sandwich, Mass.

¹ "Landmarks of Plymouth" (Davis), p. 48.

ELLIS

There was at least one branch of the Ellis family whose opposition to the Established Church was so decided that it was not satisfied with being merely Nonconformist inside that church. Its opposition was so great that it joined the group called "Separatists" (later "Pilgrims") who built a new church outside of the Established Church. In that branch John Ellis succeeded in leaving England, went to Holland and was a member of Rev. John Robinson's Separatist Church at Leyden. His occupation was wool-comber. We do not know how long he remained in Holland, but we know that he was in Leyden as late as March 20, 1619 as on that date he stated in a deposition that he was a witness Nov. 8, 1619 to the betrothal of his brother-in-law, RICHARD MASTERSON. The City Records of Leyden show that he was a witness Nov. 26, 1619 to the marriage of his brother-in-law RICHARD MASTERSON, who went to Holland from Sandwich, Eng. At the time of his deposition, March 20, 1619 John Ellis was about 50 years old. Richard Masterson was stated to be a "young man," that is, not a widower, and that John Ellis of Leyden married before Easter, 1606 Blandina, a sister of Richard MASTERSON. It is apparent that John Ellis was 37 years old in 1606, and that his wife Blandina was younger than John.

It is important to note here that Dexter' does not state facts regarding the vital record of John Ellis. On that subject the statement in Dexter is: "Apparently had been married twice, with one child by each wife." The word "apparently" from a genealogical point of view does not attach the two children Mary and Christopher (as stated in Dexter) actually to this John Ellis as his children.

JOHN ELLIS returned to England.

RICHARD MASTERSON, after the departure of the first group of Pilgrims about July 22, 1620 was made a Deacon of the church, and after the death of Rev. John Robinson in 1625, with four others wrote to Governor Bradford that the original intention to go to New Plymouth was still held and that they would go as soon as they could afford it. May 25, 1629 James Sherley at Leyden wrote to Governor Bradford that many of the church at Leyden were sailing for New Plymouth in the "Mayflower."

JOHN A. GOODWIN at page 156 of his "Pilgrim Republic" states that:

"It does not appear that the 'Mayflower' ever revisited Plymouth; but in 1629 she came to Salem with a company of the Leyden people for Plymouth."

CHARLES E. BANKS in "Planters of the Commonwealth" states that:

"Richard Masterson and family embarked on the 'Mayflower,' William Pierce, Master. The ship cleared Gravesend in March with 35 passengers,

¹ Dexter's "England and Holland of the Pilgrims."

mostly from Leyden, destined for Plymouth. She arrived May 15, 1629 at Salem with a company of Leyden people for Plymouth."

Vol. I, "Town Records of Sandwich," informs us that:

"John Ellis, Junior, came to Plymouth in the Mayflower."

So we see that Richard Masterson and John Ellis Jr. came to Plymouth Colony in 1629 on the celebrated "Mayflower" which made port at Salem. As John Ellis Jr. was only nine years old and was not escorted by any member of his immediate family, there seems to be no doubt that his father had either apprenticed him (John Jr.) to his own brother-in-law, Richard Masterson, or that Richard had accepted the responsibility of taking him to the New World and of bringing him up properly.

1. John Ellis Jr., b. about 1620; d. previous to May 23, 1677; came on the "Mayflower" in 1629, evidently under the care of his uncle, Richard Masterson, who d. in the epidemic of 1633. The following year his widow m. Rev. Ralph Smith, who had his A. B. in 1613 from Christ's Church, Cambridge. John Ellis Jr. was apprenticed to someone, or placed as an employee to someone in Boston, either at the age of 13 when his Uncle Richard died or at the age of 14 when Richard's widow m. Rev. Ralph Smith.

As soon as he arrived at the age of 21 he took the oath of a freeman, June 2, 1641 in Boston, and promptly left for Plymouth Colony. He selected Sandwich (Cape Cod) which was named after the home town of his late uncle, Richard Masterson, and may have been the name of his own home town in England, and settled there. He gave the necessary data to the Town Clerk, probably very proudly, when he stated that he was John Ellis Jr. and had come over to Plymouth in the "Mayflower."

He m. before Aug. 20, 1644 at Sandwich, ELIZABETH FREEMAN, dau. of EDMUND. In 1659 she was a witness to a deed under which three Indians granted land to the Town of Plymouth, which land is now in or near to Harwich. Together with her brothers EDMUND and JOHN FREEMAN, and her brother-in-law EDWARD PERRY, she was executrix on the will of her father EDMUND FREEMAN.

By 1655 Rev. RALPH SMITH and wife MARY, the widow of John's Uncle Richard, had settled on the Cape at Eastham.

June 5, 1651 John was chosen to be a member of "the Grand Enquest." Nov. 7, 1652 he and five others were selected to buy all the fish offered by the Indians; to provide casks, and to prepare the fish for use by the Town. Feb. 24, 1652 he and others were selected by the General Court to survey and build a road—on the most convenient line—from Sandwich to Plymouth, which task they completed satisfactorily and so reported to the General Court, June 20, 1654. April 10, 1652 he owed nine pounds sterling to John Beauchamp of London, which he paid to said Beauchamp's agent, Edmund Freeman.

The General Court of Plymouth Colony, sitting at Plymouth June 9, 1653, commissioned John Ellis to be the Lieutenant, (then Commander) of the Military Company at Sandwich.

Dec. 13, 1653 he and two others were given a monopoly on whales captured within the water line of Sandwich, under condition that they pay 16 pounds apiece for each whale. March 1, 1654 he contracted to build a mill. March 6, 1654 Lieutenant John Ellis and 11 others served on a jury. March 23, 1654 he paid his share toward the cost of necessary arms and equipment, and transportation of same. Then he contributed his service and also money toward the building of a public meeting house. July 17, 1657 he—Lieut. John Ellis—agreed to pay a pound annually toward maintenance of the Minister. Feb. 23, 1657 as the Lieutenant he submitted a requisition for military supplies with a list of the cost. In 1658 he as Lieutenant with 18 others disturbed and attempted to break up a meeting of Quakers.

In 1659 he and others were appointed to take charge of extraction of oil from whales and fish for the public use. March 7, 1659-60 the Marshall seized "for the Country" some oil in his possession, but he asserted his title and the Court decided in his favor. May 18, 1659 he and one other were chosen as surveyors of the highway. Dec. 10, 1659 he was one of four chosen to survey the boundary between Sandwich and Barnstable. Feb. 13, 1659 he bought the whale rights for three years. Feb. 21, 1659 he and two others were constituted a committee to negotiate with Barnstable regarding their boundary line. May 21, 1660 he was a debtor to the estate of the late John Green of Sandwich.

As the Lieutenant commanding the Military Company he was allowed, June 6, 1660 two pounds of powder for his command on "Training Day," which was the first Wednesday in July, 1660. Nov. 13, 1660 he balanced his public account with the town. July 16, () as Lieutenant he was given the contract for (placed in charge of) building a dock. Jan. 10, 1664 he and one other arbitrated an exchange of property by others. June 7, 1665, under the rate fixed by the General Court, he paid 20 shillings for one whale. In recognition of his public service, particularly as Lieutenant (Commander) in Sandwich, the General Court, Oct. 31, 1666 granted to him 100 acres at Maconsett Neck, and a small meadow nearby. Dec. 12, 1667 he and two others reported that a full record of the bounds of all lands had been completed. Sept. 15, 1669 he with others took an inventory on the estate of Robert Bullocke, late of Sandwich.

As Lieutenant he charged, Oct. 29, 1669 non-performance of contract against John Ewen. June 7, 1670 he was living near the sea in Sandwich. July 5, 1670 his oxen broke into a corn field of an Indian named William, and the General Court required him (Lieut. Ellis) to pay. Aug. 9, 1670 he was a debtor to the estate of William Bassett. July 6, 1671 the Town of Sandwich gave him (Lieut. Ellis) 20 acres of land from his then-owned land down to the beach. July 13 he as Lieutenant, with four others, was selected as "Tax rater." Aug. 26, 1671 "John Ellis, Senior" and one other surveyed a parcel of land, on the order of the town.

Feb. 28, 1675 he, Lieutenant, and Benjamin Hammond, Constable, called a Town Meeting to make arrangements for protection of lives and property and to make new land available for cultivation because of the dangers incident to King Philip's War. May 10, 1676 he as Lieutenant and Thomas Tobie, Sen. and Stephen Skiff as agents of the Town, were obligated to form "Sandwich Town Scouts," to hire as many men as they chose for that purpose, and the Town promised to pay all such engagements.

He died previous to May 23, 1677 as the inventory of his estate was taken by Richard Bourne, John Smith, and Thomas Tobey May 23, 1677 and exhibited to the Court held at Plymouth June 5, 1677, on the oath of his widow, Elizabeth Ellis.

She made her home in her widowhood with her son William at Rochester. The last record we have of her is a deed, as follows:

"I ELIZABETH ELLIS of Rochester * * * for and in consideration of love and affection unto my son William Ellis, * * * all my one-third part of half a whole share land with all my rights * * * 24, June, 1692. Acknowledged July 7, 1693. Witnesses: Joseph Doty, Jonathan Money Sr. Entered April 20, 1714."

So Elizabeth Ellis, widow of John Ellis, died at Rochester shortly before April 20, 1714 at the age of 89. Their children were all born at Sandwich:

- I. Deborah, b. 1644-5; m. Joseph Doty who was b. Apr. 30, 1651 at Plymouth (son of Pilgrim Edward Doty and his 2nd wife, Faith Clark.) Joseph moved to Sandwich and before June 7, 1700 to Rochester; they had nine children, among whom were b. at Sandwich:
 - i. Тнеорніция, b. Feb. 22, 1674.
 - ii. Ellis, b. Apr. 16, 1677.
- II. John Jr., b. about 1646; never married; d. intestate at Sandwich in 1667; the inventory of his estate was presented to the Court at Plymouth, June 5, 1677 on the oath of his widowed mother, Elizabeth Ellis. There is no doubt that Father John (Lieutenant) and John Jr. lost their lives in some accident on land or sea, or because of some epidemic at that time. Elizabeth, the widowed mother of John Jr., and Mordical, the brother of John Jr., were appointed administrators of the estate of John Ellis Jr. and accepted that appointment and qualified June 7, 1677.
- III. BENNET, b. Feb. 27, 1648; m. SAMUEL BRIGGS, son of JOHN and KATERINE BRIGGS of Sandwich.

Children were all born in Sandwich1:

- і. Еціхаветн, b. Арг. 30, 1665.
- ii. Bennet, b. Oct. 14, 1667; m. Aug. 20, 1687 Jans Stuard at Rochester.
- iii. EBENEZER, b. June 9, 1671.
- iv. Samuel, b. Feb. 12, 1673; m. April 14, 1708 at Rochester, Lidia Stetson.
- v. Hannah, b. Feb. 14, 1675; m. in 1698 at Rochester, John Barlow.
- IV. Lieut. Mordecai, b. March 24, 1650; d. before Feb. 20, 1709-10 upon which date his estate was settled; m. about 1671 Sarah Clark who survived him and as his widow d. Oct. 25, 1716; May 4, 1676 he was chosen Surveyor; Oct. 29, 1676 with John Cotton he was a witness to the will of Robert Bartlett, the husband of Mary, dau. of Pilgrim Richard Warren; May 21, 1678 he was chosen as a Grand Juryman; Aug. 14, 1679 with Edmund Freeman he served as Grand Juryman; lived at Sandwich.

¹ "Landmarks of Plymouth" (Davis), p. 103.

- John, b. about 1672; Sept. 12, 1700 with brother Manoah Ellis owed money to estate of the late Thomas Howes of Yarmouth; m. Nov. 7, 1700 at Plymouth, SARAH HOLMES; lived at Sandwich; made his will July 30, 1748 in which he mentions his wife Sarah, some of the children (presumptively those who were living on that date) and some of his grandchildren (of his children deceased); he made a codicil Nov. 9, 1757 which in respect of above data brought his will up to that date; the will and codicil were proved Jan. 3, 1758; d. between Nov. 9, 1757 and Jan. 3, 1758; all the children were born at Sandwich; children and grandchildren mentioned in the will and codicil: i. NATHANIEL, b. Dec. 23, 1702; his debt to late Ephraim Morton of Plymouth was paid before Apr. 29, 1731; d. between July 30, 1748 and Nov. 9, 1757; m. (); had a son Nathaniel. ii. John, b. Feb. 4, 1704-5; d. Oct. 1797; inventoried the estate of the late Thomas Gibbs Sr. of Sandwich Jan. 23, 1732; m. 1730 Rose JENNINGS who was b. 1709 and d. 1784. Children of John and Rose were b. in Middleborough in the following order: Jabez, Feb. 26, 1731-2; Mary, Sept. 27, 1733; John, Aug. 25, 1735; iii. Sarah, b. Feb. 3, 1706. iv. Rebecca, b. March 28, 1709, m. (sons named Malachi and Nathaniel; she d. before Nov. 9, 1757. v. Mercy, b. May 31, 1711; m. () Hall. vi. Mordecai, b. Oct. 29, 1713. vii. Rev. Jonathan, b. May 1, 1717; m. Nov. 29, 1738 Mrs. Patience Blackwell of Sandwich.
- ii. SAMUEL
- iii. Josiah
- iv. WILLIAM
- v. Mordecai
- vi. Benjamin
- vii. SARAH
- viii. Eleanor
 - ix. MARY
 - x. Rebecca
- (2) V. Manoah
 - VI. Joell, b. March 20, 1654 in Sandwich.
 - VII. Matthais, b. June 2, 1657; d. Aug. 21, 1748 at Sandwich; m. about 1678 Mercy Nie who was b. April 8, 1652 at Sandwich; as a minor lived with and attended his grandfather, Edmund Freeman; for that service and because of love and affection his grandfather Edmund deeded to him, Feb. 24, 1678 a messuage consisting of land and dwelling house and other buildings; is mentioned several times in the will of his grandfather Edmund; was a witness on division of estate of the late Thomas Gibbs of Sandwich, Apr. 11, 1693; nine children were all born in Sandwich in the following order. There is a claim that he had 11 children but names and dates of birth of the other two have not been found:

- i. Capt. Joel, b. Jan. 17, 1679-80; d. June 21, 1763 at Middleborough and was bur. there; m. 1st, Apr. 6, 1710 at Plymouth, ELIZABETH Churchill, b. Oct. 7, 1687 and who d. Apr. 3, 1753 at Middleborough and was bur. there; ELIZABETH was a dau. of JOHN and REBECCA (Delano) Churchill and granddaughter of Philip de la Noye who was bapt. Dec. 7, 1603 at Leyden, Holland and who, Nov. 20, 1621 arrived at New Plymouth in the ship "Fortune;" all his children were by his 1st wife; m. 2d, March 27, 1758 JEMIMA BENNETT. Children born at Plymouth: i. Joell, b. Feb. 21, 1711-12; was one of two sureties from Plympton to a bond given by the administrator of the estate of James Soul, late of Plympton, March 7, 1759; d. March 18, 1783 and was bur. at Plympton; m. Nov. 22, 1730 Рноеве (was b. Dec. 10, 1712 and d. Nov. 5, 1792 at Plympton, where she was bur. ii. John, b. Sept. 18, 1714; m. Sept. 17, 1773 Johanna Swift (both of Harwich). iii. Samuel, b. Oct. 22, 1716. iv. Matthais, b. March 7, 1719-20; m. Lucia () and had Mary, 1743; Joseph, 1745; George, 1747; Cornelius, 1749; Ebenezer, 1752; Betty, 1754; Gamaliel, 1757; Daniel, 1760; Lucy, 1763, and Priscilla, 1769. v. Rebekah, b. July 1, 1721; m. Dec. 24, 1741 Gideon South-WORTH; she d. June 19, 1781 and was bur. at Middleborough. vi. ELIZABETH, b. Feb. 5, 1723-4; m. Oct. 12, 1751 SAMUEL LANMAN of Plymouth. vii. Charles, b. June 19, 1726. viii. Thomas, b. Jan. 1, 1728-9.
- ii. Matthais, b. Nov. 5, 1681; d. 1748; m. Thankful Bassett, great-granddaughter of William Bassett who came to Plymouth in the ship "Fortune" Nov. 20, 1621.
- iii. Name worn off the page but the remainder of the record is Ellis. The son of Matthias Ellis and Mercy his wife (was) born the 17th day of August, 1683. The name of this son was John who d. Dec. 12, 1717; inventory of his estate was taken March 31, 1718 in which he was referred to as "John Ellis Jur.; late of Sandwich;" the inventory was presented to the Court April 8, 1718 by "Matthias Ellis Father of the deceased" and that same day the Probate Court appointed Matthias Ellis Sr. of Sandwich administrator of the estate of "John Ellis your son Late of the Town of Sandwich * * * Singleman." This John was evidently called "Junior" because he was younger than his cousin John (at Sandwich) who was the son of Lieut. Mordecal Ellis.
- iv. Mercy, b. Aug. 17, 1685; m. Apr. 18, 1705 at Sandwich by Mr. Row-LAND COTTON, Minister at Sandwich, to Thomas Doty of Plymouth.
- v. Experience, b. July 26, 1687; m. Dec. 2, 1708 at Sandwich by Stephen Skeffe, Esq. to Stephen "Churchiel."
- vi. Malachi, b. Oct. 8, 1689; made payment to estate of the late William Newcomb before July 1, 1748.
- vii. Remember, b. Dec. 1, 1691
- viii. Isabel, b. Dec. 31, 1693.

- ix. Samuel, b. Nov. 12, 1699; m. () Marcy (). Children listed in Plymouth Vital Records: i. Mary, b. June 8, 1718. ii. Hester, b. Apr. 13, 1721. iii. Samuel, b. Oct. 13, 1722. iv. Remember, b. March 31, 1725.
- x. and xi. Not found.
- VIII. WILLIAM, b. about 1660; lived near the crossroads leading to Rochester, Middleborough and Plymouth; his widowed mother Elizabeth lived with his family at Rochester, where June 24, 1692 in consideration of love and affection she deeded her land to son William, and was still living with his family April 20, 1714 when that deed was entered. Apr. 29, 1731 he was indebted to the estate of the late Ephraim Morton of Plymouth; m. (); only one child has been identified:
 - i. William, m. Joanne (). Children: i. William, Jan. 10, 1719; m. March 12, 1742-3 Patience Gibbs. ii. Experience, b. July 15, 1722. iii. Eleazer, b. Apr. 18, 1724. iv. Thomas, b. June 20, 1726.
 - IX. EDMUND FREEMAN (the EDMUND is generally omitted), b. about 1663; moved to Rochester where he made his will after Feb. 5, 1710-11, and where he died; m. Mercy () and had the following children¹:
 - i. Thankful, b. May 29, 1687.
 - ii. Joel, b. Feb. 5, 1688-9; m. May 5, 1715.

 Mary Gatchell at Dartmouth, where their dau. Thankful was born March 26, 1716.

 - iv. Elizabeth, b. Oct. 2, 1693.
 - v. Ebenezer, b. Feb. 7, 1695-6.
 - vi. Patience, b. Aug. 1, 1699; m. 1728, Edward Wing.
 - vii. Mordecai, b. Oct. 17, 1702.
 - viii. Elinor, b. Sept. 1, 1703.
 - ix. Mercy, b. 1705.
 - x. Gideon, b. Feb. 5, 1710-11.
- 2. Manoah Ellis¹, b. July 1652. He d. probably shortly after 1711, as no data are available that refer to him after that time. He m. in 1680 Mary Burgess of Yarmouth. He was a freeman of Sandwich in 1681; purchased in 1687 from Caleb Lombard a large estate in what was later Harwich; moved to the south part of Harwich before 1692; with Joseph Severance and Elisha Eldredge he bought, Feb. 27, 1692 practically all of the area called Harwichport from an Indian named Jacob Crook of Yarmouth; was one of the 24 who presented a petition to the General Court in Boston, May 30, 1694 requesting that the land between Yarmouth and Eastham be set aside and organized as a Township, which petition was approved Sept. 14, 1694 and the new Township was named Harwich; July 19, 1695 he and John Chase inventoried the estate of the late Benjamin Gage of Harwich; Sept. 12, 1700 he was one of the debtors to the estate of the late Thomas Howes of Yarmouth; in 1704 he was living in the south part of Harwich as the head of a family

¹ "Genealogical Dictionary of New England" (Savage).

and joined with the heads of other families in a petition that the south part of Harwich be set aside as a new Township; in 1711 he sold the above-mentioned two tracts of land in Harwich to Samuel Sturgis of Yarmouth. We do not have the complete list of children of Manoah and Mary (Burgess) Ellis but they had the following, and perhaps others:

- I. John, m. June 21, 1706 Martha Severance at Eastham; May 25, 1705 he and three others complained to the General Court that although they paid their taxes in Harwich they were being punished by the sub-district called Monomy for not paying taxes there; which petition was received and the General Court ordered that they should continue to pay taxes to Harwich until a learned Orthodox minister should settle at Monomy, when the Court "may give further orders:" lived in that part of Harwich called Monomy, where he d. before Jan. 7, 1712-13, upon which date his widow Martha was appointed administratrix of his estate; his birth dates of children were not found but June 23, 1717 his widow presented their children—then living—for baptism in the church and they were on that date baptized:
 - i. Benjamin
 - ii. Joseph
 - iii. John
 - iv. THANKFUL.
- II. Manoah, m. Nov. 22, 1710 at Harwich, Elizabeth Atkins. Aug. 23, 1727 he bought about 20 acres of land in the southern part of Harwich from Josiah Swift of Harwich.
- III. Cornelius, m. Mercy Atkins; resided in the sixth school district of Harwich where the school was open for instruction of the children for 22 weeks of the year; was much interested in land holding; joined with others in 1746 in a petition to the General Court to divide Harwich into two precincts so that those living in South Harwich could have a church in their own neighborhood; which petition was granted Jan. 16, 1758-7; the full record of children and birth dates was not found but we are able to record the following:
 - i. Cornelius Jr., m. March 3, 1742 at Harwich, Mehitable Clark, both of Harwich, and had: i. Mercy, b. Jan. 23, 1743 and ii. Elizabeth, b. Nov. 7, 1746.
 - ii. Isaac, b. Nov. 8, 1710.
 - iii. Marcy, b. Dec. 31, 1713.
 - iv. Samuel
 - v. Mary
- (3) IV. SAMUEL
 - V. Gideon was a sailor fisherman and while fishing off the shore of Billings-gate on a Sunday morning witnessed the tumult in which a part of his congregation by force prevented Mr. Josiah Oaks, the first Minister of Billingsgate, from officiating as Preacher, which resulted in his dismissal;

^{1 &}quot;Benson Family" (Fred. H. Benson, 1920) P. 117.

was chosen as one of the Tythingman Jan. 29, 1729-30; his mark for cattle, sheep and swine was a half penny on foreside of right ear and underside of left ear, in 1730 or 1731; m. 1st, Feb. 11, 1719-20 at Plymouth, Anna Clark; m. 2d. after June 5, 1738 and before April 5, 1739 Jemima (); d. intestate before June 2, 1761 on which date the Probate Judge of Barnstable County gave rules for dividing the estate, appointed Timothy Perry administrator, and Messrs. SamuelTupper Esq., Tomothy Bourne and Samuel Tobey (all of Sandwich) to make the division; in that order the Probate Judge mentions the names of living heirs; all children mentioned by the Probate Judge as living June 2, 1761 are marked.

List of children by 1st. wife who were b. at Plymouth:

- i. Abigail, b. Nov. 19, 1720; m. () Muxum.
- ii. Gideon, b. Dec. 16, 1722.
- iii. Тномая, b. Apr. 25, 1724; d. June 27, 1724.
- iv. Elleaner, b. July 6, 1725; m. () Perry.
- v. Elijah, b. Sept. 26, 1727.
- iv. EBENEZER, b. May 27, 1729; m. (); had child Benjamin who m. ELIZABETH PIGSLEE and moved to Plymouth.

Children by 2nd wife, all born in Sandwich:

- ix. Elnathan, b. Jan. 5, 1739-40.
- х. Seth, b. May 23, 1742.
- xi. Abiel, b. Oct. 6, 1744.
- хіі. Јонн, b. March 2, 1745-6.
- xiii. Ephriam
- xiv. SAMUEL, b. Sept. 22, 1753.
- XV. REUBEN, b. Aug. 25, 1755; m. Aug. 13, 1796 PATIENCE BLACKWELL of Sandwich.
- VI. JOSHUA, m. (int.) July 29, 1732 THANKFULL NICKERSON, both of Harwich; children:
 - i. Joseph, m. 1760 Jemima Eldridge; moved to Springfield, Vt. where their child Joseph Jr. m. Elizabeth Chase.
 - ii. Joshua Jr., int. Apr. 28, 1769 to m. Abigail Taylor of Chatham, June 15, 1769; she d. Nov. 13, 1799 at Chatham in her 78th year.
- 3. Samuel Ellis, m. July 30, 1719 Thankful Smith at Harwich; lived in the Sixth School District in which the school was open 25 weeks a year for about 35 children then in the District; Oct. 25, following marriage, his wife Thankful and her two sisters Bennet and Elizabeth joined the First Church (Congregational) in Brewster,) formerly a part of Harwich. Samuel was a leader in his community for education and religion, and gave liberally of his time to the local public service. Thankful was greatly loved and their very numerous offspring named daughters in honor of her. Samuel d. before Sept. 9, 1744. He either did not register the births of their children or such record has been lost. In the conflict between Harwich and Monomy much genealogical data was not recorded for lack of definite

information as to where the data should be registered; so the full list of children of this family can not be given, but the following have been identified and belong here:

- (4) I. SAMUEL Jr.
 - II. Manoah Ellis and Sarah Eldredge, both of Harwich, declared their intention of marriage March 17, 1753 and did marry, Apr. 26, 1753 at Harwich. In 1776 he moved north and made petition at the following towns or settlements: Moultonborough, N. H., Dec. 31, 1776; Ossippee, N. H., Sept. 17, 1783; Frankfort (Stockton), Me., May 26, 1790; and bought land on Cape Jellison in 1790. Their children were:
 - i. Barak Ellis, who made petition at Ossippee, N. H. in 1783 and at Frankfort, Me. in 1789; m. Charity Ames who was b. in 1757 and d. in 1845. They named their 1st child Thankful after Manoah's mother, Thankful Smith, and waited for the 3d dau. to give the name of Barak's wife Charity.
 - ii. Manoah Ellis, who made petition at Ossippee, N. H. in 1783 and at Frankfort, Me. in 1790; m. 1st, Thankful Smart and named his 1st dau. (who was the 3d child) Thankful.
 - iii. Levi Ellis, b. Frankfort, Me., 1763; d. 1831; m. Jemima Carter who d. in 1832.
 - iv. Annie, m. Richard Stinson.
 - v. Deborah, m. 1789, John Dwelley.
 - vi. SARAH, m. () PEARSON.
 - III. THANKFUL was presented to the church Sept. 9, 1744 by her widowed mother and was received into full communion.
- Samuel Ellis Jr., b. about 1728; d. Apr. 19, 1799; declared Nov. 29, 1746 with ELIZABETH COHOON (both of Harwich) their intention to marry, and they were married at Harwich, Dec. 26, 1746 by Rev. NATHANIEL STONE; she survived him and as his widow d. Dec. 18, 1807, age 84 years; with the members of the Ellis family living in South Harwich, and with others he signed a petition in 1746 to the General Court to set South Harwich aside as a separate precinct so that they could attend church in their own neighborhood, and thus be relieved of the long journey to North Harwich for that purpose, which petition was approved Jan. 16, 1746; the church building was erected on the lot just east of the estate of Samuel; being recognized as exceedingly meticulous in carrying out Church customs and forms, he (and one other) was selected in 1758 "to take care of the boys on the Lords day, and whip them if found playing;" was exceedingly active in 1777 in raising money for maintenance of the preacher and the church edifice; at the death of his father Samuel, before Sept. 9, 1744 he did not drop the use of Junior as a part of his name; was m. Nov. 29, 1746 as Samuel Jr. in order to differentiate between him and Sam-UEL (the son of Cornelius) who was his elder.

The children of Samuel Jr. and Elizabeth were:

- I. Samuel, b. about 1748.
- (5) II. MANOAH

III. REBECCA

(Remark: There were probably others.)

5. Manoah Ellis, b. 1750 at Harwich; d. Oct. 15, 1837 at Pierpont, O.; joined with Susannah Long, both of Harwich, Aug. 27, 1774 in declaring their intention to marry, and they were married by Rev. Dunster Dec. 8, 1774 at Harwich; Susannah d. July 31, 1835 at Pierpont, O. She was the dau. of William Long and Sarah Cahoon.

During his life at Harwich he called himself "Manoah Junior" in order to differentiate between himself and his uncle Manoah Ellis who also lived in his neighborhood in Harwich, but dropped the Junior when that situation was changed; during his residence in Harwich he was a fisherman and evidently a sea-fisherman and captain of his own ship, as at Pierpont, O. he was called "Captain Ellis of Cape Cod;" by 1785 he had moved with his family to the new Township of Lee in Berkshire Co., Mass. where he became a large landholder. We do not have the full record of his holdings; the following grantee and grantor deeds are noted:

As a resident of Lee he bought 66 acres in Lee, Sept. 24, 1785; as a resident of Lee he and Susannah sold 77 acres in Lee, Aug. 24, 1786; as a resident of Lee he bought two large parcels of land in Becket, Oct. 20, 1791; as a resident of Becket he bought two large parcels of land in Becket, May 19, 1792; as a resident of Becket he, and Susannah, sold to their son, Manoah Jr. a parcel of land in Becket, Nov. 8, 1796; as a resident of Becket he bought 160 acres in Becket, Jan. 13, 1810; as residents of Becket he and his sons Manoah Jr. and Cornelius sold 260 acres "Whereon we now live" to the State of Connecticut, Apr. 20, 1814; as a resident of Becket he bought 45 acres in Becket, May 3, 1814, evidently to provide a home during preparations to move to the new "Connecticut Reserve"—now called the Western Reserve.

While a resident of Becket and between the dates 1799 and 1806 he wrote a letter to EBEN BROOKS, a selectman of Harwich, in which he mentioned his brother Samuel. Before 1820 he, Susannah and most of their children moved to Pierpont, O. and settled on a large estate that he had bought from the State of Connecticut. The date of delivery of deed was June 28, 1820. Jan. 10, 1828 as a resident of Pierpont he bought 100 acres in Pierpont from Michael Webster of Jefferson, O. May 5, 1830 he and his wife Susannah (of the new Town of Richmond that had been set off from Pierpont) deeded 120 acres in Richmond to their dau. Susannah Turner. After the setting off of Richmond from Pierpont March 4, 1828, a part of his estate was in the set-off part. As residents of Richmond, he and Susannah, Jan. 15, 1835 deeded 55 acres in Pierpont to Lion (Sion) Turner (who married their dau. Sarah (Sally) of Pierpont). My grandparents, Paul Howland Esq. and wife Diadamia (Ellis), were the witnesses, and my grandfather, Paul Howland, as Justice of the Peace administered the oath.

Capt. Manoah Ellis was living in Pierpont before 1820 and gave liberally of his time to the public need; Apr. 2, 1820 he was elected Fence Viewer; so next day he was elected Overseer of the Poor; Sept. 22, 1823 he signed a bond for Edson

¹ Proprietors' Records.

Beals; after March 4, 1828 he continued to render service for the local public liberally in Richmond. Children of Captain Manoah and Susannah (Long) Ellis:

- (6) I. Manoah
 - II. Susannah, m. (int.) Oct. 11, 1805 at Becket, Mass., Jeptha Turner. Children:
 - i. Hamilton
 - ii. Myer
 - iii. Perry
 - iv. Silas
 - v. Manoah
 - vi. Ely
 - vii. David
 - III. Lydia, never married; d. Oct. 2, 1821, age 38; bur. in Pierpont, O.
 - IV. ELIZABETH, bur. in cemetery at Penn Line, Pa.; m. Paul Rice who after death of Elizabeth moved to Viola, Ill. Children:
 - i. Elizabeth, never married; bur. in Viola, Ill.
 - ii. SARAH, m. WILLIAM (); moved to Viola, Ill.; Children: i. CAROLINE and ii. CHANNING; both d. and are bur. in Viola, Ill.
 - V. Levi, m. Dec. 1, 1808 at Becket, Lois Snow.
 - VI. SARAH, (int.) SALLY, m. Feb. 16, 1809 at Becket, SION (or LION) TURNER of Worthington, Mass.; they moved to Pierpont, O.
 - VII. THANKFUL, (int. THANKFUL) m. Dec. 16, 1811 at Becket, Mass. JACOB PRATT, Jr.
 - VIII. Cornelius, m. (int.) March 10, 1812 at Becket, Mass. Ruth Turner: moved to Pierpont; he d. at Pierpont (or Richmond) O. Apr. 20, 1819 in 32d year of his age.
- 6. Manoah Ellis Jr.; known in Ohio as Capt. Manoah Ellis Jr. because of his war record; b. 1775; d. June 4, 1832; bur. in Pierpont, O.; moved with his parents from Harwich and later Lee to Becket, Mass.; m. Oct. 6, 1802 at Lee, Mass. Diadamia Perry of Lee.¹ They established their home at Becket, Mass. She d. Jan. 3, 1846 and is bur. at Pierpont, O. Due to abrasion on the gravestone, 1846 has been read and recorded as 1816, but 1846 is the correct year.

Like his father, Manoah became the owner of large landed estates. The Records of Deeds in Berkshire County show that: Feb. 1, 1799 he bought 46 acres of land in Becket; Sept. 9, 1800 he bought 53 acres in Beckett; Jan. 13, 1810 he sold 46 acres in Becket to his brother Cornelius; Jan. 26, 1811 he sold 12 acres in Becket to Jacob Pratt of Becket; Jan. 7, 1814 he and his wife Deidamia sold 200 acres in Becket for \$1,500.

The disposal of land by Manoah Jr. and by his father establishes the fact that they were preparing in 1814 to move to "the New Eldorado" then being opened to settlers in North West Pennsylvania and North East Ohio.

¹ Church record.

By Sept. 1, 1818 his occupancy of 150 acres of land in northwest Pennsylvania, along the Ohio line, was validated, and full title gained April 27, 1819; May 6, 1824 he sold 30 acres and 21 perches and allowances in Beaver Township, Crawford Co., Pa.; sold 13 acres in Crawford County, along the Ohio line, to his son John S. Ellis.

He made his will May 23, 1832 as "Manoah Ellis Jr. of Conneaut Township, Crawford County, Pennsylvania." In that will he commends "my soul unto the hands of God, my Creator, hoping for free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins and to enjoy everlasting happiness in the heavenly Kingdom through Jesus Crist my Savior;" committed his body to the earth; and disposed of his worldly estate in bequests to his wife and to his children. His wife survived him and lived with her children. She was a very religious person. This compiler is the owner of her hymn book. It is "a general Collection of 405 Hymns, original and selected, for the use of Christians" by Robert Foster. It was printed in 1825 by the "Christian Herald." This copy is "Second Edition-Revised." The Herald was supported by the Christian Church, one of the early denominations which finally joined the Congregational group. The markings show that her favorite hymn was No. 227, whose title is "Faith and Hope."

She survived her husband, and when my father was born, Oct. 7, 1832 she insisted that he should be named William Perry, and he was so named.

Children of Manoa Jr. and Diadamia:

- I. DIADAMIA (DEIDAMIA)
- II. John Sherwin was given the name John from the Ellis Line, and Sherwin in honor of Desire Sherwin, the mother of Diadamia; b. June 9, 1805 at Becket, Mass.; accompanied his parents in their move to Crawford Co., Pa.; moved later to Wisconsin, where he d. and is bur.
- III. OLIVER was given his name by his mother in honor of that name as borne by descendants of Edward, the brother of Ezra Perry; b. Sept. 1, 1806 at Becket, Mass.; accompanied his parents in their move to Crawford Co., Pa.; moved to Conneaut, O. and later to Viola, Ill., where he d. and is bur.; m. Mary () of Penn Line, Crawford Co., Pa. and had the following children whom he took with him to Viola, Ill.:
 - i. James
 - іі. Рноеве
 - iii. Olive
- VII. DIADAMIA ELLIS, b. Oct. 13, 1803, at Becket, Mass.; m. 1829, PAUL HOWLAND of Pierpont, O.

EMERSON

COAT OF ARMS

Arms —Bears per fesse indented or and vert, on a bend engrailed azure three lions passant argent;

Crest —A demi-lion rampant vert and bezante, holding a battle-ax shaft gules and head argent.

That Coat of Arms was granted to Ralf Emerson of Foxton, Co. Durham, 26 Henry VIII. 1535, by Sir Thomas Wall, Garter King of Arms.

- 1. Ralf Emerson, m. () Fines of Sigston and Foxton, Co. York, Eng. Children:
- (2) I. THOMAS
- 2. Thomas Emerson of Great Dumnow, Co. Essex, Eng.; b. before 1540 (elsewhere); d. 1595 at Romford; m. Joan () who survived him and administered his estate.

Children:

- (3) I. ROBERT
 - II. Joan, b. 1562.
 - III. John, b. 1565.
- 3. Robert Emerson of Great Dumnow and of Bishop's Stortford, Co. Herts, Eng.; was bapt. Oct. 25, 1561 at Great Dumnow, Co. Essex; bur. Jan. 6, 1620 at Bishop's Stortford; was proprietor of an estate at Bishop's Stortford, called "Muggells Dale," Great Dumnow; it is probable that these Herts and Essex Emersons are descended from George and Alice (Wyatt) Emerson (claimed parents of Ralf) but there is no available proof; m. Nov. 24, 1578 Susan Crabbe at Bishop's Stortford, who was bur. Nov. 20, 1626 at the same place.

Children:

- (4) I. Thomas
 - II. ROBERT, bapt. Apr. 12, 1590 at Bishop's Stortford.
 - III. JOHN, mentioned in his father's will.
 - IV. ALICE, bapt. Nov. 22, 1579 at Bishop's Stortford.
 - V. MARGARET, bapt. Feb. 21, 1581-2; m. T. Browne of Southwark, Eng.
 - VI. Anne, m. July 1, 1611, J. Fuller at Bishop's Stortford.

[192]

4. Thomas Emerson, bapt. July 26, 1584 at Bishop's Stortford; was Collector at Bishop's Stortford for 1636; m. July 1, 1611 Elizabeth Brewster, at Bishop's Stortford. She was living in 1653. They were Non-conformists and it was difficult, under the King's orders, for them to leave England; but disguised as a baker he left with his family in 1635 on the ship "Elizabeth-Ann"; after arrival and by 1638 he settled at Ipswich, Mass. where he became a landed Proprietor, and rendered—liberally - valuable public service; made his will May 21, 1653; will was proved May 31, 1666; it is recorded in Office of Probate Court, Essex Co., Mass.; d. May 1, 1666.

Children were all bapt. at Bishop's Stortford, Eng.

- I. Robert, bapt. May 24, 1612; m. Oct. 22, 1635 Elizabeth Grave at Bishop's Stortford, where they lived.
- II. BENJAMIN, bapt. Oct. 2, 1614; d. 1614.
- III. RALPH, bapt. Oct. 19, 1615; d. June 8, 1626.
- IV. James, bapt. Feb. 16, 1617-8; N. Lydia (). Probably did not come to America.
- (5) V. Joseph, b. 1620.
 - VI. John, bapt. Feb. 26, 1625-6; m. Ruth Symonds, dau. of Deputy Governor Symonds of Massachusetts; res. Gloucester; d. Dec. 2, 1700.
 - VII. NATHANIEL, bapt. July 18, 1630; d. Dec. 29, 1712 at Ipswich, Mass.; m. 1st Sarah; m. 2d. Lydia ().
 - VIII. ELIZABETH, bapt. June 14, 1623; m. John Fuller.
 - IX. Susan, bapt. March 17, 1632.
- 5. Joseph Emerson, bapt. June 25, 1620 at Bishop's Stortford; was early educated to be a minister; accompanied his parents to Ipswich, Mass. about 1638; as a Puritan minister he answered calls to the churches at York and Wells in Maine, and later at Milton and Mendon in Massachusetts. Because of the destruction of Mendon in King Philip's War he retired to Concord, Mass., where he d. intestate Jan. 3, 1680; m. 1st, about 1646, Elizabeth Woodmansey who d. before Dec. 7, 1665; m. 2d, Dec. 7, 1665, Elizabeth Bulkeley.

Children by 1st wife:

- I. Joseph, m. Mary ().
- (6) II. James
- 6. James Emerson, b. at Wells, Me.; d. 1756 at Mendon, Mass.; m. Sarah () who was b. 1663 and who d. in Oct., 1732 at Mendon, Mass. Res. Ipswich and Mendon, Mass.

- I. ELIZABETH, b. March 6, 1686-7; d. 1760; m. 1708 JOSEPH TAFT. Res. Uxbridge, Mass. From this family was descended William Howard Taft, President of the United States.
- II. SARAH, m. Nov. 4, 1709 DANIEL HALL. Res. Sherborne.

¹ "Ipswich Emersons" (Capt. Geo. ZA. Gordon, 1900).

- III. James, b. March 13, 1692, Ipswich; d. after 1747; m. Feb. 21, 1722 SARAH LOCK. Res. Uxbridge, Mass.
- (7) IV. John
 - V. Joseph, b. Dec. 16, 1696, Ipswich; d. 1745. Res. Reading and Falmouth, Mass.
 - VI. EBENEZER, b. 1698; d. after 1747; m. Feb. 20, 1730 ELIZABETH WALCOTT. Res. Attleboro, Mass.
 - VII. NATHANIEL, b. Aug. 19, 1701; m. Joanna (). Res. Mendon, Mass.
- 7. John Emerson, b. June 9, 1694; d. 1780 at Uxbridge, Mass.; was a blacksmith by trade, a surveyor by profession, and a proprietor of large estates; m. Nov. 16, 1721 Mary Rice of Reading (probably dau. of Nicholas and Sarah of Reading); res. Mendon and Uxbridge, Mass.

Children.:

- (8) I. John
 - II. Thomas, b. Feb. 2, 1725 at Mendon; d. Oct. 13, 1796; m. Nov. 25, 1748 ABIGAIL MARSH. Res. Uxbridge, Mass.
 - III. MARY, b. Sept. 17, 1730.
 - IV. Luke, b. Oct. 14, 1733; d. Nov. 4, 1774; m. Apr. 30, 1755 Ruth Emerson. Res. Rochester, Vt.
 - V. EZEKIEL, b. Feb. 14, 1735; d. Nov. 9, 1815; m. March 27, 1760 CATHARINE DORR. Res. Georgetown, Me.
 - VI. Sarah, b. Jan. 14, 1740; m. 1st, Jan. 1, 1763 Thomas Sabin, Res. Mendon, Mass.; m. 2d, Nov. 29, 1764 John Haskins. Res. Providence, R. I.
 - VII. Phebe, b. Aug. 17 1743; int. Dec. 1, 1759 John Hurlbut. Res. Uxbridge, Mass.
 - VIII. HANNAH, b. March 29 1747; int. Oct. 29, 1767 MATTHEW DARLING. Res. Mendon, Mass.
 - IX. James was mentioned in his father's will of 1768.
- 8. John Emerson, b. Sept. 6, 1722-3 at Mendon or Uxbridge; d. after Nov. 18, 1790 at Douglas, Mass. and before June 27, 1801; m. Feb. 27, 1745 Mercy Wood, b. Aug. 15, 1729 at Uxbridge, who survived him and as his widow d. June 27, 1801 at Douglas, Mass. Res. Douglas, Mass., where he was the village blacksmith and from where he served in the Revolutionary War.

Their children—except possibly the first—were all born at Douglas, Mass.:

- I. JOHN m. Apr. 17 1769 Lucy Hayden of Hopkinton.
- II. JOSEPH b. May 20 1748; m. Sept. 23 1767 PHEBE THAYER.
- (9) III. RUTH
 - IV. KATHARIN, bapt. July 24, 1757; m. July 2, 1777 Joseph Fairbanks.
 - V. Jude, b. Dec. 3, 1760.
 - VI. EZEKIEL, b. July 14, 1767; m. Nov. 26, 1787 PATIENCE BURLINGHAME of Gloucester.
- 9. Ruth Emerson, b. Nov. 24, 1751; m. Apr. 30, 1770 Abner Yeats of Uxbridge, Mass.

EMERSON

SECOND LINE

5. Rev. Joseph Emerson, m. 2d Dec. 7, 1665 ELIZABETH BULKELEY. After Dec. 1, 1669 they lived in Mendon, Mass. until its destruction in King Philip's War (1676) forced them to leave. Thereafter they lived in Concord, where he died intestate. The Suffolk County Court appointed his widow to be administratrix of the estate. The data as to children are derived largely from deeds in settlement of the estate.

Children by Elizabeth Bulkeley:

- I. Lucyan, b. Oct. 2, 1667; d. 1740; m. May 15, 1683 Thomas Damon; Res. Reading, Mass.
- (6) II. EDWARD
 - III. Peter, b. 1673; d. 1751; m. 1696 Anna Brown; Res. Reading, Mass.
 - IV. EBENEZER, b. 1677; d. 1751; m. 1st Bethia Parker; m. 2d Mary Boutwell; m. 3d (); m. 4th (); Res. Reading, Mass.
 - V. Daniel, b. 1690; d. (); m. May 19, 1709 Jane Armitage; Res. Boston, Mass.
- 6. Edward Emerson, b. Apr. 26, 1670; d. May 9, 1743 at Malden, Mass.; m. Jan. 27, 1697 at Chelmsford, Mass. Rebecca Waldo. Before 1703 Edward was a school-master at Chelmsford, where they resided with Deacon Waldo. In 1703 they moved to Charlestown where he was a surveyor of highways, a Justice of the Peace and a merchant. He was a merchant at Bradford next, and a merchant, 1725-1731, at Newbury. He took letters from the church at Chelmsford to the church at Newbury, and served as Deacon, 4th Church. He was an exceedingly devout man. His wife survived him and as his widow died April 23, 1752. Both lie buried in the field at Sandy Bank, Malden. From this Edward Emerson is descended Ralph Waldo Emerson.

- I. Joseph, b. Apr. 20, 1700; d. July 13, 1747; m. Dec. 27, 1721 Mary Moody. Res. Malden.
- II. ELIZABETH, b. Apr. 19, 1701; m. () EDWARDS. Res. Newbury.
- III. EDWARD, b. May 8, 1702; d. 1740; m. Nov. 13, 1729 HANNAH BEALE. Res. Boston.
- IV. HANNAH, b. Apr. 26, 1704; d. Feb. 2, 1705.
- (7) V. John
- 7. John Emerson, b. Feb. 27, 1706-7 at Chelmsford; d. July 11, 1774 at Topsfield; m. Oct. 23, 1729 Elizabeth Pratt of Malden. She was b. in 1708 at Malden, Mass. and d. Apr. 1, 1790 at Topsfield, Mass. Res. Topsfield. John was graduated from Harvard, 1726; was ordained 1726, and accepted the call Nov. 27, 1728 of Town Minister at Topsfield. He served 46 years on that call as a pious clergyman whose respectable attainments won and kept harmony in his church. He owned land in Malden in 1760 that came to him through his marriage to Elizabeth. That land is

described in 1762 as the land "of Thomas Pratt's heirs." ELIZABETH's step-mother Mary (Osgood) Pratt lived with them. Their children were all born in Topsfield.

- I. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 14, 1730; d. Mar. 5, 1825.
- II. John, b. Dec. 20, 1731; d. Feb. 4, 1754.
- III. REBECCA, b. Feb. 24, 1733.
- IV. Thomas, b. Jan. 8, 1735; d. May 9, 1813.
- (8) V. Mary
 - VI. EDWARD, b. July 13, 1738.
 - VII. Dorcas, b. March 5, 1740; d. Aug. 13, 1821.
 - VIII. ABIGAIL, b. Dec. 18, 1741; d. Apr. 24, 1769.
 - IX. ELIHU, b. Dec. 19, 1743.
 - X. HANNAH, b. May 19, 1745.
 - XI. DOROTHY, b. Oct. 15, 1746.
 - XII. JOSEPH, b. Dec. 14, 1747; d. Jan. 1748.
 - XIII. Joseph, b. Sept. 4, 1750; d. March 22, 1822.
 - XIV. EBENEZER, b. 1752; d. Mar. 12, 1752.
 - XV. CORNELIUS WALDO, bapt. June 10, 1753; d. Aug. 7, 1753.
 - XVI. SARAH, bapt. Mar. 12, 1758; d. May 21, 1759.
- 8. MARY EMERSON, b. Oct. 27, 1736; m. Oct. 21, 1761 John Baker, Jr.

FIRESTONE

The home of this branch of the Firestone family was in Germany.

1. NICHOLAS FIRESTONE, b. Nov. 26, 1706 at Bergund, Thal, near Strassburg, Germany; d. 1763 in Pennsylvania; m. Eva Catherine Nunamaker. He emigrated with his family, 1752, to Franklin, Pa.

Children:

- I. NICHOLAS, b. Apr. 17, 1734; d. 1807; m. 1761 Eva Schwab. Their home later was at Natural Bridge, Rockbridge Co., Va. They had three sons and four daughters.
- (2) II. MATTHIAS
 - III. John, b. May 10, 1746; m. () and had one son.
 - IV. MICHAEL, b. June 10, 1755; m. and had one son.
- 2. MATTHIAS FIRESTONE, b. Apr. 15, 1744; d. 1829; m. MARY ANN WEAVER (BEAVER).

Children:

- I. MARY, m. RICHARD KARL.
- II. JACOB, m. MARY HOLT and had five sons. Was in War of 1812.
- III. Solomon, m. () and had three children.
- IV. GEORGE
- V. MATTHIAS
- VI. HANNAH, m. FRED WIEHL
- VII. KATIE, m. () FIDDLAR
- (3) VIII. DANIEL
 - IX. JOSEPH
 - X. John, m. () and had two sons and six daughters.
 - XI. SARAH, m. DANIEL PERKY and had one son.
 - XII. NANCY, m. () MULLINS.
- 3. Daniel Firestone, b. March 31, 1797; d. Dec. 27, 1864; m. 2d, July 16, 1829, Nancy Lower; lived in Knox Township, Columbiana Co., O.

- I. John, b. Oct. 2, 1829; d. Feb. 6, 1885; m. June 9, 1866, Rose Prunty.
- (2) II. Solomon J.
 - III. JACOB, b. May 27, 1835; d. June 1839.
 - IV. Daniel W., b. March 31, 1837; d. Apr. 24, 1896, m. 1863, Susan Bushman. He was a farmer, soldier, County Treasurer, and banker.
 - V. Joseph, b. March 15, 1839; d. 1887.
 - VI. Louisa, b. Feb. 3, 1841.

VII. HARRIET, b. Feb. 9, 1843; d. Aug. 2, 1926.

VIII. DAVID, b. Feb. 9, 1845; d. Aug. 2, 1863.

IX. Perry, b. May 22, 1847; d. 1888.

X. Susannah, b. Sept. 16, 1850; d. Feb. 29, 1932.

4. Solomon J. Firestone, b. Oct. 2, 1833; d. July 25, 1912; m. Dec. 1, 1860 Anne Elizabeth Williams who was b. Sept. 6, 1836 and d. Dec. 31, 1926.

He was First Lieutenant in the Civil War, promoted Captain, Major, and Lieutenant-Colonel, for gallant and meritorious service in 23 engagements. He was Probate Judge from 1866 to 1873 at Lisbon, Columbiana Co., O. He was a Mason and a member of the G. A. R.

Children:

- WALTER SCOTT, b. May 17, 1862; d. Dec. 2, 1931; m. June 20, 1883 MARY OPHELIA MARVIN.
- Ross Williams, b. Jan. 7, 1868; d. July 6, 1936; m. Dec. 1897 Mary Starr Morrison.
- III. CLARK BARNABY, b. Sept. 10, 1869; m. July, 1906 BEATRICE STURGIS.
- (5) IV. FLORA
- 5. FLORA FIRESTONE, b. Sept. 2, 1872; m. Oct. 28, 1896, Anson Perry Howland, M. D. of Cleveland, Ohio.

Reference:—History Upper Ohio Valley (Columbiana Co., Ohio) Vol. 2, Pp. 222-223.

FREEMAN

1. EDMUND FREEMAN of Pulborough, County Sussex, Eng.; m. Alice Coles (sister of George Coles of Amberly, Co. Sussex); made his will May 30, 1623; will was proved June 18, 1623; d. (); bur. June 6, 1623 in Pulborough Church.

ALICE survived him and made her home with her daughter ALICE and husband John Beauchamp Esq. of Rigate, County Surrey, and London, Eng. As his widow she made her will Nov. 13, 1650 at her home in Rigate, County Surrey, in which she mentioned all of her children then living, and the names of some of her grand-children; bur. Feb. 14, 1651, at Rigate.

Children were born and babtized in Sussex County, Eng.:

- (2) I. EDMUND
 - II. Captain William Freeman Esq., d. 1666; bur. Sept. 16, 1666 in Cowfold, Co. Sussex; received bequest in his mother's will which was dated Nov. 13, 1650; m. 1st before Oct. 6, 1624, Christian Hodsoll who dwell before 1650; m. 2d () and had several children: Child by 1st wife: i. Thomas

There were several children by the 2nd wife:.

- III. ALICE, m. John Beauchamp of Rigate, Co. Surrey, a merchant in London. John Beauchamp and brother Edward were sons of Thomas Beauchamp (of Cosgrove, Co. Northampton) who m. Dorothy the dau. of Edward Clarke of Rode, Co. Northampton. The Beauchamp Coat of Arms and Pedigree of this branch is found in "Publications of the Harleian Society." This John Beauchamp was one of the merchant adventurers from whom our Pilgrim Fathers borrowed money in 1620. He invested heavily in lands and production in Plymouth Colony through his agent there, his brother-in-law, Edmund Freeman. Res. of John and Alice, Rigate, Co. Surrey, and London, Eng.
- IV. ELEANOR, bur. Apr. 7, 1618.
- V. John, m. (); bur. May 2, 1629.
- VI. ELIZABETH, m. JOHN CUDDINGTON.
- 2. Edmund Freeman, son of Edmund and Alice (Coles) Freeman of Pulborough, Co. Sussex; b. 1590 in Co. Sussex; bapt. July 25, 1596 at Pulborough; d. between June 21, 1682 (date of will) and Nov. 2, 1682 (date will was proved) at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony; m. 1st, June 16, 1617 at Cowfold, Co. Sussex, Bennett Hodsoll; res. Pulborough, Co. Sussex, but moved to Billinghurst, Co. Sussex, Nov. 20, 1620 and lived there until after Jan. 28, 1626-7 when they moved back to Pulborough.

Children by 1st wife:

I. ALICE, bapt. Apr. 4, 1619 at Pulborough; m. Nov. 24, 1639 Deacon William Paddy: Res. Plymouth, Mass.; issue six children; she d. Apr. 24, 1651 at Plymouth, Mass.

¹ Charles Edward Banks "Topical Dictionary of Eng. Emigrants to New England, 1620-1650," p. 172.

- II. EDMUND, bapt. Nov. 20, 1620 at Billingshurst, Co. Sussex; m. 1st, Apr. 22, 1646 Rebecca Prence, dau. of Governor Thomas Prence by his first marriage to Patience, a dau. of Pilgrim William Brewster; Rebecca d. after birth of first child; Edmund m. 2d, July 18, 1651 Margaert Perry; issue by 2d marriage, six children.
- III. Bennett, bapt. Jan. 20, 1621-2 at Billingshurst, Co. Sussx; she d. between Nov. 28, 1633 and Jan. 13, 1633-4.
- (3) IV. ELIZABETH
 - V. John, bapt. Jan. 28, 1626-7, Billingshurst, Co. Sussex; m. Feb. 13, 1649-50 Mercy, dau. of Governor Prence; res. at Eastham, Plymouth Colony, Mass.; had 11 children, the tenth was a son named Nathaniel and the eleventh was a dau. named Bennett.
 - VI. NATHANIEL, bapt. Sept. 2, 1629 at Pulborough, Co. Sussex, Eng.; d. Sept. 12, 1629 at Pulborough.

Edmund's wife Bennett d. Apr. 12, 1630 at Pulborough, Co. Sussex. He m. 2d, after Jan. 13, 1633-4 and before 1635, the date he and family boarded ship for New England, Elizabeth ().

VII. MARY, b. in New England; m. about 1653 EDWARD PERRY.

EDMUND had wanted to emigrate to New England earlier but the restrictions were almost insurmountable at that time, and he was obliged to wait until 1635. Then, with the influence of the Beauchamps, into which family his sister Alice had married, he sailed with his wife Elizabeth and children, Alice, Edmund, Eliza-BETH and John, on the ship "Abigail" to Boston, and settled temporarily at Lynn, Mass. Finding that government had become better established and could give better protection against the Indians than he had expected, he presented to the Colony of Massachusetts Bay the 20 "corsletts" that he had brought from England. He was a pronounced Non-conformist and moved to Plymouth Colony, where at Plymouth he was admitted as a freeman Jan. 2, 1637 and resided for a time at Duxbury. April 3, 1637 the General Court of Plymouth Colony granted the right to Edmund Freeman and nine others to establish a new settlement. A large number of persons from Lynn, Plymouth and Duxbury joined them in settlement of Sandwich, on Cape Cod, in Plymouth Colony, and in about two years the General Court at Plymouth incorporated Sandwich as a Township. He was the agent and attorney in New England for his wealthy brother-in-law John Beauchamp. He was highly respected by all and rendered valuable service to his town and to the Colony for many successive terms as Assistant to the Governor. His wife ELIZABETH d. Feb. 14, 1675-6. Under the custom of those days he buried her on high ground within view, on his dwelling house lot, and in the rear of his dwelling house, and marked her grave with a large boulder. After his death in 1682 he was buried beside the grave of his wife and another large boulder was placed to mark his grave. Those two boulders are called "The Saddle and Pillion."

3. ELIZABETH FREEMAN, bapt. Apr. 11, 1624 at Billingshurst; m. about 1643 at Sandwich, John Ellis; both of Sandwich, Plymouth Colony.

KIMBALL

1. RICHARD KIMBALL, b. about 1595 in England; d. June 22, 1674-5 at Ipswich, Mass.; m. 1st, about 1615 at Rattlesden, Co. Suffolk, Eng., Ursula Scott of Rattlesden who d. between 1639 and 1660; m. 2nd, Oct. 23, 1661 Margaret (Cole).

Dow, widow of Henry Dow of Hampton, N. H. She d. March 1, 1676.

RICHARD KIMBALL was living in Rattlesden about 1615, and being a Non-conformist, embarked with his family for New England Apr. 10, 1634 in the ship "Elizabeth" at Ipswich, Eng. After arrival at Boston he proceeded to Watertown, Mass. where his brother Henry had preceded him. He established his home on a six-acre lot which is now Cambridge; was made Freeman May 6, 1635 and became Proprietor 1636-7. Soon after he accepted the invitation of Ipswich, Mass. to become a resident there, where among other public services he was a Selectman in 1645. He made his will March 5, 1674-5. All his children were by the first wife, and were born at Rattlesden except the last three, who were born in New England.

- I. ABIGAIL, d. June 17, 1658 at Salisbury, Mass.
- II. HENRY, b. Aug. 12, 1615; d. after 669.
- III. ELIZABETH, b. 1621; d. after 1675.
- IV. MARY, b. 1625; m. ROBERT DUTCH of Gloucester and Ipswich, Mass.
- V. RICHARD, b. 1623; d. May 26, 1676 at Wenham, Mass.
- VI. MARTHA, b. 1629; m. JOSEPH FOWLER.
- (2) VII. John
 - VIII. THOMAS, b. 1633; d. May 3, 1676.
 - IX. SARAH, b. 1635 at Watertown, Mass.; d. June 12, 1690.
 - X. Benjamin, b. 1637; d. June 11, 1695.
 - XI. CALEB, b. 1639; d. 1682.
- 2. John Kimball, b. 1631 at Rattlesden, Co. Suffolk, Eng.; d. May 6, 1698 at Ipswich, Mass. He was appointed attorney in 1656 for his cousin Thomas Scott of Stamford, Conn.; executor 1665 of his mother-in-law Bridget Bradstreet. He made his will March 18, 1697-8; m. 1655, Mary, daughter of Humphrey and Bridget Bradstreet. Mary as a child had come on the same ship, "Elizabeth" that had brought John Kimball to New England.

Children, all born in Ipswich, Mass.:

- I. John, b. Nov. 8, 1657; d. Feb. 24, 1657-8.
- II. Mary, b. Dec. 10, 1658; m. Dea. Thos. Knowlton.
- III. SARAH, b. July 29, 1661; d. 1724; m. JOHN POTTER.
- IV. HANNAH, d. young.
- V. Rebecca, b. Feb. 1663-4; m. 1689, Thomas Lull.
- VI. RICHARD, b. Sept. 22, 1665; d. May 26, 1716.
- VII. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 22, 1665, twin.

- VIII. ABIGAIL, b. March 22, 1667; m. 1689, ISAAC ESTY.
 - IX. John, b. March 16, 1668; d. May 4, 1761 at Preston, Conn.
 - X. Benjamin, b. July 22, 1670; d. May 28, 1716.
 - XI. Moses, b. Sept. 1672; d. Jan. 23, 1750.
- XII. AARON, b. Jan. 1674; d. before 1698.
- (3) XIII. JOSEPH, b. Jan. 24, 1675.
- 3. Joseph Kimball, b. Jan. 24, 1675; d. 1761 at Ipswich, Mass.; m. 1696 Sarah Warner, b. 1675; d. 1754. Joseph received Apr. 29, 1696 by deed from his father the southern end of his father's homestead, as a wedding gift. His will was probated Dec. 14, 1761.

Children, all born at Ipswich, Mass.:

- I. SARAH, b. July 19, 1700; d. Dec. 4, 1700.
- II. JOSEPH, b. April, 12, 1702.
- III. Philemon, b. about 1704.
- IV. Eunice, b. about 1706; m. John Skillon of Marblehead.
- V. Mercy, b. about 1708; m. Nathaniel Skillon of Marblehead.
- VI. DANIEL, b. Nov. 11, 1711.
- VII. STEPHEN, b. Dec. 27, 1713.
- VIII. Joshua, b. Dec. 18, 1715; d. 1765 at Marblehead, Mass.
 - IX. DEAN, b. Sept. 8, 1717; d. 1771 at Johnston, R. I.
- 4. Joseph Kimball, b. Apr. 12, 1702; made his will Apr. 9, 1776; d. Apr. 10, 1776 at Scituate, R. I.; m. Sept. 21, 1723, Mary Graves who d. 1754. They resided at Ipswich until after their third child was born. They removed to Scituate, R. I. about 1730. Joseph m. 2nd, Mary () whom he names in his will.

- I. NARHANIEL, bapt. April 19, 1724.
- II. Mary, bap. Oct. 3, 1725; d. Aug. 20, 1727.
- III. SARAH, bap. Aug. 20, 1727; d. Jan. 28, 1732.
- IV. Joseph, b. Sept. 13, 1735; d. Apl. 14, 1803.
- V. SARAH, b. May 19, 1738.
- VI. STEPHEN, b. Feb. 10, 1740-1; d. 1800.
- (5) VII. MARY, b. Jan. 20, 1743.
- 5. Mary Kimball, b. Jan. 20, 1743; m. about 1764, Thomas Howland.

Reference: "History of Kimball Family in America" (Leonard Allison Morrison and Stephen P. Sharples, 1897).

LEONARD

1. Solomon Leonard: b. in Co. Monmouth, Eng.; d. before May 1, 1671; m. Mary (). He was a Non-conformist, and probably as an apprentice, or under charge of an older man (possibly his father Samuel) went to Leyden, Holland where he was with the Separatists as one of them. He was not one of the Pilgrims who came from Leyden—via England—to New Plymouth in 1620. The next group of Separatists from Leyden to Plymouth, consisting of 35, came on the second voyage of the ship "Mayflower," which, clearing Gravesend in March, 1629 under William Pierce, Master, arrived May 15, 1629 at Salem. The Leyden group proceeded in shallops to Plymouth. In May, 1630 a smaller group of Leyden Separatists came to Charlestown in the ship "Lion" under William Pierce, Master, and the Leyden Group as before proceeded in shallops to Plymouth.

He evidently came in the second trip of the Mayflower in 1629, as the first of the English branch of the Leonard Family to come to New England. The high regard in which he was held by the Pilgrims is evidenced by the fact that as soon as he arrived in Plymouth the Colonial Company received him with them, where he rendered public service of value to the Company. During that time he acquired a landed estate on Blue Fish River, near the Bay (in what is now the northerly part of the village of Duxbury) undoubtedly by purchase from the Indians, as one of the earliest settlers, if not the earliest, in Duxbury. His service with the Colonial Company evidently continued over several years as he was later promised and in some convenient place on the Duxbury side by the General Court, May 7, 1638, and Feb. 1638-9 was granted 25 acres in Duxbury.

His neighbors in Duxbury were Elder Brewster, Captain Myles Standish, Mr. John Howland, Mr. John Alden, Mr Francis Eaton, Mr. Peter Brown and Mr. George Soule. At that time Duxbury also included Pembroke, Hanson, Marshfield and a part of Kingston and Bridgewater.

Those last arrivals in 1629 and 1630, and some Pilgrims, constitute the group of 54 to whom the General Court in 1645 made grant of Bridgewater. Solomon was one of those Proprietors. The Indian title was cleared by deed, March 23, 1649. The new Town of Bridgewater was incorporated in 1656. It included the greater part of Abington, and what is now Hanson, as well as the "Four Bridgewaters." The north parish is now the City of Brocton.

The people of Bridgewater made contribution for the benefit of Harvard College. They believed in God and in their own responsibility to defend themselves against hostile attack. Their first Preacher taught them to give willing obedience to the law, and speedy punishment to its violaters. When the towns of Plymouth, Duxbury and Marshfield were combined into a Military District for defense under the command of Captain Myles Standish, Solomon passed the examination in

^{1 &}quot;Memorial to Solomon Leonard" (Manning Leonard, 1896).

August, 1643 and was found able to bear arms. Sept. 16, 1645 he exchanged property with Morris Truant. Here, as in the case of the "Blue Fish Estate," no record of deed of purchase can be found.

March 4, 1658-9 he with 12 others conducted an inquest on the cause of death

of an Englishman whose body was found in the River Tetacutt.

He d. intestate before May 1, 1671 as on that date his son Samuel made a deed to his brother John in which he stated that his father had died. Oct. 27, 1675 the General Court appointed Samuel Leonard administrator of his father's estate, and gave instructions concerning the division of the estate. As there had not been a full recognition of the value of his service, the General Court, after the death of Solomon, made a grant of land to his family.

Under the custom of his forebears in England he accumulated large landed estates for distribution to his heirs. As he died intestate he evidently died un-

expectedly and suddenly.

The list of their Children is not complete. Some died but we do not have their names:

(2) I. Samuel, b. about 1643.

- II. John, b. about 1645 in Duxbury; d. 1699; m. about 1670, Sarah, dau. of Roger Chandler; was well educated; gave generously of his time to public local service; owned a large landed estate in Bridgeport; did not divide his estate, but it was divided Aug. 30, 1701 among his heirs. Children:
 - i. John inherited his father's homestead by joint tenure with his widowed mother, and after her death by sole tenure. March 6, 1709-10 he deeded that estate to brother Moses and thereafter, as a single man, lived with brother Moses to Feb., 1726 and probably on to his death.
 - ii. Enoch, m. Feb. 12, 1706 Elizabeth (b. July 8, 1689) dau. of William and Susannah Hooper of Reading. Children: i. Enoch, b. Dec. 25, 1707 at Bridgewater; m. Abigail Perkins of Hampton, N. H. ii. Elizabeth, b. Sept. 17, 1719 at Bridgewater.
 - iii. Moses, m. 1st in 1705 Mercy Newton; m. 2d, Aug. 1, 1716 Mrs. Hannah (Woods) Witherbee; m. 3d (int.) Nov. 25, 1757 Mrs. Sarah () Hall.
 - iv. Josiah, m. 1st, Nov. 2, 1699 Marjorum Washburn at Bridgewater; m. 2d, Nov. 21, 1717 Abigail Washburn at Bridgewater;
 - v. Joseph, m. Nov. 19, 1712 Hannah Jennings at Bridgewater.
 - vi. Sarah, m. July 28, 1708 Thomas Washburn at Bridgewater.
- III. Jacob, b. about 1647 in Duxbury; m. 1st, about 1668, Phebe Chandler, sister of Sarah, wife of Jacob's brother John She d. before 1679. He m. 2d, about 1679, Susanna, dau. of Samuel and Experience (Philips) King; b. May 6, 1659 in Weymouth and who d. before 1730 in Bridgewater. Jacob was living in Weymouth in 1679. In 1684-5 he settled near Quinsigamond Lake, near Worcester. He lived for a short time in Taunton, North Purchase, now Easton, possibly on land granted to his first wife. But from Worcester he moved to Bridgewater, May 1, 1693. Dec.

- 14, 1716 he made his will. Susanna survived him and was one of the original members of the Second Church in Bridgewater at its formation July 7, 1718. Children by the first wife:
- i. Joseph, b. about 1670; d. Jan. 29, 1749; m. 1695 Мактна Окситт. Children: i. Joseph, b. 1696. ii. Ернкаім. iii. Мактна.
- ii. Josiah, m. (). Child, Samuel.

Children by the second wife:

- iii. Abigail, b. Nov. 11, 1680 in Weymouth; m. as his 2d wife Thomas Washburn.
- iv. Susannah, b. Dec. 24, 1683 in Weymouth; d. Nov. 19, 1764; m. March 22, 1714 EBENEZER HILL.
- v. Experience
- vi. Mary, m. Nov. 27, 1719 Benjamin Willis, who was born in 1696. Children. i. (Judge) Benjamin, b. Sept. 12, 1720; graduated at Harvard, 1740; d. July 3, 1807; m. 1st, 1742, Bathsheba Williams; m. 2d, Dec. 17, 1761 Mrs. Sarah (Spooner) Bradford, who was born Jan. 31, 1727 and who died Jan. 1, 1782.
- vii. Solomon, b. 1693 in Bridgewater; d. May 29, 1761; m. 1730 Elizabeth Perkins.
- viii. Sarah, b. June 11, 1699 in Bridgewater; m. Feb. 27, 1720-1 William Orcutt. Child: i. Jacob, b. May 2, 1723.
 - ix. JACOB, b. June 13, 1702; d. Dec. 6, 1722.
- IV. Isaac, b. about 1650, probably in Bridgewater; d. intestate about March 28, 1717, as he signed a deed March 27, 1717 and his son Benjamin certified March 29, 1717 to the General Court that he saw his father sign the deed; m. after King Philip's War, Deliverance (); served as one of the 840 soldiers, Dec. 19, 1675 in the "Narragansett Fight" in King Phillip's War. April 18, 1735 the General Court confirmed the grant of seven townships of land to those who participated in that battle. His share was drawn Oct. 17, 1733 by his son Isaac. Deliverance was also one of the original members of the Second Church in Bridgewater. He was a holder of landed estates in Bridgewater, in Mendon and in Worcester.

Children born in Bridgewater:

- i. ISAAC, m. Mrs. MARY (BAILEY) RANDALL.
- ii. Hannah, b. March 15, 1680; d. Apr. 22, 1753; m. 1st, 1697, David Newton of Marlborough who was b. 1672 and who d. Apr. 24, 1702; m. 2d, Nathaniel Manley. Child by 1st husband: i. Lydia, b. 1698. Children by 2d. husband: ii. Ichabod, b. Dec. 26, 1709. iii. Hannah, b. June 10, 1711. iv. Rebecca, b. May 29, 1714. v. Elizabeth, b. Mar. 11, 1716. vi. Mary, b. July 7, 1720.
- iii. Deliverance, m. Jan. 9, 1701 Samuel Washburn, Jr.
- iv. Joseph. There were five Joseph Leonards living in Bridgewater at this time, and identification among them has not yet been made.
- v. Benjamin, m. 1st, Aug. 15, 1715 Hannah Phillips; m. 2d, June 13, 1734 Mary Cudworth.

V. Solomon, b. after 1650 in Bridgewater; d. intestate May 14, 1686; m. Mary (). The inventory of his estate was taken May 21, 1686. Children have not been identified beyond a supposition.

VI. Mary, b. after 1650 in Bridgewater; m. Dec. 24, 1673 as his second wife,

John, s. of William and Ann Pollard.

Children:

- i. Joнn, b. March 20, 1675-6.
- ii. Mary, b. March 8, 1678.
- iii. Samuel, b. Jan. 16, 1680.

2. Samuel Leonard, b. before 1643 in Duxbury; d. intestate; date of death not known, but the last record of him is as second on the list of original members of the North Church of Preston, Conn., now the First Congregational Church of Griswold, on date of organization of that church, Nov. 30, 1720; m. 1st before 1676, Abigail Wood of Plymouth; m. 2d about 1700, Deborah (), who d. before Nov. 30, 1720.

He built a house on his father's homestead land in Bridgewater, under the then custom, and called himself a "Planter." Before 1690 he followed his brother JACOB to Worcester and was living there when his only son Samuel was taken captive by the Indians in 1695. During that captivity Abigail died of grief for her lost son. Almost immediately after the return of his son, Samuel moved to Norwich, Conn. and settled in Preston on the opposite side of the Shetucket River, to insure more protection against the Indians north of Worcester, Mass. who had captured his son, and some of whom his son had killed and scalped. The exact location of his settlement was probably on the advice and invitation of friends settled there, among whom were members of Major Bradford's family, and Josiah and Myles Stand-ISH (the son and grandson of Captain Myles Standish) and Deacon Caleb Fobes. He was an original member of the First Church in Preston, which was formed Nov. 16, 1698. His wife Deborah was admitted to full communion with the church, Nov. 4, 1716. He purchased his estate there from friendly Indians, near "Pachaug" in what is now the town of Griswold, where his son Samuel was well protected against Massachusetts Indian revenge. Eight days after the death of his only son Samuel, May 19, 1718 he deeded all his rights to "All ye commons and unlaid out lands within ye township of Preston" to his son-in-law Thamas Clark of Norwich. That deed was acknowledged Dec. 21, 1719 and recorded Jan. 19, 1720.

Children by the 1st wife:

- I. MARY, m. 1700 EDWARD NEWTON.
- II. MERCY, d. Dec. 24, 1749; m. RICHARD ADAMS.
- III. ELIZABETH, m. July 10, 1703 THOMAS CLARK.
- (3) IV. Samuel, b. about 1683.
 - V. Abigail, m. July 4, 1722 Isaac, son of Josiah and Elizabeth (Arresdale) Reed of Norwich, Conn. Children:
 - i. Abigail, b. Apr. 29, 1723.
 - ii. Ammity, b. July 10, 1725.
 - iii. Isaac, b. July 4, 1729.

Children by the 2d wife: VI. PHEBE, bapt. Oct. 17, 1703.

SAMUEL LEONARD, b. about 1683 in Bridgewater; d. May 11, 1718 in Preston, Conn.; m. in 1706 as her 1st husband, Lydia Cooke of Preston, Conn. and surviving

him m. 2d, Dec. 5, 1720 Nicholas Williams.

Samuel was living with his parents at Worcester, Mass., as a boy 12 years of age, when he was kidnapped by hostile Indians in 1695. The first information we have of him after that is that he was captive on Contoocook Island, at the junction of the Merrimac and Contoocook Rivers, in 1697. In that year Indians (some or all from the group who held Samuel a captive) attacked white settlers at Haverhill, Mass. They found Mrs. Hannah Duston still in bed following the birth of a child, and a neighbor, Mrs. Neff, who was caring for Mrs. Duston. They killed Mrs. Duston's infant before her eyes. They compelled her to rise. She had only partially dressed and they drove her and Mrs. Neff before them 75 miles to Contoocook

Island, where they held SAMUEL.

Samuel secretly prepared a plan for escape. As a part of that plan and without attracting attention of the Indians to his motive, he learned their dialect; how to kill instantaneously with a tomahawk, and also how to take a scalp. Later Mrs. Duston and Mrs. Neff joined him in the general plan and awaited the time when SAMUEL should decide to strike. He overheard the Indians plan to take them to Canada and there make them all "run the gauntlet." Samuel had taught the two women how to kill with the tomahawk and how to scalp. On the night of March 30, 1697 the Indians were in a drunken sleep. Samuel decided that the time had come to act and the two women agreed. Simultaneously those three killed three and continued until they had killed all ten of the warriors. Only one wounded squaw and one Indian boy escaped to the woods.

The danger of alarm by that squaw and Indian boy caused them to work fast. Samuel's plan was to escape by canoe down the river. The plan to divide the work after the killing of their savage captives was well carried out. All canoes except the one selected by them for their use were scuttled. Necessary food was collected and put in that canoe. With a gun, ammunition and a tomahawk apiece they were ready to "shove off" when, realizing that trophy scalps were necessary to establish the manner of their escape, they went back and scalped the Indians. Then after a

most dangerous and weary voyage they reached Haverhill.

After resting they accepted the invitation to visit Boston and arrived there April 21, 1697, where the General Court, June 8, 1697 gave 25 pounds to Mrs. Duston, 12 pounds and 10 shillings to Mrs. Neff, and 12 pounds and 10 shillings to Samuel. A report of their daring escape soon spread throughout the country, and they were raised to the plane of Heroes, upon which plane they still remain.

Samuel's safety from the vengeance of those Indians required that he move from the vicinity of Worcester and that he remain in obscurity. His mother died of grief over his loss and his bereaved father, with his restored son and the other children, moved at once to Norwich and then to Preston, Conn., where the Indians were friendly and where friends of his family had already formed a small settlement. There in presumed safety for young Samuel this family made its home. His secret of having tomahawked and scalped Indians was so well kept that very few identified him as the man whom the North Massachusetts Indians wanted to torture and to kill.

A fine monument has been erected on the spot where the 10 Indians were slain "in commemoration of a most daring act of heroism;" it was completed and dedicated June 17, 1874. On the western side it bears this inscription:

HEROUM GESTA
FIDES - - - - - JUSTITIA
HANNAH DUSTON
MARY NEFF
SAMUEL LEONARDSON
MARCH 30, 1697
MIDNIGHT.

On the opposite side:

MARCH

15 1697 30

THE WAR-WHOOP — TOMAHAWK — FAGOT

AND

INFANTICIDES

WERE AT HAVERHILL

THE ASHES OF THE CAMP-FIRES

AT NIGHT

AND TEN OF THE TRIBE

ARE HERE.

At that time Samuel's identity was not generally known and was kept secret to protect his life. Even Dr. Robert Caverly of Lowell, Mass. who published a book on "Heroism of Hannah Duston, together with the Indian Wars of New England" stated of him:

"Of Samuel's parentage, of his birth, death, or burial we have obtained no account. The three extraordinary incidents of Samuel's life—involved in his capture at Worcester by the Indians, his agency in the slaughter of the savages in the Contoocook, and his sedate, unostentatious presence in Boston, April 21, 1697, and again on the 8th of June the next following, there to received from 'the Great and General Court' of Massachusetts a complimentary reward for the heroic manhood of his youth—are probably the first and last that earth will ever hear of that heroic, generous-hearted, gallant boy."

Samuel was exceedingly intelligent and was highly respected in his community. His success in farming under conditions then existing was notable. He d. intestate and Lydia, who survived him, was appointed administratrix of his estate. The inventory of his estate, amounting to 412 pounds 12 shillings and 1 pence, was presented to the Probate Court July 8, 1718 by his widow Lydia. The Probate Court sitting in New London divided the estate of Samuel, Dec. 14, 1725, as follows:

to Lydia, the widow, one third part of the personal estate and life tenure in one third part of the real estate; to Ebenezer the eldest son a double portion, and to each of the other children a single portion (44 pounds, 16 shillings, and two and one-half pence).

Nov. 7, 1708 Lydia, the wife of this Samuel, became a member of The First Church of Preston, on letter from her previous Church, and had her eldest child "Lydia" baptised. From this and dates of later births we are able to state that

SAMUEL and LYDIA were married in 1706 (L. S.).

The children of Samuel and Lydia were all born in Preston and all bapt. by Rev. Salmon Treat, first pastor of the First Church in Preston, whose records show that, with the possible exception of the first born, all the children were bapt. in infancy. They were:

I. Lydia, b. Sept. 22, 1707; bapt. Nov. 7, 1708.

- II. EBENEZER, b. March 17, 1709-10; m. May 6, 1730 ESTHER AMOS OF Preston. The Colonial General Assembly in Oct., 1741 commissioned him to be the Captain of the Second Company of Preston. He represented Preston as Deputy in the General Assembly in 1744, 1745, 1747 and 1750. It is not known where or when he died, but a man of the same name was Deputy for the town of Killingly in 1758. Their children born in Preston were:
 - i. Esther, b. Apr. 22, 1731.
 - ii. Sarah, b. Apr. 22, 1733; m. Feb. 13, 1752 (?) Рніненая Неппіск.
 - iii. ELIZABETH, bapt. July 27, 1735.
 - iv. Elizabeth, b. March 14, 1737; m. May 26, 1757 Jacob Stevens.
 - v. Ebenezer, bapt. March 23, 1740.
 - vi. Amos, b. Oct. 11, 1741; m. 1st, June 24, 1762, Mary Partridge who d. Dec. 21, 1766; m. 2d, Jemima (). Amos moved to Worthington, Mass. after 1769. Children: i. Moses, 1763. ii. Amos, 1766; d. 1851; m. Feb., 1799 Lucy Meech. Children by Jemima: iii. Jemima, 1769; iv. Eleazer Cary, 1772; v. Joshua, 1773; vi. Mary, 1775; viii. Esther, Feb. 18, 1778.
 - vii. HANNAH, b. Feb. 1, 18743.
 - viii. Ziporah, b. March 16, 1746; m. Apr. 2, 1767 Daniel Gates.
 - ix. Olive, b. Aug. 17, 1748; m. Feb. 16, 1769 Asahel Tracy.
 - x. Ebenezer, bapt. July 8, 1753.
 - xi. Moses, bapt. Sept. 14, 1755.
- (4) III. SAMUEL, b. March 18, 1712.
 - IV. Jane, b. Nov. 5, 1714; m. June 6, 1737 Daniel Williams.
 - V. Nathan, b. Aug. 22, 1717; d. after 1775; m. Nov. 12, 1739 Abigail Herrick of Preston. He was commissioned: Ensign in Oct. 1751; Lieutenant, 8th Company, 1st Regiment, for expedition to Crown Point; and Captain of 2d Company of Preston. He was Deputy from Preston to the General Court in 1759. The General Court in 1768 created the new plantation called No. 3, in the County of Hampshire, into a town and named it Worthington. Before 1768 he moved from Preston to the area which be-

came Worthington in 1768. July 11, 1769 an order by Israel Williams, "Jus. Pacis," was sent in the name of the King to Nathan Leonard to assemble the inhabitants of Worthington at the house of Alexander Miller, inholder, at 10 A. M. on the first Monday of August (next) to choose all their town officers. At that town meeting Nathan was chosen as Moderator. He was selected as one of three Selectmen. He was chairman of the Board of Selectmen for three years; was one of the Committee of Correspondence chosen to communicate with the Committee of Safety in Boston regarding the safety of Worthington; was Deputy to the General Court in 1775; and was one of the first two Deacons of the Church in 1771.

The Children of NATHAN and ABIGAIL were all born in Preston:

- i. ABIGAIL, b. June 15, 1740; m. IRA PRENTICE and had 6 sons and 3 daughters.
- ii. Nathan, b. June 17, 1742; m. Jan. 12, 1764 Hannah Branch.
- iii. Amy, b. Aug. 25, 1744; d. 1824; m. 1st, Nov. 15, 1770 Beriah Curtis of Worthington who d. 1773 (?); m. 2d, Jan. 18, 1774 Elisha Benjamin; m. 3d, 1824, Barny Herrick; and had issue by 1st two husbands.
- iv. Phinehas, bapt. Apr. 5, 1747.
- v. Eunice, bapt. March 1, 1749.
- vi. Elisha, b. Jan. 2, 1751.
- vii. Phinehas, bapt. May 6, 1753.
- viii. Ezra, b. June 30, 1755; d. Apr. 15, 1823; with his parents moved to Worthington, Mass. about 1767; m. 1st, Hannah Marsh who d. about 1787; m. 2d, Dorcas Brown (d. Oct. 16, 1841). He was a farmer; was much respected in his community; was chosen as Selectman for four annual terms, and was elected Deacon in the Congregational Church in 1800. He moved to Williamsfield, O. now in Ashtabula Co. He was the first Deacon in the First Congregational Church in the adjoining town of Wayne, and with Norman Wilcox and Calvin Andrews conducted the church services, and was elected one of the County Commissioners in 1816. Children by the 1st wife were: i. Lois, 1782; d. 1830; m. 1812 Samuel Tuttle. ii. Truman, 1784; d. 1846; m. 1811 Roxanna Allis. iii. Prentiss, 1786; d. 1870; m. 1816. Harriet M. Stone. Children by the 2d wife were: iv. Marvin, 1795; d. 1862; m. 1815 Anna Lewis. v. Rachel, 1976; d. 1870; m. Elias Forbes.
- ix. Jonas, b. Apr. 21, 1757; d. Aug. 20, 1825; lived in Worthington, Mass.; m. May 31, 1781 Eunice Herrick of Preston who was b. 1760 and who d. 1831. Children: i. Olive, 1782; d. 1797. ii. Rufus, 1785; d. 1867 at Worthington, Mass.; m. 1st, Mar. 10, 1861 Electa Patch who d. July 31, 1821; m. 2d, 1822 Fanny Crowell. iii. Spicer, 1790; d. 1865 in Middleton, Conn.; m. 1st, 1816 Lucina Hotchkiss; m. 2d, 1820-21 Eliza Fields. iv. Roxa, 1792; d. 1824; m. 1814, Harvey Herrick. v. Caroline, 1794; d. 1884; m. 1817, Ozias Spaulding.

- vi. Alanson, 1797; d. 1882; m. 1823 Flavia Patch. vii. James Gaius, 1800; d. 1869; m. 1824 Huldah Fairbanks. viii. John Sumner, 1802; d. 1863; m. 1827 Hannah Wade. ix. Olive, 1805; d. 1814.
- x. Levi, b. June 26, 1762; d. at Williamsfield, O. June 28, 1832; m. Oct. 5, 1786 Kezia Benjamin; lived in Worthington; moved in 1805 to Hinsdale, Mass.; moved in 1815 to Williamsfield, Ashtabula Co., O. Children: i. Bartlett, 1788; d. 1875; m. 1st, 1815, Hannah Chapman; m. 2d, 1850, Mrs. Elizabeth (Woodruff) Wakeman; m. 3d, 1868, Amelia Beatty; had six children by 1st wife. ii. Temperance, 1789; m. 1819 Asa Herrick. iii. Roa, 1791; m. 1816 Hutchins Kinney. iv. Levi, 1793; d. 1879; m. 1817 Lucretia B. Palmer. v. Lydia, 1798; m. 1816 Erastus Chapman. vi. Sumner, 1800. vii. Olive, 1801; d. 1881; m. 1818 Rueben Phelps. viii. Lucy, 1803; d. 1889; m. 1823 John Thompson. ix. Asahel, 1805; d. 1881; m. 1828 Polly Tourgee. x. Lyman, 1807; d. 1873; m. 1832 Lorena Black. xi. Laura, 1809; m. James Stage. xii. Keziah, 1811; d. 1879; m. 1829 Thomas J. Tourgee.
- xi. Simeon, b. Sept. 17, 1765; d. Apr. 9, 1840; m. 1st, May 8, 1788 Espery Collins; m. 2d, Apr. 1, 1811 Cynthia Moore. Children by 1st wife: i. Achsah, 1789. ii. Tryphena, 1792; m. Lucius Hubbard. iii. Andrew H., 1794; d. in Georgia. iv. Emelone, 1797; d. 1882; m. 1822 Robert Lindsey. v. William, 1801; d. 1888; m. 1st, 1825, Mary S. C. Everett; m. 2d, 1853, Charlotte Miner; m. 3d, 1881, Elmira Gorham. vi. Edmund D., 1805; m. 1829 Elizabeth H. Remington. vii. Charles F., 1807; d. 1866; m. 1st, 1834, Eunice Higgins; m. 2d, 1863, Chloe A. Platt. Children by 2d wife; viii. Milton D., 1813; m. 1839 Emeline Olds. ix. Lewis D. 1820; d. 1882; m. 1st, 1846, Mary M. Griswold; m. 2d, 1877, Elizabeth L. Waite.
- 4. Samuel Leonard, b. May 18, 1712 in Preston, Conn.; d. Apr. 24, 1760; m. Aug-9, 1733 at Preston, Lydia, dau. of John and Mary ('Starkweather') Stanton of Preston, who d. May 3, 1760.

The General Assembly commissioned him a Lieutenant in October, 1751 and Captain of the 2d Company in May, 1753. He d. intestate. The inventory of his estate, amounting to 705 pounds, 12 shillings and 6 pence, taken by Elijah Belcher and Daniel Morgan, was presented to the Probate Court at Norwich, Conn. Aug. 5, 1760. Their children were all born in Preston, Conn.:

- I. Samuel, b. June 10, 1734; d. Dec. 21, 1808; m. Dec. 25, 1755 Mary, dau. of Joseph and Mahitabel (Tyler) Freeman of Preston. Mary was b. Aug. 10, 1735. He and wife Mary were admitted to the church in Preston. Mary was b. Aug. 10, 1735. He and wife Mary were admitted to the church in Preston Feb. 24, 1760. Their Children were:
 - i. Sabra, b. Dec. 12, 1757; d. March 19, 1773.
 - ii. Lydia, b. Dec. 23, 1760; m. Jan. 9, 1783 Daniel Braman. Children:i. Sabra, 1783. ii. John, 1795.

- iii. Mary, b. June 3, 1763; d. Jan. 9, 1820; m. Dec. 30, 1784 Belcher Starkweather who was b. June 23, 1755 in Stonington; d. March 1, 1831; s. of John and Elizabeth (Belcher) Starkweather. Children: i. Woodbury, 1785; d. 1800. ii. Thomas, 1787; m. 1812 Mrs. Hannah (Starkweather) (Parks) Foabes. iii. Mehitable, 1787; d. 1862; m. 1811 Daniel Morgan. iv. Mary, 1789; m. Ezra Standish. v. Leonard, 1791; m. 1816 Sarah Stanton. vi. John, 1793; d. 1823. vii. Samuel, 1795. viii. Elizabeth, 1797; m. 1818 Jedediah Hough. ix. Wealthy, 1800; m. 1823 Rufus Prentice Jr. x. James, 1801. xi. Ezra, 1803; m. 1826 Laura Geer. xii. Olive, 1805; m. 1828 Jepthah Geer.
- iv. Samuel, b. May 6, 1768; d. Oct. 14, 1818; m. Sept. 27, 1787 Elizabeth Braman of Preston who d. Mar. 14, 1844. Children: i. Lucy. ii. Polly, 1791. iii. Betsey, 1794. iv. Mehitable, 1796; d. 1800. v. Samuel, 1799; d. 1819. vi. James, 1803; m. 1824 Betsey R. Brown.
- v. Joseph, b. Apr. 1, 1773; d. July 12, 1843; m. Nov. 2, 1796 Mary (or Polly) Bliss who was b. May 13, 1773 and d. May 23, 1856. Children: i. Sally, 1798; d. 1800. ii. Joseph, 1801; d. 1886; m. Laura Johnson. iii. Charles Edwin, 1803; d. 1863; m. 1834 Mrs. Maria A. (Belcher) Lester. iv. Mary Lester, 1808; m. 1825 Prentice Kinne. v. Harriet Abby, 1810; d. 1817. vi. Charlotte Ann, 1813; d. 1885; m. 1831 Buel Kinne.
- II. Asa, b. Aug. 8, 1736.
- III. Lydia, b. March 20, 1739; m. March 3, 1761 Rufus Herrick.
- IV. EBENEZER, b. July 1, 1741; d. Aug. 19, 1815; m. Sept. 25, 1765 ABIGAIL AVERY OF Groton, Conn. who d. after 1770 (?). Manning Leonard states that there were several EBENEZERs in Preston and that it is difficult to identify them, but he supposes that this EBENEZER moved to Worthington, Mass. and m. 2d. ELIZABETH (). Children of EBENEZER and ABIGAIL were:
 - i. Benjamin, b. June 11, 1766.
 - ii. Sarah, b. March 20., 1768.
 - iii. William, b. May 6, 1770.

EBENEZER and ELIZABETH had:

- iv. Marvin (?), b. Aug. 28, 1779 in Worthington.
- V. Mary, b. March 20, 1742; m. Apr. 10, 1765 (?) Josiah Burton.
- (5) VI. John
 - VII. MEHITABLE, b. Sept. 28, 1747; m. Apr. 11, 1771 AARON BALDWIN of Canterbury, Conn.
 - VIII. OLIVE, b. Jan. 30, 1751; m. 1769 (?) ABIAL TRACY.
 - IX. Daniel, b. Dec. 3, 1753; d. 1804; m. Oct. 6, 1774 Mary Starkweather who was b. Feb. 16, 1759 in Preston and who as his widow accompanied the family of her son Lodawick Alanson to Meadville, Crawford Co., Pa. and d. there at his home in December, 1883. Daniel was a Sergeant in the Company of Capt. Isaac Marsh, which Company was in the

Regiment of Colonel Sears in the Revolutionary War. He lived the life of a farmer in that area now called Huntingdon, Mass. Children:

- i. Sally, m. Samuel (or Saul) Searles. They resided at Rome, N. Y.
- ii. Henry, b. 1780; d. 1847; m. 1st, Thankful Ford of Worthington; m. 2d. Phoeba Meecham. The issue was 7 children by the 1st wife and 5 by the second.
- iii. Lovina, d. 1833; m. 1st, Jonathan Weller of Montgomery, Mass. and moved to Meadville, Pa.; m. 2d () McKnight. The issue was 7 children by 1st husband and 1 by second.
- iv. Lodawick Alanson, b. 1790; d. Sept. 24, 1869; m. 1809 Isabel Lind-SEY who was b. Dec. 11, 1788, (d. Nov. 5, 1865) dau. of Moses and AMY (PARTRIDGE) LINDSEY of Blandford, Mass. He served in the War of 1812 and drew a pension in western land. In 1829 he moved with his family and his widowed mother to Meadville, Crawford Co., Pa. Children: i. Laura, 1811; d. 1892; m. 1829 Roland Walton and had 3 sons and 2 daughters. ii. Lewis, 1813; m. 1847 Lucy A. Winch, and had 8 sons and 3 daughters. iii. Isabel, 1816; m. 1839 JOHN MARSHALL and had 5 sons and 1 daughter. iv. Maria, 1818; m. 1837 Bates Lord and had 1 son and 1 daughter. v. Emeline, 1820; m. 1845 George Evans and had 4 sons and 3 daughters. vi. Samuel, 1822; d. 1853, unmarried. vii. Alanson, 1824; m. Candace Adams. They lived in Padanaram, O. a village in Richmond Township. They had 4 sons and 5 daughters. viii. Mary, 1826; m. 1849 Robert Smith and had 3 children. ix. Liberty, 1828; m. 1st, Mary Crouch: m. 2d, AMANDA DIKEMAN. Residence, Linesville, Crawford Co., Pa. Issue from the 1st marriage was 8 sons and 1 daughter, and from the 2d marriage 1 son and 1 daughter. x. Amy, 1830; d. 1860; m. Josiah HOFFMAN and had 1 son and 3 daughters.
- v. Annice, m. Eben Harris; moved to Morris, N. Y.; d. there.
- vi. Daniel, m. Cynthia Steel. Children, 10, whose names are not available.
- vii. RICHARD, d. young.
- viii. William, b. June 5, 1799; d. Feb. 22, 1852; m. Apr. 6, 1826 Sophia, dau. of William and Jane (Hubbell) Lindsey of Blandford. Sophia was b. March 27, 1800, d. Jan. 10, 1850. They lived in Chester, Mass. where these children were born: i. Fannie Sophia, 1827; m. 1851 Aaron C. Brown of Chester and had issue. ii. William Wallace, 1835; d. 1853.
- 5. John Leonard, b. Nov. 29, 1744 at Preston, Conn.; d. Aug. 9, 1826, at Worthington, Mass.; m. Apr. 26, 1770 Sarah Pierce, who d. Feb. 27, 1827. In the statement of intention of marriage he recorded himself as of Preston Co., New London, Conn.

His father's brother Nathan and his own brother Ebenezer had moved to the new area, called Plantation No. 3, in the County of Hampshire, which by the General Court was created a Town and named Worthington in 1768. That new area

attracted John and he made the necessary preparations to move there. Feb. 19, 1770 he sold an estate of 35 acres in Preston, Conn. to Isaac Wheler Stanton of Preston. March 28, 1770 he, of Preston, purchased Lot No. 49, containing 100 acres, in the Town of Worthington, Mass. from Josiah Farnum of Northampton, Hampshire Co., Mass. Sept. 28, 1772 John of Worthington, Hampshire Co., Mass. sold to Samuel Leonard of Preston, New London, Conn. 48 acres in Worthington.

All their children were born at Worthington:

- (6) I. Asa, b. Apr. 22, 1771.
 - II. Erastus, b. Sept. 1, 1772; d. Feb. 16, 1792.
 - III. LYDIA, b. Sept. 12, 1777; d. Oct. 25, 1846 in Sangerfield, N. Y.; m. Nov. 30, 1803 WILLIAM MEADER who d. in Apr., 1833 in New York. They lived in New Lebanon, Hudson and New York. LYDIA survived WILLIAM and as his widow lived thereafter with her brother STEPHEN and family in Sangerfield, N. Y. until she died. They had:
 - i. WILLIAM MEADER
 - IV. TAMMA, b. 1779; d. in Newark, N. Y.; m. John Daly and had:
 - i. Osmer
 - ii. Ezekiel
 - iii. William
 - iv. FLORA
 - v. Eliza
 - vi. ADELINE
 - vii. SARAH
 - V. Stephen, b. Oct. 21, 1780; d. Apr. 23, 1848 in Sangerfield, N. Y.; m. Anna, dau. of Moses and Anna (Terry) Bush of Enfield, Conn. Anna b. Aug. 17, 1782, d. Aug. 22, 1859 in St. Louis, Mo. as his widow. Stephen lived in Worthington at first and later moved to Sangerfield, N. Y., where he successfully raised fine stock. Children of Stephen and Anna were:
 - i. ORVILLE, b. Dec. 15, 1803; d. Aug. 6, 1818 in Sangerfield.
 - ii. Diana, b. Sept. 25, 1807; was living in 1896; m. 1827 John Seymour Jr., b. Jan. 4, 1804 in Sangerfield and d. Sept. 9, 1891 in Byron, N. Y. Children: i. Lydia, 1828; m. 1849 Isaac Durfee, b. in Sangerfield. Children: Ella Rose, Carrie, William, Ray. ii. Andrew, 1832; m. 1853 Elizabeth Cramond, b. in Albany, N. Y. Children: Libbie, John, Freddy, Charles, Fanny. iii. Caroline, 1835; m. 1852 Edwin Colson. Children: Eva, Evart, and Frank.
 - iii. Stephen, b. July 25, 1812; d. July 15, 1893 at Byron, N. Y.; m. Oct. 25, 1831 Sarah Mehitable, dau. of Joseph and Ruth (Williams) Crofoot of Williamstown, Mass., who was b. Sept. 24, 1812 at Batavia, N. Y. and d. at Byron, N. Y. Apr. 7, 1882. They lived in Sangerfield. After the birth of their children he moved to Waterville, then lived for a time in the West, and later in the South, but eventually returned to Byron, N. Y., where he sold driving and first-class coaching horses. Their Children were: i. Alexander, 1832; m. 1854 Samantha Bean of Byron, N. Y. ii. Wyman, 1837; d. 1878 in St. Louis,

- unmarried. iii. Porter, 1839; m. 1861 Rosaline Winsor. iv. Jeanne, 1841; m. 1859 Chauncey Staples Bliss and resided in New York. v. Rose Antoinette, 1844; m. 1868 Adelbert Cyrus Prentice and resided in Batavia, N. Y.
- iv. Charles, b. Oct. 8, 1816 in Sangerfield; m. Oct. 16, 1837 Betsey, dau. of Elisha and Deborah Williams of Williamstown, Mass. They lived in Waterville, N. Y. until 1857, when they moved to Byron, N. Y. Children were all born in Sangerfield: i. Nathan, 1839; m. 1861 Frances Hulett. ii. George, 1841; m. 1876 Linnie Dibble. iii. Alice Deborah, 1844; unmarried in 1896. iv. Mary, 1848; d. 1868.
- v. Orville, b. Aug. 13, 1823; d. July 1, 1859 in Florida.
- vi. Andrew, b. May 13, 1826; was traveling in South America in 1861.
- VI. EZEKIEL, m. FLORELLA KNAPP, dau. of a Presbyterian minister. He d. in Jan., 1814. His widow m. 2d Alpheus Nichols of Rodman, N. Y. Children of EZEKIEL and FLORELLA were:
 - i. Charles Ezekiel, b. Feb. 25, 1810; d. Feb. 19, 1890; m. Jan. 1, 1835 Catharine A. Yendes.
 - ii. Mary Florella, b. in Apr., 1813; d. in Sept., 1880 (?); m. () Burnham.
- 6. Asa Leonard, b. Apr. 22, 1771 at Worthington, Mass.; d. Jan. 29, 1816 at Pierpont, Ashtabula Co., O.; m. about 1797 Esther Brown who d. at Pierpont, O. June 27, 1839, in her 59th year.

The deeding of Lot 48, containing 100 acres of land in Worthington, Apr. 24, 1795, by his father, evidently was a wedding gift to Asa who was waiting for Esther to reach a marriageable age. The same day Asa deeded to his father a life lease to wood and timber on that lot.

The State of Connecticut withheld a strip of land across Northern Ohio. It was called "The Connecticut Reserve." Connecticut sold the Connecticut Western Reserve to the Connecticut Land Company. General Moses Cleaveland, the Agent of the Land Company was the head official of a surveying party that arrived by boat in 1796 at what is now Conneaut, O. He and his party celebrated the Fourth of July, 1796 before beginning the survey. That incident and much publicity about the survey attracted much attention in New England.

Asa had friends who had moved to the place now called Pierpont, and they made favorable reports on the new area. He decided to move there. In detail, to sell his land holdings in Massachusetts, to use the then popular route across New York from Albany to Buffalo, to leave his family with relatives on that route, then to continue the journey alone to Buffalo, and go from Buffalo to Conneaut by boat, and from Conneaut south to the place now called Pierpont, where he would choose his land, then return and take his family to the new home.

He began his preparations by selling 10 acres in Worthington to his brother-in-law, William Meader who was then living in Canaan, Columbia Co., N. Y. Next he sold his 100 acres in Worthington to the State of Connecticut, May 30, 1811 for \$1100, with a reservation that his father should have the privilege of taking from that lot all needed timber and firewood during the rest of his life. The quit-

claiming to the State of Connecticut by his wife Esther for \$100 was witnessed by Oliver Brown Jr.

As per plan, he moved from Worthington to Sangerfield, where his brother Stephen was living. He left his family there and went forward to Pierpont, where he made his choice of land and arranged for the quartering of his family there when he should come west to settle. He returned to his family. He then went to Hartford, Conn., where on Apr. 4, 1812 he agreed with Andrew Kingsbury, Treasurer of Connecticut, as to his lands. The deed was for two parcels of land: one of 93 and 154/160 acres, in Lot 2, and the other of 266 acres and 6 rods in Lot 5. The cost was \$900, which was a balance in his favor on the sale of his Massachusetts estate to Connecticut, and his purchase from Connecticut, of an estate in Pierpont, O. He then returned to his family in Sangerfield and remained there until travel west was safe. They came through Buffalo two weeks after it was burned, Dec. 31, 1813. After arrival at Pierpont they were quartered as per plan. March 14, 1814 he went to the county seat, Jefferson, O., and turned in his deed for record. He built his new residence of white wood. It was called "The Manor."

OLIVER BROWN Jr. promptly followed. In four months after AsA he had his deed for 150 acres next but one to the Manor of Asa Leonard.

In the late Winter of 1813-4 As a taught the first school in Pierpont, at his Manor. The people were pleased and in the following Summer built a log schoolhouse, the first in the new Town. As A Leonard was regarded as the leading citizen. Sorrow and grief were general when he died Jan. 29, 1816. Esther survived him. None of her eight children had reached the age of 21, and the youngest was a child in arms. She was brave. She was well educated. She raised all her children to maturity, as educated persons who were later greatly respected and held responsible positions during her lifetime. In addition to keeping her home and raising her children, she taught school and was one of seven to organize the First Church of Pierpont. As her husband d. intestate and she had a large family to raise and support, she, as widow, took over complete control of the estate. Anson assisted his mother in managing the estate. After that, son Elbridge, who was single during the lifetime of his mother, assisted in that management. He negotiated a division of the estate under which he took title to his father's estate, reserving to himself the Manor homestead and care of their mother Esther, and paid to the other children their equitable inheritance claims. Esther lived there in her Manor home to her death.

Children of Asa and Esther:

- I. Erastus, b. 1798; d. 1848; did not marry.
- (7) II. Anson, b. Jan. 28, 1800.
 - III. Elbridge, b. Feb. 10, 1803; d. May 18, 1883 in Willoughby, O.; m. Jan. 19, 1843 Phoebe Agusta Kellogg of Ashtabula, O. (whose parents came to Ohio from West Stockbridge, Mass. in 1811), who d. Sept. 16, 1873. In 1857 he moved to Meadville, Pa. to give their children the better educational facilities there. In 1869 he moved to Willoughby, which was then a great (local) educational center. He and his wife are bur. in East Cleveland. Their Children were:

- i. Florence Augusta, b. Nov. 10, 1843; was graduated from Lake Erie Seminary at Willoughby; m. Feb. 8, 1871 John Melancthon Page who was b. Nov. 25, 1833 and whose parents moved in 1828 from Northford, Conn. to East Cleveland, O. Their residence was Willoughby. Their Children were: i. Frances Augusta, 1872; was graduated from Oberlin College, 1894. ii. Grace Almira, 1876; became a teacher. iii. Florence Leonard, 1879.
- ii. WILLIAM ELBRIDGE, b. July 10, 1845; d. June 25, 1866.
- iii. Esther Adelaide, b. Feb. 16, 1848; m. Feb. 10, 1874 Charles Hiram Rudd who was b. 1849 and d. 1887. Their residence was Oberlin, O. Their children were: i. Clara Augusta, 1875; was graduated from Oberlin College in 1897. ii. Charles Leonard, 1877; d. 1878. iii. Laura Esther, 1779. iv. Paul Elbridge, 1881.
- iv. Phoebe Ann, b. Jan. 1, 1850; d. March 25, 1852.
- v. Clara Evangeline, b. Aug. 20, 1852.
- IV. Louisa, b. March 13, 1806; d. March 31, 1894; m. 1831 Israel Gregg who was b. in May, 1804 and who d. June 5, 1887. No issue.
- V. Almira, b. Jan. 2, 1808; d. Nov. 9, 1882; m. 1st, Jan. 7, 1830 Hiran Huntley: m. 2d, Feb. 14, 1839 Joseph Williams who d. May 30, 1883. Children by 1st husband:
 - i. Lydia Huntley, b. Oct. 20, 1840; d. Aug. 18, 1862; m. Dec. 25, 1857 Perry Benjamin.
 - ii. Louisa Huntley, b. May 16, 1833; m. June 16, 1859 Lewis Williams who was b. July 17, 1819.

Children by 2d husband:

- iii. HIRAN E. WILLIAMS, b. Dec. 14, 1839; m. Apr. 18, 1867 HELEN CARRIE who was b. July 4, 1846. HIRAN was Justice of the Peace and Treasurer and Trustee of Pierpont, O. Their Children were: i. Alice, 1868; d. 1872. ii. Frederic, 1870; m. 1892 Lottie Hardy. iii. Frank, 1875. iv. Margaret, 1878. v. Edward, 1881. vi. Louise, 1883. vii. Baby, 1885; d. 1886.
- VI. Maria, b. 1810; d. Aug. 22, 1895; m. 1831 James Payn.
- VII. Franklin, b. 1812; d. about 1875 in Pierpont; m. Polly A. Annise. Children:
 - i. Henry, m. (); had three children.
 - ii. HENRIETTA
 - iii. Charles
- VIII. MILTON ASA, b. Oct. 17, 1815 in Pierpont, O.; d. Dec. 21, 1887; m. 1843 HARRIET L. BILLINGS who was b. May 10, 1816 and d. Jan. 27, 1891.

When quite young he was taken into his family by his older brother Anson, who arranged for his vocational and professional training. He became: a successful farmer; an excellent school teacher, and a satisfactory Justice of the Peace for 32 years. He studied law in the office of N. L. Shaffer at Jefferson, O.; was admitted to the Bar and practiced law in Pierpont, O. Their Children were:

- i. Herbert A., b. Oct. 6, 1856; resided at Pierpont, where he was the Notary Public.
- ii. Ernest H., b. July 28, 1858; m. Jan. 28, 1887 Blanch Lillie and had: i. Lura I., 1890.
- 7. Anson Leonard, b. Jan. 28, 1800 in Worthington, Mass.; d. Aug. 28, 1872 at his home in Penn Line, Pa.; bur. in cemetery in Penn Line; accompanied his parents to Pierpont, O. while still a boy; m. 1828 Elizabeth, dau. of Emerson and Elizabeth (Porter) Baker, who d. Feb. 25, 1890 and is bur. in the cemetery in Penn Line, Pa.

He lived at the Manor with his widowed mother and other children and assisted

her in the management of the estate until he married.

He was able and popular. Apr. 1, 1821 he was elected Constable and Appraiser of Property. Apr. 7, 1827 he was elected Constable and Lister of Property. Apr. 5, 1824 he was elected Constable, Lister of Property, and Fence Viewer.

March 3, 1826 he was elected a Supervisor.

March 3, 1828 he was chosen as a Petit Juror, and was selected to lay out the Township (Pierpont) in highway districts.

April 7, 1828 he and PAUL HOWLAND were elected as Township Trustees.

Sept. 13, 1828, he was elected a Justice of the Peace.

April 6, 1829 he and Paul Howland were elected Township Trustees.

April 11, 1829 he was living in School District No. 3.

In 1830 he is listed as a Trustee with Paul Howland, and as a Fence Viewer. Aug. 15, 1831, he and Paul Howland were elected Justices of the Peace.

He purchased an estate of 99 acres of land with suitable buildings across the State Line in Penn Line, June 4, 1832. He was Justice of the Peace for that village, practically during his life. He was a strong Abolitionist, and accepted an election in 1850 to the State Legislature for the purpose of aiding abolition. He raised that issue in an able speech from the floor and, announcing that such action accomplished his mission, he declined re-election. He accumulated a large landed estate and in his will bequeathed an ample landed estate to each of his children.

Their Children were:

- I. Charlotte Perley, b. Sept. 22, 1832 in Penn Line, Pa.; m. Sept. 8, 1862 John Marvin who d. in March, 1894; resided at Turnersville, Pa.
 - i. John Leonard Marvin, b. Nov. 18, 1867.
 - ii. Mary Elizabeth, b. and d. Apr. 10, 1868.
 - iii. Stephen Anson Marvin, b. Oct. 27, 1869; m. May 26, 1891 Mary McCormick and had: i. Marguerite, b. Apr. 5, 1892.
 - iv. Charlotte Marvin, b. Sept. 26, 1871; m. May 23, 1891 Arthur Johnson.
- II. MARY LOUISA, b. July 18, 1833; d. Jan. 8, 1861; m. Nov. 10, 1851 WESLEY STRICKLAND M.D. who was b. Apr. 1, 1829; Child: i. WILLIE WESLEY STRICKLAND, b. Dec. 26, 1860.
- 8) III. Esther Elizabeth, b. Oct. 22, 1835.
 - IV. Levi, b. 1837; d. Sept., 1872, age 35 years.
 - V. Asa, d. in infancy.
 - VI. Myra Maria, b. June 2, 1841; m. Hiram Maloney who was b. July 4, 1833. Resided in Penn Line. Their Children were:

[218]

- i. FLORENCE ELIZABETH MAKONEY, b. March 24, 1875.
- ii. CHARLES HIRAM MALONEY, b. Oct. 28, 1877.
- WILLIAM ANSON MALONEY, b. Jan. 20, 1881.
- iv. Forest D. Maloney, b. March 19, 1884.
- VII. BYRON STEPHEN, b. Aug. 21, 1843; d. Oct. 13, 1877; m. May 30, 1870, CLARA T. TUBBS. Byron was a graduate of Cleveland Medical College and practiced his profession at Colburg, O. Widow Clara with children moved to Pierpont, O. Their Children were:
 - i. Fred Ansion, b. Aug. 30, 1873.
 - ii. MARY L., b. Sept. 10, 1877.
- VIII. HARRIET AUGUSTA, b. Apr. 10, 1847; d. June 6, 1887.
- EMERSON BAKER, b. Aug. 27, 1849; m. July 12, 1876, AMANDA, dau. of DAVID C. and MARY LEWIS of Mount Vernon, O. In addition to educational instruction at home, he was graduated from the public schools and from Kingsville Academy, an excellent educational institution which today would be called a college. He studied law in the office of his brotherin-law, Hon. WILLIAM P. HOWLAND, at Jefferson, O., the county seat of ASHTABULA County. He was admitted to the Bar in 1871 and became a lawyer of ability and success. He began his practice at Jefferson, O. and later moved to Warren, O. where he continued his practice of law. At the age of 26 he was elected Prosecuting Attorney of Ashtabula County and rendered such effective service that he was re-elected. He was a fluent and forceful speaker and an excellent trial lawyer. He was kind, considerate, and well liked by everyone who met him. Their child was:
 - i. ALICE LILLIAN, b. Sept. 3, 1880.
 - X. LILLIAN PORTER, b. Apr. 27, 1852; d. Oct. 10, 1893.
- BIRD Anson, b. July 17, 1856; m. Alice Roberts who was b. in 1856. They resided in Pierpont and lived in the old home of Emerson Baker, and later moved to Cleveland, O. Their Child was:
 - i. WILLIAM ANSON, b. Aug. 30, 1875.

ESTHER ELIZABETH LEONARD, b. Oct. 22, 1835 at Penn Line, Pa.; d. Nov. 1, 1890 at Jefferson, O., and is bur. there in our Howland lot in the cemetery.

As a child Esther was eager for education. She was well instructed at home but insisted on further education. She was graduated from the Academy at nearby Conneautville, then from the higher-grade Academy at Meadville, Pa. She then attended Lake Erie Seminary at Willoughby, O. which was moved to Painesville, O., where it is now located and operates under the name of "Lake Erie College for WOMEN." In her education, after mastering the common branches, she specialized in history, literature, logic, music, and oil painting.

At completion of school education, Esther taught at Rockwell School, west of Penn Line, Pa. and near the residence of her grand-father Emerson Baker, where she lived while teaching that school. At the beginning of her first term there, 44 students enrolled and later the number increased. Also the Rockwell School was not far from the home of William Perry Howland, who was practicing law at the nearby county seat, Jefferson, O. Esther m. William Perry Howland May 12,

1862.

LONG

1. Robert Longe, b. 1590 in England; m. 1st, Oct. 5, 1614 Sarah, bapt. 1595, dau. of John and Margaret (Willmote) Taylor. She d. in Eng. and he m. 2d, Elizabeth (), b. 1605 in Eng., who came with him to New England. His first eight children were born at or near St. Albans. About 1629 he moved to Dunstable, Bedfordshire, where he kept an Inn. July 7, 1635 he with his family embarked at London on the ship "Defense" for Boston. He brought a certificate from the Minister and Justice of the Peace giving the names and ages of all in his family and of one servant.

In 1636 he purchased the "Great House" at the foot of Town Hill at Charlestown, which had been built a few years before as the second building used by the First Church at Charlestown for services, and which then was being used as the Town Hall. In that building he opened an inn which he named the "Three Cranes," (some say "Two Cranes") which is usually referred to in the old records as the "Grand Ordinary" or "Grand Tavern." That inn remained in the possession of his descendants for nearly a century, and was burned June 17, 1777 when the Town was burned by the retreating British during our War for Independence. He died Jan. 9, 1664 at Charlestown. His will names his widow and 11 surviving children. His issue as given by Wyman in his "Charlestown Genealogies:"

- I. MICHAEL, b. 7, 30, 1615 at St. Albans. Came to Charlestown; wife Joana.
- II. SARAH, b. 10, 13, 1616; m. ABRAHAM HILL Sen., Charlestown.
- (2) III. ROBERT, age 16 in 1635.
 - IV. ELIZABETH, b. 11, 14, 1621; m. 1643, JAMES PARKER, Woburn.
 - V. Anne, b. 6, 1, 1623; m. 1643, James Converse, Woburn.
 - VI. Mary, b. 9, 5, 1627; m. Simon Kempthorn, Charlestown.
 - VII. Rebecca, b. 1628; m. 1656, Elias Rowe, Charlestown.
 - VIII. John, b. 2, 10, 1629, St. Albans. Sea captain. Innholder.
 - IX. ZACHERY, bapt. 1630, Dunstable, Eng.
 - X. Joshua, b. 1634, Dunstable, Eng. Graduate Harvard, 1653; d. between 1659 and 1693.
 - XI. HANNAH, bapt. March 12, 1637 at Charlestown; m. 1657 HENRY COOKERY, Charlestown.
 - XII. Ruth, bapt. June 3, 1639; m. William Whalley, Charlestown.
 - XIII. Deborah, bapt. Aug. 10, 1642, Charlestown, Mass.
- 2. Robert Long Jr., b. Jan. 17, 1619 at St. Albans, Eng.; came to Boston with his parents in 1635; m. Elizabeth, dau. of Capt. Hawkins of Charlestown; settled in Malden; d. 1648 on Barbadoes Island. According to Wyman their only child was:
- (3) I. Samuel

- 3. Samuel Long, b. April 23, 1647 at Charlestown; d. Sept. 15, 1671 at Malden; m. Jan. 20, 1669 ELIZABETH PINKHAM: Children:
- (4) I. ROBERT
 - II. Samuel Jr., posthumously b. Oct. 2, 1671; d. July 26, 1673 at Charlestown.
- 4. Robert Long, b. Dec. 9, 1669 at Charlestown; d. 1736 at Nantucket, Mass.; left Charlestown as soon as he was eligible; settled at Sandwich, Mass.; m. 1694, Sarah, dau. of James Jr. and Sarah (Barnard) Skiff of Sandwich; moved to Nantucket where he was a landholder in 1707. Children born in Nantucket, Mass.¹
- (5) I. SAMUEL, b. 1695.
 - II. JOHN, m. 1735, JANE (JOAN) LUCE of Martha's Vineyard.
 - III. JAMES, m. ELEANOR, dau. of ABRAHAM and ABIGAIL (BARNARD) CHASE.
 - IV. Daniel, m. Dec. 14, 1737 Thankful, dau. of Thomas and Hannah Jones.
 - V. BARNABUS, m. Feb. 22, 1749 PRISCILLA, dau. of ELIAKIM SWAIN.
 - VI. JONATHAN
 - VII. MARY, m. 1727 JOHN WAY.
 - VIII. PARNELL, m. NATHAN CHASE, Oct. 24, 1723.
 - IX. ELIZABETH, b. July 19, 1698 at Nantucket; m. Benj. Eastes, Sept. 11, 1719.
 - X. Patience, b. Dec. 8, 1709 at Nantucket; m. Oct. 13, 1727 James Whippey.
- 5. Samuel Long, b. 1695; m. March 14, 1717 Lydia, dau. Peter and Christian (Conde) Coffin. Children:
- (6) I. WILLIAM, b. Feb. 17, 1718-19.
 - II. CHRISTIAN, b. July 18, 1720; m. Elisha Ellis Oct. 11, 1744.
 - III. NAOMI, b. Aug. 2, 1722; m. CALEB STREETON; int. Feb. 28, 1756.
 - IV. Peter, b. March 29, 1725; m. Christian, dau. Micah and Dorcas Coffin.
 - V. ELIZABETH, b. Oct. 12, 1727; m. John Way Jr. (cousin) Dec. 20, 1750.
 - VI. BARTLETT, b. Sept. 16, 1729.
 - VII. JERUSHA, b. Sept. 4, 1732; m. JOSEPH MANTER, April 26, 1755.
 - VIII. SAMUEL Jr., b. 1738; m. Lydia Billings, int. Nov. 16, 1765.
 - IX. SARAH, m. SIMEON GARDNER, Nov. 22, 1750.
- 6. WILLIAM LONG, b. Feb. 17, 1718-19 in Nantucket, Mass.; evidently had met Sarah Cohoon of Harwich, Mass. and as soon as he was eligible to leave home he lost no time in going to her at Harwich, Mass., and they m. there Feb. 2, 1737-8. At the marriage he called himself William Long Jr. to differentiate between himself and an older William Long in Harwich at that time. Sarah Cohoon was b. March 4, 1719-20 at Chatham. His marriage in Harwich is the first record of him

¹ Vital Records of Nantucket.

there, because he had just become of age, and had just previously arrived in Harwich to marry Sarah Cohoon. They lived in Harwich. He made his will there July 10, 1773, which was probated Aug. 10, 1773. In that Will he mentions his wife Sarah, and children living at that time as follows: "Sons, Levi, John and William, and daughters, Mary Long, Elizabeth Laha, Thankful Nickerson, and Susannah Long." Arranged in order the children were:

- I. John, b. July 28, 1738; m. 1st (int.) Feb. 10, 1760 Jane Small (Smalley); m. 2d (int.) Feb. 6, 1779 Mrs. Ruth Clark of Chatham. He d. July 16, 1810.
- II. WILLIAM Jr., b. Sept. 12, 1744; m. (int.) March 7, 1767 Mrs. ELIZABETH HARDING of Chatham.
- III. THANKFUL, b. Oct. 1, 1749; m. (int.) Apr. () 1769 Mr. John Nickerson, both of Harwich.
- IV. ELIZABETH, b. May 1, 1741; m. (int.) Sept. 9, 1772 ISAAC LAHA.
- (7) V. Susannah
 - VI. Mary, m. (int.) March 15, 1778 Mr. WILLIAM CAHOON, both of Harwich; they were married March 29, 1778.
 - VII. Levi, m. (int.) Nov. 18, 1780 Deliverance Cahoon, both of Harwich. They were married Jan. 4, 1781. He made his will Jan. 28, 1826, which was probated Oct. 30, 1826. It mentions: "wife Deliverance; sons, Abijah and Levi Jr.; daughter Rebecca; heirs of following deceased daughters, Thankful Cohoon, Deliverance Maker, Mehitable Doane, Susannah Done; and of his deceased son Warren."
- 7. Susanah, b. May 28, 1752; m. (int.) Aug. 27, 1774 Manoah Ellis Jr., both of Harwich. They were married by Rev. Dunster, Dec. 8, 1774.

PERRY

- 1. Perry, probably of Devonshire, England, and possibly named John, but not necessarily the John of Roxbury, Mass.; was undoubtedly related to the John Perry of Roxbury (if not that John himself) and to Arthur Perry of Boston, 1638, one of whose daughters was named Deborah, and was no doubt related to Anthony Perry of Rehoboth, whose Line also named daughter Diadamia; m. in England and with some or all the children came to New England. The children are definitely located at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony:
- (2) I. Ezra
 - II. Edward, b. 1630 in Devonshire, England; m. about 1653 Mary Freeman, dau. of Edmund Freeman (Assistant to Governor Prence, 1640-6) b. Pulborough, Essex, Eng. about 1594, who brought his family to New England and lived at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony. The name of his 2nd wife was Elizabeth (probably Graveley) of Herts, Eng. whom he m. about Oct. 13, 1617; she d. Feb. 14, 1676, probably at Sandwich. From this Edward and his wife Mary who lived at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, were descended those two brother national heroes: Oliver Hazzard Perry who won our great Battle of Lake Erie, Sept. 10, 1813; and Matthew Calbraith Perry who by force broke the isolation of Japan on March 4, 1858, and opened that country to international commerce.
 - III. MARGARET, who lived at Sandwich contemporaneously with Ezra and EDWARD.
 - IV. Deborah, who lived at Sandwich contemporaneously with Ezra and Edward.
- 2. Ezra, b. 1625 in England (probably Devonshire); d. Oct. 16, 1689 at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony; m. Feb. 12, 1651-2 at Sandwich, Elizabeth Burgess, b. 1729 in England, dau. of Thomas and wife Dorothy () Burgess: Elizabeth d. in 1717 at Sandwich. They lived in Sandwich, Plymouth Colony.

June 7, 1644 he was listed to pay a certain amount of Indian corn towards repair to the Meeting House. He first settled at Herring River village on a part of the land granted in 1652 to his father-in-law, Thomas Burgess. About 1663 he bought from his father-in-law the rest of the land of the present Monument Neck, where he built his second house at Manamet, near the site in 1937 of the present Bourne Depot. Between 1666 and 1684 he acquired other large tracts of Manamet lands, especially woodland and salt meadow land. As early as 1652 his father-in-law was granted by the General Court at Plymouth a large tract of land in consideration of his public services. On that grant so received by his father-in-law was erected

¹ Vital Records of Sandwich, Mass. and "Mayflower Descendants" Vol. XIV; XXIX.

the Pilgrim-Dutch Trading Post "Aptucxet" which was the first building on Monument Neck. The first old houses on that land were those of Ezra and his sons. Captain Standish assisted in bringing that grant of land March 3, 1652 to Thomas Burgess. In 1666-7 a grant of meadow land was made to Ezra, near to the land of Governor Freeman in Barnstable. In 1677 Ezra and his son Ezra Jr. were added to the list of Townsmen of Sandwich, Plymouth Colony. He made his will Oct. 16, 1689. It was probated April 18, 1690. Among his bequests was "one shilling to my son John." The Inventory was taken Oct. 24, 1689 and sworn to on April 18, 1690 by his widow Elizabeth.

The widow Elizabrth, Nov. 25, 1694 was admitted to the First Church of Sandwich Mass, which after 1692, was a Congregational Church. That beginning took all of this branch of the Perry Family into the Congregational Church, which membership was continued after departure from Cape Cod. The first regularly established Congregational minister in Sandwich was Rev. Rowland Cotton, who took that call in 1694. Although the earlier records have been lost, those from 1694 are in place and have been examined.

The gravestones of Ezra and his wife Elizabeth are still seen "side by side" at the place designated in the will.

Their children were all born at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony:

I. Ezra, b. Feb. 11, 1652-3; d. Jan. 31, 1729-30 at Sandwich; m. Rebecca Freeman, dau. of Edmund Freeman, Jr. and his 1st wife, Rebecca Prence (dau. of Gov. Thomas Prence and his 1st wife Patience, the dau. of Pilgrim William Brewster).

Children:

- i. Ezra, b. Feb. 2, 1679-80; m. about 1707, Bethia Tupper.
- ii. Hannah, b. Sept. 10, 1681.
- iii. EDMUND, b. Oct. 20, 1683.
- iv. Freelove, b. Nov. 28, 1685.
- v. Samuel, b. March 20, 1687-8; m. Sarah ().
- vi. Rebecca, b. Oct. 2, 1689; m. Dec. 27, 1711 Jonathan Washburne. He d. Jan. 31, 1729-30; she d. Apr. 16, 1738.
- vii. Patience, b. Feb. 2, 1691-2.
- viii. MARY, m. ISAAC BOMPASSE.
- II. Deborah, b. Nov. 28, 1654; d. Feb. 19, 1711; m. about 1674-5, Seth Pope.
- (3) III. John
 - IV. Samuel, b. "about the middle of March," 1667; d. 1750; m. Oct. 23, 1689 at Sandwich, Esther Taber of Dartmouth.
 - V. Benjamin, b. Jan. 15, 1679; m. Dinah Swift; resided at Sandwich.
 - VI. Remember, b. "first of January," 1676; was living Oct. 16, 1689, the date of her father's Will.
 - VII. SARAH, mentioned in her father's Will Oct. 16, 1689; m. EPHRAIM SWIFT.
- 3. John Perry, b. Jan. 1, 1656-7; d. Oct. 31, 1732 at Sandwich; m. about 1683 Elizabeth () who d. Apr. 23, 1727 at Sandwich. There is not sufficient evi-

dence to state that she was ELIZABETH CROWELL, as claimed by many. She resided at Sandwich.

JOHN took the oath of fidelity in Sandwich in 1681. He built his house on the north side of the road leading to Monument Neck, which after being used by three generations of his descendants, was burned in 1794. In 1702 his name and the name of his brother Ezra were on the list of Freemen in Sandwich.

Nov. 25, 1694 his wife Elizabeth was admitted to the First Church in Sandwich, and July 24, 1720 he was received as a member, as shown on the original Church records. That First Church is the Congregational Church. The Pastor, Rev. Benjamin Fessenden—1722 to 1746—compiled a list of the Heads of Families in Sandwich in March, 1730 in which the name of John appears.

JOHN made his will June 6, 1727. It was probated Nov. 6, 1732. He made bequests to all his children who were then alive. He and his wife ELIZABETH, who

preceded him, are in the Old Burying Ground at Sandwich.

From the Vital Town Records of Sandwich, the Church baptismal records, and his will, we know that all the children were born in the following order at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, to 1692 and thereafter in Massachusetts. The names of the 6th, 8th and 10th children in the Vital Town Records have been effaced by time.

- (4) I. John.
 - II. Joanna, b. Aug. 1, 1686; m. Dec. 18, 1707 in Sandwich, Joseph Bennet of Middleborough, Mass.
 - III. Timothy, b. Sept. 30, 1689; m. Nov. 6, 1719 at Sandwich, Desire Handy.
 - IV. Experience, b. March 1, 1691-2; m. Dec. 1, 1719 at Sandwich, Hanni-Bal Handy.
 - V. Ezra, b. May 31, 1693; m. Mehitable ().
 - VI. JACOB, b. Dec. 1, 1696; bapt. May 16, 1697; mentioned in father's Will.
 - VII. ARTHUR, b. b. Nov. 27, 1698; d. before June 6, 1727; not mentioned in father's Will.
 - VIII. —, neither name nor sex known; b. Dec. 30, 1699; mentioned in Frederick Freeman's Notes.
 - IX. ELIJAH, b. Apr. 2, 1701; bapt. June 22, 1701 in First Church; m. Hannah ().
 - X. Elisha, b. Apr. 2, 1701; bapt. July 30, 1704 in First Church; m. Anna Saunders of Plymouth, Mass.
- 4. John Perry, b. Apr. 30, 1684; d. between July 29, 1760 and Oct. 10, 1760 at Sandwich; m. about 1716, Abigail () who d. between Apr. 21, 1763 and March 1, 1764; resided at Sandwich, Mass.

He built his house in the southerly part of Monument, which remained in the Perry Family until 1925, when it was sold.

He made his will July 29, 1760. It was probated Oct. 10, 1760. He appointed his son Arthur executor and made bequests to his wife and all living children.¹

Their children were all born in Sandwich and except John were baptised into the Congregational Church there.

¹ Barnstable Probate Records.

- I. John, b. Oct. 31, 1717; d. before Nov. 23, 1735 as he was not bapt. with brothers and sisters on that day, and also was not mentioned in his father's will.
- II. SILAS, b. Nov. 24, 1718; bapt. Nov. 23, 1735; d. between July 29, 1760 (date of father's will) and May 1, 1764 (date when estate of his father was divided among the children).
- III. ELIZABETH, b. March 3, 1719-20; bapt. Nov. 23, 1735; d. before July 29, 1760 as she is not mentioned in her father's will.
- IV. ARTHUR, b. July 18, 1721; bapt. Nov. 23, 1735; d. May 7, 1794 at Lee, Mass.; m. Nov. 28, 1751 at Sandwich, Catherine (b. 1733) dau. of Reuben² Gifford (Justice¹) and Phebe.

His wife survived and as his wid. d. Feb. 5, 1818 at Lee.

He became much interested in the new land opened for settlement in Berkshire Co., Mass., undoubtedly on information sent to him by his younger brother David. While still living in Sandwich, Barnstable Co., Mass. he purchased 425 acres in three parcels in the part of that new area called Hartwood.

He moved with his family to Hartwood and was resident there on Apr. 14, 1775. As a resident of Hartwood he sold 200 of those acres—in two parcels—in 1775. As a resident of Lee (formerly Hartwood) he bought and sold land to include the date Jan. 4, 1791 when he sold 220 acres of land in Lee, north of the estate of his son William. All their children were born at Sandwich, Mass. and except possibly William were bapt. there in the Congregational Church, in the following order:

- i. WILLIAM, b. about 1754; m. CONTENT () after the family moved to Lee, Berkshire Co., Mass. Their children were born at Lee in the following order: i. Fear, 1777. ii. Hannah, 1778. iii. Phebe, 1780. iv. Lucy, 1781. v. Ruth, 1783. vi. Sarah, 1784. vii. John, 1788.
- ii. Ruтн, bapt. 1761.
- iii. Mary, bapt. Sept. 10, 1761.
- iv. Joanna, bapt. Sept. 10, 1761.
- v. Chloe, bapt. Nov. 3, 1762.
- vi. Phebe, bapt. Nov. 18, 1764.
- vii. ABRAHAM, bapt. Apr. 8, 1766; became a large land owner in Lee; m. Feb. 24, 1788 TEMPERENCE HATCH of Sharon; children were all born at Lee: i. Polly, 1789. ii. Polly, 1790. iii. Arthur, 1792. iv. Diadama, 1792. v. Abraham, 1797. vi. Lyman, 1801. vii. Temperance (called Tempey), 1803.
- V. ZACHARAIH, b. March 23, 1722-3; bapt. Nov. 23, 1735.
- VI. ABIGAIL, b. March 26, 1725; bapt. July 13, 1736; m. Apr. 19, 1750 at Sandwich Seth Tobey (?).
- VII. REMEMBER, b. June 25, 1727; bapt. July 13, 1736; m. June 15, 1758 Jonathan Chappel. They resided at Hebron, Conn.
- (5) VIII. DAVIE
 - IX. Mary, b. Feb. 22, 1730-1; bapt. July 13, 1736; m. Jan. 14, 1746-7 at Sandwich, Job Handy.

5. David Perry, b. Apr. 1, 1729; bapt. July 13, 1736 into the Congregational Church—the First Parish in Sandwich—July 13, 1736; d. Oct. 31, 1807 at Ashfield, Mass., aged 78 years and 6 months; m. 1st. March 5, 1761 at Hebron, Conn., Hannah Sherwin who d. at birth or just after birth of her dau. Deidamia.

He m. 2nd. in 1774 at Hebron, Conn. Kezia (Desire) Root, b. June 12, 1729 at Hebron as dau. of Nathaniel Root, who m. Dec. 28, 1725 at Hebron, Mary Tarbox. Desire (Kezia or Caziah) d. Dec. 19, 1797 at Lee, Mass. in the 68th year of her age.

David received a money bequest in his father's Will, instead of real estate, so he was not tied to Sandwich as a property owner. In 1760 or 1761 he followed his sister Remember to Hebron, where she was living as the wife of Jonathan Chappel. There David met his future wife Hannah Sherwin, and moved with them to Ashfield, Mass.

The Census of 1790 shows him and wife living at Lee, Mass. where he and his 2nd wife Desire were admitted to the Congregational Church: the 2nd wife Desire in 1797, his dau. Deidama, evidently coming from Ashfield, joined him at Lee and Apr. 22, 1798 was received by the Congregational Church to their communion and fellowship. They planned to return to Ashfield, and the Congregational Church gave them letters to the Church in Ashfield. But David did not return to Ashfield until after the marriage of Deidama to Manoah Ellis Jr. at the Congregational Church at Lee, Oct. 6, 1802.

The children of DAVID were by his 1st wife:

- I. Hannah, b. Jan. 21, 1762 in Hebron, Conn.
- II. SILAS, b. Apr. 18, 1763 in Hebron, Conn.; m. May 19, 1785 THANKFUL NORTON.
- III. John, b. 1770 at Ashfield; d. Dec. 12, 1838 at Ashfield, Mass.; m. Jan. 4, 1793 at Ashfield (old records call it Leyden) Mass. Eunice Coolidge, a descendant of John Coolidge from Cottenham, Cambridge, Eng. and his wife Mary.

On this line from John and Mary Coolings is also descended Calvin Coolings, late President of the United States.

John and Eunice frequently entertained his parents and his sister Deidamia, and also Sherwin relatives on his estate at Ashfield, Mass. He made his Will Dec. 11, 1838. It was probated March 12, 1839. It mentions his heirs.

The children of John and Eunice were all born at Ashfield, Mass. in the following order.

- i. Hannah, b. Aug. 20, 1793; m. () Lantimer.
- ii. Salmon, b. Aug. 6, 1795; d. Aug. 4, 1871 at Westford, Mass.
- iii. David, b. Apr. 13, 1798.
- iv. Daniel, b. Apr. 6, 1800.
- v. Eunice, b. Aug. 15, 1802; m. (int.) June 14, 1828 Asa Tucker of New Hartford, N. Y.
- vi. Alvin, b. Feb. 10, 1806; d. Nov. 7, 1871 at Boston, where he was a Courthouse officer.

- vii. John Sherwin, b. May 18, 1810; bapt. into the Congregational Church at Ashfield, June 23, 1822; d. July 18, 1865 at Wilmington, Mass.
- viii. William, b. Aug. 15, 1815; bapt. June 23, 1822; d. Oct. 19, 1858 at Ashfield.
- (6) IV. DEIDEMIA
- 6. Deidamia Perry, b. 1774 at Ashfield; lived with her parents at Ashfield and at Lee, Mass. and also visited for long periods at her brother John's home at her home town of Ashfield, Mass., under a local custom in that Perry family, of regarding Ashfield really as their home town; was received Apr. 22, 1798 into the Congregational Church at Lee "to their Communion and fellowship" (undoubtedly on letter from the Congregational Church at Ashfield); Sept. 7, 1798 she and her father David were on their request given letters recommending them to the Congregational Church at Ashfield, which was the Church over which her uncle Jacob Sherwin was Pastor from Feb. 23, 1763 to May 17, 1774; they either remained at Lee or returned later to Lee; she m. Oct. 6, 1802, as a resident of Lee, and at Lee in the Congregational Church, Manoah Ellis Jr. of Becket, Mass.

PIERCE

1. Thomas Pierce¹, b. 1583-4 in England; d. Oct. 7, 1666 at Charlestown, Mass.; m. Elizabeth () in England, who was born in England, and who surviving her husband was living at the age of 71 years in 1667.

They were Non-conformist, and came to New England in 1633-4. She was admitted to the Church at Charlestown, Mass. "10-(11)-1634-5" and he was admitted "21-12-1634-5."

He was granted four acres of land in Charlestown for his homestead, and by 1638 owned a considerable estate there. He was chosen by the General Court, Sept. 27, 1642 to be one of 21 commissioners "To see that salt petre heaps were made by all farmers of the colony."

Their children, perhaps not in order of birth, were:

- I. JOHN
- II. SAMUEL, d. Sept. 1678; m. MARY ().
- (2) III. THOMAS
 - IV. ROBERT, m. Feb. 15, 1657, SARAH ().
 - V. MARY, m. PETER TUFTS.
 - VI. ELIZABETH, d. Apr. 21, 1692; m. RANDALL NICHOLS.
 - VII. Persis, d. March 7, 1682-3; m. 1st William Bridge; m. 2d 1652, John Harrison.
- 2. Thomas Pierce, called "Sergeant;" b. 1608; d. Nov. 6, 1683 at Charlestown Village (later Woburn); m. May 6, 1635 Elizabeth Cole of Charlestown who survived him and d. March 5, 1688.

He is recorded at Woburn, as a resident in 1643, as a taxpayer in 1645, as a Selectman in 1660, as one of the "right proprietors" chosen March 28, 1677, and also as a member of a General Court Committee in 1688.

They resided in Charlestown Villege (now Woburn) where all their children were born:

- I. ABIGAIL, b. 1639.
- II. John, b. March 7, 1643; m. 1663 Deborah Convers who was b. 1647.
- (3) III. Thomas
 - IV. ELIZABETH, b. Dec. 25, 1646; m. Thomas Whittemore in Woburn.
 - V. Joseph, b. Sept. 22, 1648; d. Feb. 27, 1649.
 - VI. JOSEPH, b. Aug. 13, 1649; m. MARY RICHARDSON.
 - VII. STEPHEN, b. July 16, 1651; m. 1767 TABITHA PARKER.
 - VIII. SAMUEL, b. Feb. 20, 1654; d. Feb. 27, 1656.
 - IX. SAMUEL, b. Apr. 7, 1656; m. 1680 Lydia Bacon.
 - X. WILLIAM, b. March 7, 1657; m. 1690 Mrs. ABIGAIL (WARRIN) SIMMERS.

¹ "Charlestown Genealogies" (Wyman), Vol. 2, P. 756.

XI. James, b. May 7, 1659; m. Elizabeth Kendall.

XII. ABIGAIL, b. Nov. 20, 1660; m. 1684, George Reed Jr.

XIII. BENJAMIN, d. 1739; m. 1688 MARY READ.

3. Thomas Pierce, b. Jan. 21, 1645 in Woburn, Mass.; d. Dec. 8, 1717 in Woburn; m. 1st Elizabeth () who d. between 1677 and 1680; m. 2d, March 24, 1680 Rachel Bacon who was b. June 4, 1652.

He appointed his son Timothy (of Plainfield) as one of the executors of his will.

Children by his 1st wife:

- I. Thomas, b. Feb. 27, 1671; d. between 1704 and 1708.
- (4) II. Timothy
 - III. ELIZABETH, b. Jan. 5, 1677; d. Feb. 15, 1700.

Children by his 2d wife:

- IV. RACHEL, b. July 24, 1681.
- V. ABIGAIL, b. Apr. 14, 1685; m. DAVID ROBERTS.
- VI. Isaac, b. Dec. 25, 1686; d. Dec. 28, 1686.
- VII. EBENEZER, b. Dec. 10, 1687; d. May 28, 1688.
- VIII. PHEBE, b. Feb. 13, 1689; d. July 14, 1707.
- 4. Timothy Pierce, b. Jan. 25, 1673; d. May 25, 1748; m. 1st, May 27, 1696 (or 1693) Lydia Spaulding who d. March 23, 1705; m. 2d, Oct. 12, 1709 Hannah Bradhurst, who was b. Dec. 14, 1682 and d. Apr. 2, 1747. Their residence was in Plainfield, Conn. Timothy was a Probate Judge, a Colonel of Militia, and a member of the Governor's Council.

Children by his 1st wife:

- I. Timothy, b. Oct. 7, 1698; m. June 12, 1723 MARY WHEELER.
- (5) II. NATHANIEL
 - III. JEDEDIAH, b. Feb. 23, 1703; d. Feb. 21, 1746.
 - IV. Lydia, b. March 10, 1705; m. Dr. Joseph Perkins.

Children by his 2d wife:

- V. Benjamin, b. June 7, 1710; m. Hannah Smtih.
- VI. EZEKIEL, b. Jan. 8, 1712; m. Feb. 11, 1736 Lois Stevens. He was known as Major Ezekiel Baker Pierce.
- VII. Phebe, b. Feb. 19, 1714; m. John Smith.
- VIII. HANNAH, b. May 8, 1717; d. Sept. 3, 1727.
 - IX. ABEL, b. June 17, 1720; d. Sept. 4, 1736.
 - X. Jabez, m. 1748 Susanna Sheppard.
- 5. NATHANIEL PIERCE, b. June 3, 1701; d. in 1775; m. 1st, Feb. 20, 1723 ELIZABETH STEVENS who was b. in 1707 and who d. July 13, 1748; m. 2d Mrs. SIMOND. He resided in Plainfield and Pomfret, Conn.

All children were by the 1st wife.¹

- I. Ruth, b. 1725; m. () Согт.
- II. NATHANIEL, b. 1728; d. 1808; m. 1754 PRISCILLA SHEPARD.

¹ "Seven Pierce Families" (Harvey Cushman Pierce, 1936.)

- (6) III. EZEKIEL
 - IV. PHEBE, b. 1732; d. 1751.
 - V. ELIZABETH, b. 1736; d. 1748.
 - VI. JEDEDIAH, b. 1740; d. 1826; m. 1764 SUSANNA EATON.
 - VII. WILLARD, b. 1743; d. 1826; m. JERUSHA PELIET.
- 6. EZEKIEL PIERCE, b. Apr. 7, 1730; d. Sept. 11, 1751; m. July 8, 1749 ESTHER BLODGETT. They resided in Plainfield and Pomfret, Conn.

Their children were:

- (7) I. SARAH
 - II. EZEKIEL, b. Feb. 17, 1752.
- 7. SARAH PIERCE, b. Feb. 6, 1750; int. of marriage by this SARAH and John Leonard was published in "Colony Connecticut and Co. of New London" and they were married Apr. 26, 1770, shortly after "int." was published. She was 20 years old at marriage.

PORTER

1. John Porter, b. about 1596 in England; d. Sept. 6, 1676, age 80, at Salem; m. 1st in England, Margaret, wid. of ()Odding who d. in New England about 1642-3; m. 2d, about 1643-4, Mary () who survived him and as his wid. d. Feb. 6, 1683 at Salem, Mass.

He with wife and some of his children came from Dorset, Eng. to New England; settled at Roxbury Nov. 5, 1633; moved to Hingham in 1635, where 56 acres of land in eight parcels were laid out for him, and in 1636 four acres of upland and 20 acres of meadow at Nantasket were granted to him; moved to Salem (now Danvers) in 1643 and bought a farm there of 300 acres from Rev. Samuel Sharp. The level land was called Porter's Plains. A hill in that area, before called Lindall Hill, was afterwards called Porter's Hill. The stream that watered that land was called Porter's River. He built his house, near that stream, which stood until it burned Sept. 19, 1865. At the time of his death he owned large estates in what is now Salem, Danvers, Wenham, Topsfield, and Beverly.

He was a friend of Gov. Endicott, with whom he built a sawmill on Crane's River. He built the first tannery in New England and founded the hide and leather trade.

He rendered military service in the Pequot War and later was on the military staff of Gov. Endicott. He was called Sergeant Porter. He was liberal in rendering public service for the good of the people. He often served the town as Surveyor and as bridge builder. He served on many public committees. In 1640 he was appointed Assessor by the General Court. In 1641 he was on Rate Committee and was Constable for Hingham. In 1649 he was elected Selectman, and re-elected for 27 years. He served frequently on juries and as Appraiser. In 1644 he was elected Deputy to the General Court for Hingham, and in 1668 was elected Deputy to the General Court for Salem.

They were Puritans. He and 1st wife were members of the church at Roxbury. He and 2d wife were active members of the church at Salem from "5-3-1644." He made his will Apr. 28, 1673. An inventory of his estate was taken "22:7 mo.: 1676."

Children¹ by the 1st wife:

- I. John, b. about 1634 in England; d. 1684, unmarried.
- (2) II. SAMUEL
 - III. Joseph, b. 1638; d. 1714; m. Anne, dau. of Major William and Ann Hathorne and had 12 children.
 - IV. Benjamin, b. 1639; d. 1723, unmarried.
 - V. Captain Israel, b. 1643; d. 1706; had 10 children. His dau. Elizabeth was the mother of General Israel Putnam, the commanding hero of Bunker Hill.

^{1 &}quot;Genealogial Dictionary of New England" (Savage).

Children by the 2d wife:

- VI. Mary, b. 1645; d. 1695; m. Lieut. Thomas, s. of Thomas and Hannah Gardner, and had 5 children.
- VII. JONATHAN, b. 1647.
- VIII. SARAH, b. 1649; d. 1731; m. DANIEL, s. of THOMAS and REBECCA ANDREW, and had 8 children.
- 2. Samuel Porter, b. 1636; d. 1660; m. Hannah Dodge of Beverly, who survived him and m. 2d, Thomas Woodbury of Beverly. She d. Jan. 2, 1688.

He owned a farm in Wenham, and also was a mariner.

Before sailing for Barbadoes he made his will "10-12-1658" in which he bequeathed his property to his only child John with provision that his wife should have life tenure in one-half of such estate. They had one Child:

- (3) I. John
- 3. John Porter, b. 1658; d. March 8, 1753 and was bur. in Wenham Churchyard; m. Lydia Herrick who d. Feb. 19, 1737.

They moved from Danvers about 1680 to Wenham, where they lived on a farm, a part of which he received from his grandfather, WILLIAM DODGE. For more then 200 years a part of this land has been in possession of his lineal descendants.

He was an active and influential citizen, filling many offices with distinction. He was moderator of Wenham in 1723, 1724, 1727, 1728 and 1729, and was a Deputy to the General Court in 1712, 1724 and 1726.

He gave his property to his children during his lifetime and did not make a will. Those deeds are dated: Apr. 23, 1723 to John: Apr. 23, 1723 to Nehemiah: Aug. 1, 1738 to Samuel: Aug. 22, 1738 to his six daughters; July 2, 1739 to Benjamin and Nehemiah; May 28, 1741 to Samuel; May 20, 1746 to Jonathan.

Their Children were:

- I. Samuel, b. 1681; d. 1770; m. 1st Sarah, dau. of John and Sarah (Perkins) Bradstreet, g. dau. of Gov. Bradstreet: m. 2d Experience Batchelder of Wenham. Had 4 children. He was called "Sergeant."
- II. John, b. 1683; d. 1775; m. Elizabeth, dau. of Capt. Jonathan and Lydia (Potter) Putnam. They had 10 children. He was commissioned Lieutenant. He lived in Wenham until 1740 when he moved to Ellington,
- III. Lydia, d. at age of 60 years; m. William Lampson of Ipswich. They had 2 sons and may have had other children.
- IV. Hannah, b. 1687; d. 1787; m. Thomas, s. of Thomas and Elizabeth (Potter) Kimball. They had 7 children. They lived first in Wenham and later in Marblehead.
- V. ELIZABETH, d. at age of 100 years; m. 1st Lieut. Daniel, s. of John and ELIZABETH (KILHAM) GILBERT; m. 2d Joseph Goodhue of Ipswich.
- VI. Benjamin, b. 1692; d. 1778; m. Sarah, dau. of Moses and Ruth (Perley) Tyler. They had 6 children. He owned land in Chester, N. H. and in Gilmanton, N. H.

- (4) VII. NEHEMIAH
 - VIII. JONATHAN, b. 1696; d. 1759; m. Lydia, dau. of Moses and Ruth (Perley) Tyler. They had 7 children. He was a farmer and inn-keeper. He was Deputy to the General Court for several terms.
 - IX. Mehitable, b. 1698; d. 1786; m. Caleb, s. of Caleb and Sarah Kimball. They had 6 children.
 - X. Mary, b. 1700; d. 1795; m. Robert Cue of Wenham. They had 7 children.
 - XI. SARAH, b. 1706; d. 1794; m. THOMAS, s. of JOSIAH and SARAH (FISKE) DODGE. They had 6 children.
- 4. Nehemiah Porter, b. 1692 at Wenham; d. 1784 at Ipswich; m. Jan. 3, 1716-17 Hannah Smith of Beverly.

They lived in the hamlet, Ipswich, now the town of Hamilton.

He made his will Oct. 9, 1782 which was proved Oct. 5, 1784.

Their Children were:

I. Nehemiah, b. 1720; d. 1820; m. 1st Rebecca, dau. of Rev. John and Rebecca (Hale) Chipman; m. 2d Elizabeth Nowell of Boston. They had 9 children.

He was graduated from Harvard. He then studied Theology with Rev. George Leslie. He served as Pastor in Chebacco parish, in Nova Scotia and in Ashfield, Mass.

- (5) II. SAMUEL
 - III. HANNAH, b. 1724; d. 1787; m. John, s. of Samuel and Mary (Love) Lummus. They had 8 children.
 - IV. SARAH, b. 1726; m. Solomon Lufkin. They had 1 daughter.
 - V. LYDIA, b. 1728; m. EDMOND PATCH of Beverly.
 - VI. A child, 1730.
 - VII. HAZABIAH, b. 1732; m. Anna Johnson of Andover. They lived in Ipswich and Boxford and later moved to Nova Scotia, where he was an early settler. They had 2 children before leaving New England.

VIII. EBENEZER, b. 1732; d. 1837; m. Lydia, dau. of Lieut. Thomas and Lydia (Richardson) Cummings. They had 13 children.

He served in the expedition against Crown Point. He was one of the first party, in the Ohio County, that started in 1787 for Ohio with the purpose of founding a new State on the banks of the Ohio River.

5. Samuel Porter, b. May 17, 1722 at Ipswich; bapt. May 20, 1722; d. May 10, 1750 at Boxford; m. Sarah () who was b. 1727 and who as his wid. d. Nov. 12, 1799.

He d. intestate. His wid. made a will in which she mentions all their children, who were:

- (6) I. SAMUEL
 - II. John, b. 1747; m. Mrs. Sarah Martin
 - III. NEHEMIAH, b. 1749; d. 1795; m. Susanna, dau. of Daniel and Sarah (Perley) Robinson of Andover. They had 3 daughters.

6. Samuel Porter, b. May 8, 1746 at Boxford; d. May 8, 1833 at Chester, N. H. m. Nov. 27, 1770 at Rowley, Mass., Martha Perley of Ipswich who d. in Chester, N. H., Jan. 19, 1837.

They lived at Ipswich, Boxford, Bradford, and Chester, N. H. He was one of those heroes who marched Apr. 19, 1775 on the Lexington alarm. He was in Captain John Cushing's company, of Colonel Samuel Johnson's Regiment. He was chosen by field officers as second lieutenant of Capt. Robert Dodge's Company, and commissioned by Council May 7, 1776 at Ipswich.

He was living in Boxford in 1775. At first he rented a farm in Chester of Mr. MATTHEW TEMPLETON, but later bought a place of his own, where he lived until his death. Their children were:

- I. SALLY, b. 1771; d. 1836; m. JACOB CARLETON of Bradford. Children:
 - i. Carey, b. in Bradford and d. there July 12, 1867; m. LAVINA KIMBALL.
 - ii. Adeline, b. in Bradford; d. 1883 in Bethlehem, N. H.; m. 1st James Emery of Auburn, N. H.; m. 2d Peter Stevens of Washington, Vt.
- (7) II. ELIZABETH (BETSEY)
 - III. NEHEMIAH, b. Sept. 18, 1775 at Bradford; d. Aug. 27, 1853; m. May 31, 1801 Lois Gragg of Boxford who was b. Sept., 1780 and d. Apr. 5, 1845, at Manchester, N. H. Children:
 - i. Mary, b. 1802; d. 1884; m. Samuel Stark.
 - ii. ABRAHAM, b. 1804; d. 1877; m. HARRIET NEWELL.
 - iii. Rodney, b. 1806; d. 1889; m. Mary C. Drew.
 - iv. Pierce, b. 1809; d. 1894; m. Mary A. Brown.
 - v. George W., b. 1812; d. 1884; m. 1st C. Augusta Reed; m. 2d Catherine M. Phillips.
 - vi. Charles C., b. 1815; d. 1884; m. Caroline Patch.
 - vii. William G., b. 1817; d. 1891; m. Cynthia Geer.
 - viii. Benjamin F., b. 1820; d. 1898; m. 1st Eliza Buffum; m. 2d Izette D. Pickering.
 - ix. Elizabeth, b. 1823; d. 1894; m. Sutherick J. Weston.
 - IV. Samuel was thrown from a horse and killed when about 16 years old.
 - V. Hannah, b. 1781; d. 1867 at Wenham; m. 1st William Preston; m. 2d Barzillai Bush; m. 3d David Underhill; m. 4th James Emerson. Children:
 - i. ELIZABETH BAKER PRESTON, b. 1802; d. 1849; m. RUFUS PHILLIPS.
 - ii. HIRAM PRESTON, b. 1804; d. 1892; m. Lydia Murray.
 - iii. HANNAH PORTER PRESTON, b. 1813; d. 1864; m. HOWARD GOODALE.
 - iv. Mary Jane Bush, b. 1814; d. 1863; m. Phillip Stark.
 - v. Ann Underhill, b. 1816; d. 1884; m. Alonzo B. Cadwell.
 - VI. Polly, b. 1784 at Chester, N. H.; d. Apr. 8, 1867 at Tyrone, N. Y.; m. 1st David Emery of Auburn, N. H., m. 2d Charles Emerson of Chester, N. H. Children:
 - i. David Emery, d. in early life.
 - ii. SARAH EMERY, b. July 2, 1806 at Chester, N. H.; d. March 28, 1887 at Tyrone, N. Y.; m. 1st () Robie who soon died; m. 2d David Hoover who d. Apr. 1, 1844. There was no issue.

- iii. William P. Emerson, b. 1807; d. 1902; m. 1st Mary J. McDuffee; m. 2d Mary Menter.
- iv. ARNOLD EMERSON
- v. John Emerson, d. 1855.
- vi. Charles K. Emerson, b. 1813; d. 1872; m. Hannah Owens.
- vii. Mary Martha Emerson, b. 1817; d. 1839; m. Stephen Thompson.
- viii. Benjamin K. Emerson, b. 1826; d. 1897; m. 1st Charlotte A. Prescott; m. 2d Mary F. Sproul.
- VII. John, b. Feb. 12, 1789; d. July 17, 1872 at Dundee, N. Y., unmarried.
- 7. ELIZABETH PORTER, b. 1778 at Bradford, Mass. or Chester, N. H.; m. int. published Jan. 12, 1798; m. Jan. 14, 1798, EMERSON BAKER.

References:—"Descendants of John Porter of Danvers, Mass." Vital Records of Wenhams, Ipswich, Mass.

PRUDDEN

The American family of PRUDDEN¹ or PRUDEN is undoubtedly descended from the PRUDDEN family of Kings Walden, County Hertford, and Luton, County Bedford, Eng. and was descended as follows:

- 1. John Prudden of Kings Walden, Co. Hertford, d. before 1501; m. Elizabeth (). Child:
- (2) I. Thomas
- 2. Thomas Prudden of Kings Walden, a man of wealth and member of the Gild at Luton, Co. Bedford, b. about 1439; d. in May or June, 1506; m. 1st Alice () who d. before 1501; m. 2d, before 1501, Katherine () who, surviving Thomas, was mentioned in his will. In 1501 he piously commemorated his father and mother in the Gild Register, Luton, Co. Bedford. In his will he provided for his own burial in the Church of Our Lady, Kings Walden, which distinction was generally limited to the more affluent in a community. All of his children were probably by his 1st marriage:
 - I. WILLIAM, b. about 1462; m. Christian (); was mentioned in his father's will of 1506.
- (3) II. THOMAS
 - III. KATHERINE, m. HENRY KENT. Both were named in her father's will of 1506, but the relationship was not mentioned.
 - IV. Joan, d. before 1506, as she was not mentioned in her father's will; m. Thomas Tymmys who was executor of will of Joan's s father.
- 3. Thomas Prudden of Kings Walden and member, 1503-1530, of the Gild at Luton, Co. Bedford; b. about 1464; d. before Feb. 4, 1538-9, the date his will was proved; m. 1st Margaret (); m. 2d Jone; m. 3d Christian () who, surviving Thomas, made her will July 23, 1544 in which she mentioned her son John. His child by 1st or 2d marriage:
- (4) I. Thomas:

His child by 3d marriage:

II. John of Kings Walden, b. about 1504; d. about 1545; m. Joan () who survived him and was mentioned in his will which was proved Dec. 10, 1545. They had at least one child, a son, as John's mother Christian made that son a co-executor of her will in 1544.

^{1 &}quot;Peter Prudden and Some of His Descendants" (Lillian E. Prudden, 1901) pp. 5-6.
"American Genealogist," vol. VXI pp. 1-12, 122-123, 177-179; vol XVII pp. 52-55; vol. XVIII, p. 60.

4. Thomas Prudden of Kings Walden, b. about 1487; d. 1558-9 and was bur. March 17, 1558-9 at Kings Walden; m. Ellen () who survived Thomas and m. 2d, May 26, 1559 Robert Rasin at Kings Walden.

He was executor of his father's will, 1558-9. He and his son Thomas Jr. were legatees of the will of Christian Prudden in 1544. He was supervisor of his brother

John's will, 1545. Children:

- (5) I. Thomas
 - II. John of Kings Walden, b. about 1512; d. about 1558 and was bur. Nov. 24, 1558 at Kings Walden; m. Clere (). He made his will Sept. 16, 1558 and it was proved Dec. 2, 1558.
- 5. Thomas Prudden of Kings Walden, b. about 1510; d. 1558 and was bur. Nov. 14, 1558 at Kings Walden; m. Christian ().

He was a legatee in the will of his brother John, 1558. His will was proved

Feb. 12, 1558-9. Children:

- I. Thomas, b. about 1533; was not mentioned in will of his father but was named in will of his brother, Apr. 4, 1616.
- (6) II. PETER
 - III. WILLIAM of Kings Walden, b. about 1539; m. July 9, 1559 at Kings Walden, ALICE YONG. He was named in his father's will.
 - IV. Edward of Kings Walden, b. about 1539; d. 1616 and was bur. July 1, 1616 at Kings Walden; m. Jone Ivory (dau. of John Ivory of Kings Walden) who d. in 1592 and was bur. Aug. 11, 1592 at Kings Walden.

6. Peter Prudden of Kings Walden, Co. Hertford, b. about 1535; d. about 1600; m. before 1558-9 Alice () who probably survived him.

He was an executor of his father's will in 1558-9. After Feb. 4, 1564-5 he moved from Kings Walden to the parish of Luton, Co. Bedford, where he leased the Manor of Plenties in the hamlet of Stopsley. He made a will which was proved Jan. 19, 1599-1600.

The first five children were born at Kings Walden and were bapt. there. The others were born at Luton.

- I. Thomas, bapt. May 20, 1558; probably d. young.
- II. Peter, bapt. June 17, 1560; d. and was bur. June 27, 1560.
- (7) III. ROBERT
 - IV. John, bapt. Apr. 24, 1563; was named in father's will.
 - V. Joan, bapt. Feb. 4, 1564-5; m. William Camfield. Both Joan and William were mentioned in her father's will.
 - VI. EDWARD, was named in his father's will; m. 1st, July 24, 1600 at Luton, AGNES CARPENTER; m. 2d, Nov. 16, 1610 at Luton, ELIZABETH PARRATT.
 - VII. AGNES, named in father's will; m. () BOGATT (BOCKET).
 - VIII. Peter, under 18 years of age at time of father's will; d. and was bur. March 2, 1624-5 at Luton; m. ().
 - IX. Jane, was under 16 years of age at time of father's will.

- 7. ROBERT PRUDDEN, bapt. June 27, 1561 at Kings Walden; d. and was bur. Nov. 16, 1617 at Luton; m. MILDRED () who survived him and m. 2d, Dec. 2, 1619 Hugh Ingram at Luton. Children of Robert and Mildred:
- (8) I. Peter
 - II. ROBERT, bapt. Sept. 25, 1603 at Luton.
 - III. Joseph, bapt. March 13, 1607-8 at Luton.
 - IV. MILDRED, bap. May 6, 1610; d. and was bur. Dec. 20, 1676 at St. Dionis Backchurch, London; m. probably Robert Lucas who d. and was bur. Sept. 14, 1686 at St. Dionis Backchurch, London.
- 8. Rev. Peter Prudden, b. in Dec. 1601 at Kings Walden, Co. Hertford, Eng.; d. in July, 1656 at Milford, Conn. and was bur. in his own garden; m. 1st, before 1633, Jane Thomas (dau. of William Thomas, Gent. of Abergavenny, Co. Monmouth, Wales) who d. in England before 1637 and by whom apparently he left no surviving descendants; m. 2d, about 1639, "Johana Boyse a maide," a member of the Church at Roxbury, Mass. and daughter of Rev. John Boyse of Halifax, Co. York, and his wife Joan Stowe who was the daughter of John and Joan (Baker) Stowe of Biddenden, Co. Kent. Joanna survived Peter and m. 2d, as his 2d wife, Sept. 20, 1671 at Milford, Conn. Captain Thomas Willet, the first English Mayor of New York, who died Aug. 4, 1674 at Swansea, Mass. and was buried in the cemetery now described as the Little Neck Cemetery off Bullock's Cove, Riverside Village, East Providence, R. I., in the "Brown Lot" where his first wife Mary, daughter of John Brown, was buried; where James Brown, brother of Mary Brown, was buried; where Lydia (Howland) Brown, wife of James Brown and daughter of Pilgrims John and Elizabeth Howland, was buried, and where Pilgrim Eliza-BETH (TILLEY) HOWLAND was buried.

Joanna survived Thomas and m. 3rd the Rev. John Bishop of Stamford, Conn. as his 2d wife. Joanna died early in 1683, as her inventory was dated March 22, 1682-3. She had no children by her 2d or 3d marriage.

Peter began his high school education in 1617 in the great London grammar school, founded about 1561 by eminent merchant "taylors" of London.

June 20, 1620 he was admitted "sizar" at Emmanuel College, Cambridge University.

Later he was a clergyman in Hertfordshire and courted Jane, the daughter of William Thomas, Gent., and they married. In 1633 Peter Prudden, Clerk, and his wife Jane and other relatives contested probate of the will of Jane's father, who died at Caerleon, Co. Monmouth, Wales.

He refused in 1635 an invitation to settle on Providence Island in the Bahamas. In the Spring of 1637 he, as a clergyman, embarked for Boston, Mass. in the company of John Davenport and Theophilus Eaton. He arrived at Boston June 26, 1637 and in August, 1637 refused a call to locate at Dedham, Mass. In April, 1638 in company with Mr. Davenport and Mr. Eaton's brother he moved to Quinnipiac on Long Island Sound, the original site of New Haven, Conn. He was rated at 500 pounds in the first tax assessment, about 1639, at New Haven.

¹ Cotton Mather's "Magnalia," Book III, Chapter 6, Biography of Rev. Peter Prudden.

He participated in organization of the ministry of the new Colony.

In the Summer of 1639 he shared in the foundation of the new community under his own pastorship at Wepawaoe, which was on the Sound and about 10 miles southwest of New Haven, and has since been known as Milford, Conn. The church of that new settlement was organized Aug. 22, 1639. By Nov. 29, 1639 he and his flock, which was composed of many of his original followers from Hertfordshire and vicinity, had moved to the new settlement and were listed as Free Planters. The ceremony of ordaining Peter as Pastor of the Milford Church was held April 18, 1640. He preached there during the rest of his life.

He made his will July 26, 1656, which was presented for probate to the General Court of New Haven in 1657. The inventory was taken Sept. 2, 1656, which was affirmed by his widow Joanna as his executrix, to amount to 924 pounds, 18 shillings,

and 5. d.

In the will of Mrs. Joanna (Boyse) (Prudden) (Willet) Bishop, dated Nov. 8, 1682 she mentioned her children by Peter Prudden as follows: Samuel, John, Joanna, Elizabeth, Abigail, Sarah, and Mildred, and two children of her late daughter Mary Walker.

The death of Rev. Peter Prudden was a great loss to all. Fell states that:

"His course had been dutifull and its termination blessed."

Rev. Cotton Mather states of Peter that:

God had marvellously blessed his ministry in England, unto many about Herefordshire, and near Wales; from whence he came into New England, there came therefrom many considerable persons with him. *.*.*.He continued an able and faithful servant of the churches, until about the fifty-sixth year of his own age, and the fifty-sixth of the present age when his death was felt by the colony as the fall of a pillar, which made the whole fabrick to shake."

Children of Peter and Joanna were all baptized at Milford, Conn.:

- I. Joanna, bapt. Aug. 30, 1640; m. Thomas Chittenden of Guilford, Conn.
- II. Mary, bapt. Dec. 4, 1641; m. Zachariah Walker of Stratford, Conn.
- III. ELIZABETH, bapt. March 11, 1642-3; m. Jehu Burr of Fairfield, Conn.
- IV. Samuel, bapt. Feb. 18, 1643-4; d. 1685 at Milford; m. Dec. 30, 1669 at Stratford, Grace Judson, dau. of Ensign Joseph Judson of Stratford, Grace survived Samuel and m. 2d, Thomas Clark of Milford.
- (9) V. John
 - VI. ABIGAIL, bapt. Feb. 13, 1647-8; d. about Jan. 1717-8; m. 1st, Nov. 14, 1667 at Milford, Joseph Walker of Stratford; m. 2d, Apr. 16, 1688 Sergt. Richard Hubbell of Stratfield, Conn.
 - VII. SARAH, b. May 9, 1650; bapt. May 12, 1650; was living in 1700; m. Gideon Allen of Milford, Conn.
 - VIII. Peter, bapt. May 30, 1652; d. June 10, 1652.
 - IX. MILDRED, bapt. May 14, 1653; d. Jan. 6, 1711-12 at Milford; m. Sept. 20, 1671 at Milford, Lieut. Sylvanus Baldwin of Milford.

9. Rev. John Prudden, bapt. in November, 1645 at Milford, Conn.; d. Dec. 11, 1725 at Newark, N. J.; m. probably about 1670-1 Grace ().

He was graduated from Harvard College in 1668 and remained there to teach

in the grammar school.

Undoubtedly the marriage of his sister Mary to Zachariah Walker, minister at Jamaica, L. I. at one time, led to the call for John as Pastor there. John accepted in 1671 and was ordained as Pastor of that Church May 24, 1672. He also preached for a time at Rye and Bedford, N. Y. In 1674 he moved to Newark, N. J., but returned to Jamaica, in 1676; Aug. 23, 1692 he was called again to the First Church in Newark, N. J. to succeed Rev. Abraham Pierson. He remained Pastor there until June 9, 1699, when he resigned. After that he continued to live in Newark, and after 1706 he taught day and night scholars.

An almanac published in London in 1680, owned by John, who dated it June

24, 1692, is to be found at Washington's Headquarters at Morristown, N. J.

After his death Dec. 11, 1725 at Newark, N. J. his remains were interred in the old burying ground in the rear of the First Church of Newark. In 1748 his body was removed and the following epitaph is found on his stone in the rear of the First Church of Newark:

"Here lyes ye Body of ye rev'd Mr. John Prudden, minister of ye Gospel, who departed this life Dec. 11th 1725 aged 80 years."

The places and exact dates of birth of Children of John and Grace are not known:

John Jr. of Newark, N. J., b. 1672; d. between Dec. 11, 1712 and Apr. 27, 1715; m. Margaert ().

In his will dated Dec. 11, 1712 and proved Apr. 27, 1715 he named himself as John Prudden Junior, of Newark, Essex Co., age 40 years; mentioned his wife as Margaret, his daughters as Abigail and Joanna, and provided that his real and personal property was to fall to "his only brother Joseph Prudden" if his daughters should die without issue.

- (10) II. Joseph
 - III. JOANNA, m. NATHANIEL MOORE and moved to Hopewell, N. J.
 - IV. Kezia, d. before Apr. 27, 1715; m. Elantan Baldwin and moved to Hopewell, N. J.
 - V. SARAH (called ABIGAIL in his will), b. 1683-4; d. in 1741; m. JAMES NUT-MAN.

10. Joseph Prudden, b. in 1692, probably in Newark, N. J.; d. Sept. 25, 1776 at Newark or Morristown, N. J.; m. about 1717 Joanna Lyon who was b. about 1694 the daughter of Benjamin and Bethia (Condit) Lyon and who d. before May 17, 1769.

Both Joseph and Joanna were members of the First Church—at the settlement of Dr. John's—in 1742. Joseph was a Deacon by July 15, 1744 and an Elder in 1748.

His will, dated May 17, 1769 at Morristown, Morris Co., N. J. was proved Oct. 25, 1776. He appointed his sons Peter and Joseph to be executors of his Will.

His will mentions sons Joseph, Isaac, Peter, Moses, Adoniram, Benjamin; daughter Rachel; grandchildren Joannah, Ayers, Enos Coe, Joannah Miller, "relict of my daughter Sarah" and five other remaining children of Sarah, Joannah Lindsly, Boyse Prudden, John Amos.

Children:

- I. RACHEL, b. about 1718; d. in 1776; m. Benjamin Coe; res. at Fort Redstone near Brownsville, Pa.
- II. Boise John, b. about 1719; d. before his father's will; m. Sarah () who survived him and m. 2d-probably— May 1, 1751 Samuel Munson.
- III. Peter, b. 1722; d. Apr. 21, 1777 at Morristown, N. J.; m. 1st Joanna (); m. 2d, Feb. 6, 1763 Rhoda (dau. of Peter Condit) who was b. in 1731 and who survived Peter and d. Apr. 10, 1818.
- IV. Adoniram, b. 1727; d. in 1776; m. Mehitable () who was b. in 1738 and who surviving him d. Aug. 3, 1811.
- V. Joseph, b. in Sept. 1729; d. March 20, 1818; m. about 1769 Esther Ayres who was b. in July 1749 and who surviving him d. June 5, 1837.
- (11) VI. BENJAMIN
 - VII. Moses, b. 1732; d. Jan. 11, 1777; m. Mary Morris.
 - VIII. Isaac b. 1738; d. June 20, 1798; m. 1st. Oct. 25, 1769 Hannah (dau. of Matthew Lum), who was b. in 1743 and who d. Oct. 26, 1776; m. 2d, July 8, 1778 Sarah (dau. of Capt. James Keen) who survived Isaac and m. 2d, March 26, 1803 Jonathan Hathaway.
 - IX. Sarah, d. after May 20, 1758 when her dau. Ruth was b. and before her father made his will; m. Jan. 16, 1747 Capt. Benjamin Halsey. He survived Sarah and m. 2d Bethia Youngs, and surviving her m. 3d Sarah (Rainor) Lindsley, wid. of Capt. John Lindsley of Morristown.
 - X. Joanna, d. May 17, 1769; m. about 1755 Demas (son of John Lindsley)
 They moved from Mendham, N. J. in 1780 to Morris Township, Pa.
 - XI. Kezia, b. 1746; d. unmarried Sept. 18, 1776.

11. Benjamin Prudden, b. about 1730 in Morristown, N. J.; d. between June 15, 1799 and June 25, 1799, the dates when his will was signed and proved; m. 1st, about 1755, Miss Laton who was b. about 1732 and who d. before Jan. 30, 1774. They both renewed covenant at the Morristown Church May 1, 1757; m. 2d, Jan. 30, 1774 at Morristown, N. J. Eunice Baldwin who was b. in 1740 and who d. Aug. 24, 1780 at Morristown, N. J. and who was admitted as a communicant of the Church Sept. 1, 1774; m. 3d, March 16, 1783 at Morristown, N. J. Elizabeth (Bridge) Tompkins who survived Benjamin.¹

By June 30, 1796 he had moved to Washington County, Pa., where he bought from Joseph and Providence Prudden two acres of land, June 30, 1796, and where he bought from the same parties 21 acres of land Oct. 25, 1796. Thus he had chosen their residence as of Fort Redstone, near Brownsville, Pa.

¹ (Proceedings of N. J. vol. II N Ser. 1917, pp. 107-8).

Benjamin made his will June 15, 1799 which was proved June 25, 1799. In it he mentioned his wife ELIZABETH; his children without naming them; two grandchildren, Stephen and Phebe Parcel, and John Tompkins.

Children by 1st marriage:

- I. Benjamin, b. about 1756; m. Jemima (dau. of Daniel Drake, Sr.) of Mendham Twp., Morris Co., N. J. Daniel made his will Oct. 23, 1798 which was proved Dec. 20, 1798. In it he mentioned his wife Phebe and his dau. Jemimah, wife of Benjamin Prudden.
- II. EUNICE, bapt. May 1, 1757 at Morristown, N. J.
- III. RACHEL, bapt. Jan. 15, 1758 at Morristown, N. J.
- (12)IV. JOSEPH
 - V. Child, d. Jan. 15, 1775 at Morristown, N. J.
 - VI. John Stevens, bapt. May 8, 1779 at Morristown, N. J.

12. Joseph Prudden, bapt. May 5, 1760 at Morristown, N. J.; d. probably in 1827 or 1830 in Bazetta (now Cortland), Trumbull Co., O.; m. Dec. 3, 1783 at Morristown, N. J. Providence Gauden (Godden or Gordon) who was b. March 16, 1760 at Morristown, N. J. and who d. at Bazetta (now Cortland) Twp., Trumbull Co., O. after June 7, 1821, the date of her husband's will.

Providence Gauden became a member of the Morristown, N. J. Church Jan. 4, 1782 and Joseph became a member June 30, 1786. It is noted on the records of that church that both "moved away."

Providence was the dau. of David and his 2d wife Elizabeth (Stanborough) GAUDEN. They were members of the Morristown Church. The record of this family is found in the church records of Morristown, N. J. David made his will as David Godden of Hanover, Morris Co., N. J. Jan. 26, 1790, which was proved Feb. 12, 1790. David served in the Revolutionary War.²

He moved to Washington Co., Pa. by 1796 when he and wife Providence sold land to his father Benjamin Prudden.

About 1805 he moved to Bazetta Twp. (later Cortland), Trumbull Co., O. and settled on "lot nine."

Joseph Prudden served as a soldier in our Revolutionary War. He is listed as one of the Revolutionary soldiers who were buried in Ohio. He and wife Provi-DENCE were buried in Casterline Cemetery, Bazetta Township (later and now Cortland Township). Although the original inscriptions on their gravestones have been partially obliterated by weather, the inscription on his gravestone still clearly records

> "Joseph Pruden Revolutionary Soldier",

and on her gravestone still clearly records

"Providence Gauden Pruden Daughter and wife of Revolutionary Soldier."

¹ Records of First Presbyterian Church of Morristown, N. J. ² "New Jersey Men in the Revolution" (Stryker).

There is some conflict in the various statements as to date of Joseph's death, etc.

but they all agree that he was a Revolutionary soldier.

Joseph made his will June 7, 1821 which was probated Dec. 11, 1827. In it he mentions his wife Providence, and a son David whom he appointed executor, and "the children."

Children of Joseph and Providence:

- I. ELIZABETH, b. Jan. 10, 1786, probably at Morristown, N. J.
- John, matured and "went to Texas."
- (13)III. JOSEPH
 - David, was executor of his father's estate; m. May 4, 1813 at Trumbull IV. Co., O. MARTHA DICKSON.
 - V. Benjamin, m. June 22, 1820 in Trumbull Co., O. Nancy Ferguson.
- Joseph Prudden, b. Aug. 2, 1797, probably at Fort Redstone, near Brownsville, Washington Co., Pa.; d. Sept. 9, 1877, probably at Cortland or Burghill, Trumbull Co., O. and was bur. in the Casterline Cemetery at Cortland, O. where his father and mother were buried; m. 1st, about 1819, probably in Trumbull Co., O., SARAH (or SALLY) TUTTLE (from New Jersey) who was b. in 1796 and who d. probably at Cortland or Burghill, Jan. 8, 1833 and was bur. in the family lot in Casterline Cemetery; m. 2d, May 14, 1833 in Trumbull Co., O., Belinda Stewart; m. 3d Olive Lake.

Children by 1st marriage:

- I. Isaac, b. Oct. 11, 1820 at Bazetta Township, Trumbull Co., O.; d. 1859 and was bur. at Millbrook, Mercer Co., Pa.; m. March 31, 1840 Eliza-BETH P. WALKER of Brownsville (now Sandy Lake), Mercer Co., Pa., who survived Isaac and m. 2d, John Muse.
- II. David, b. in June, 1823 in Bazetta Township; d. 1901; m. Cassy Spell-MAN.
- III. STEVEN, b. May 11, 1824 in Bazetta Township; m. 1st, 1847, Phoebe THOMPSON; m. 2d, SALLY MANES.
- IV. HARRISON, b. July 24, 1827 in Bazetta Township; d. Jan. 11, 1909; m. ALMIRA TANNER.
- V. Martha, b. Dec. 17, 1830 in Bazetta Township; d. Feb. 27, 1918; m. Aug. 22, 1850 Justus Tyrell.

Children by 2nd marriage: (14)

B. July 15, 1844 (

ROME, OHIO

Aug. 22, 1850 JUSTUS TYRELL.

Idren by 2nd marriage:

VI. Francis

VII. Mary, m. (S) Newcomb, Son of Flavel, Actisatificate

VIII. Sarah, m. () Tinan.

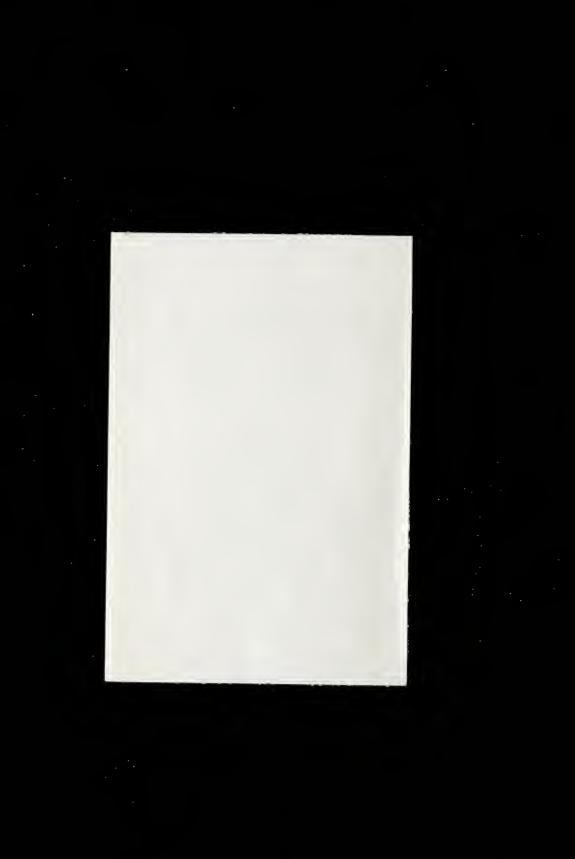
IX. Caroline, m. () Wildman.

X. Alexander, killed in battle in Civil War at Little Rock, Ark.; unmarried.

VIII. SARAH, m. () TINAN.

14. Francis A. Prudden, b. in 1836 at Bazetta, O.; d. in 1916 at Burghill, Trumbull Co., O.; m. in 1860 in Trumbull Co., O. Julia, dau. of Jesse and Lavinia (Davidson) Brockett of Trumbull Co., O.

Mary Pruden
Married 7eb, 19, 1871
Josiah Newcomb
Mary born July 15 1844
Fowler @ died 7ub 1911
Rome Celic



JULIA BROCKETT was eighth from John Brockett, who came from England to New England with Peter Prudden, and together they settled at New Haven, Conn. A tradition has existed in New Haven, Conn. for more than 200 years that this John Brockett was the eldest son of Sir John Brockett of Brockett Hall, Hertfordshire, Eng. and that on account of his pronounced Non-conformist ideas his father (who had been knighted by Queen Elizabeth) disinherited him, and that John Brockett then gave up all claims to the title and estates of the Brocketts in England, in order to join the Non-conformist band which came with Rev. John Davenport and Rev. Peter Prudden to America.

JULIA was b. in Trumbull Co., O. July 14, 1840 and d. in 1924.

Children of Francis and Julia:

(15) I. Jessie F.

- II. Jennie, b. at Burghill, Trumbull Co., O.; d. in 1915; m. Dr. Charles L. Moore who d. Jan. 6, 1944 at Cleveland, O.
- III. RUPERT, b. in 1871 at Burghill, Trumbull Co., O.; was living there in 1945; m. NANNY (NANCY) CLELAND who also was living there in 1945.
- 15. Jessie Francis Pruden, b. at Burghill, Trumbull Co., O.; was exceptionally well educated and was a teacher in Cleveland, O. at the time Paul Howland was practicing law in Cleveland. They were married at her home, Jan. 18, 1905.

- LADULE: FRED E. NEWCOMB. FLOTH, 1883; M, 8-12-1903, MINNA FINLAW,

MINNE DEC. 2,187/M, DEC, 25, 1895, ROME, O, FU

FENNER-B. June 13,1874

SEAMANS

1. Thomas Seamans, b. in England; d. at Swansea, Mass after May 19,1716, on which date he gave a deed of gift to his son John; m. 1687 at Swansea, Mass. Susannah Salisbury.

Thomas participated in the Monmouth Rebellion in England and was banished to the Barbadoes, but quickly escaped and sailed for New England, settling in Swansea, Mass. Thomas was an educated man and taught school. He and his descendants were industrious and religious members of the Baptist Church. His early descendants owned nearly all of the land in Scituate (then including Glocester and Foster), R. I.

Children:

- I. Susannah, b. Apr. 23, 1692; m. Sept. 16, 1714 at Rehoboth, Mass-Elisha Bowen.
- II. THOMAS, b. Nov. 25, 1693; m. Jan. 12, 1716 MARY PIERCE.
- III. John, b. Jan. 17, 1695-6; d. Feb. 9, 1791; m. Aug. 22, 1718 at Swansea. Priscilla Wood.
- IV. Mary, b. Jan. 7, 1697-8; d. Oct. 24, 1752 at Scituate, R. I.; m. July 14, 1721 at Swansea, John Round.
- (2) V. James, b. Jan. 28, 1699.
 - VI. CHARLES, b. about 1700; d. June 4, 1771 at Sackville, Nova Scotia, Can.; m. Feb. 14, 1730 Hannah Mason Bowen who died March 19, 1798 at New London, N. H.
 - VII. GILBERT, b. Nov. 29, 1706; m. July 13, 1730 at Swansea, Mass. Mary Bowen.
 - VIII. Rosamond, b. Dec. 18, 1709; m. 1731, EPHRAIM SALISBURY.
 - IX. NATHAN, m. JUDITH.
 - X. Hannah, b. Jan. 16, 1711-12.
 - XI. Josiah.
- 2. James Seamans, b. Jan. 28, 1699; d. June 7, 1757 at Scituate, R. I.; m. Jan. 16, 1723-4 at Swansea, Mass. Tabitha, dau. of Dr. William and Susannah Wood.

Children, all born at Swansea:

- (3) I. Freelove, b. July 20, 1724.
 - II. NAOMI, b. May 10, 1725; m. ROBERT DAVIS.
 - III. Jonathan, b. Oct. 7, 1727; d. Dec. 4, 1807 at Foster, R. I.; m. Lois Eastman.
 - IV. MARY, b. May 17, 1730; m. Sept. 4, 1747, John Durfee.
 - V. James, b. June 6, 1732; m. Nov. 25, 1754 at Scituate, R. I., Sarah Cole; lived at Scituate.
 - VI. HANNAH, b. Jan. 16, 1735.

- VII. TABITHA, b. Apr. 3, 1741; m. Nov. 25, 1762 at Scituate, R. I., DANIEL WOOD.
- VIII. RUTH, b. Oct. 9, 1743.
 - IX. THOMAS, b. Apr. 11, 1746; d. Dec. 8, 1824 at Foster, R. I.
 - X. Susannah, b. Oct. 7, 1750; m. Feb. 12, () Wood.
 - XI. CALEB, b. Apr. 13, 17—; d. Oct. 3, 1793 at Scituate, R. I.; m. MARY ().
- XII. NOAH, m. () PECK.
- 3. Freelove Seamans, b. July 20, 1724 at Swansea, Mass.; m. Apr. 17, 1740 at Swansea, Mass., Samuel Howland.

References: "Seamans Family in America" (John Julian Lawton, 1933). Vital Records of Swansea, Mass.

SHOVE1

1. Rev. Edward Shove, b. about 1578 in Surrey, Eng.; d. Gatton, Eng. Feb. 14, 1646; m. Margaret () who was bur. June 19, 1641 at Gatton.

EDWARD was "bred to learning," was educated probably at Horley and Winchester, and was a Puritan clergyman during the persecutions by James I and Charles I. He was Vicar at Leigh and Rector at Gatton. The "living" of the Rector (Rev. Edward Shove) was threatened frequently after 1629 when James I prorogued his third Parliament. Many entries are found in the Privy Council calendar against Rev. Edward as a Puritan. In 1639 "proceedings to deprive" were finally instituted against him before the Court of High Commission. The case was adjourned from time to time on motion of the prosecution and was still pending when the Court was abolished by the Long Parliament.

Children of EDWARD and MARGARET:

- (2) I. Edward
 - II. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 1608; d. 1613.
 - III. Joseph, b. Oct. 1610 at Leigh; d. probably at his estate of Gatwick in Chipstead; m. Mary ().
 - IV. Infant, d. Oct. 1612.
 - V. Benjamin, b. March 1613 at Leigh; d. in 1666 and was bur. beside his father in the Church at Gatton; m. Frances (). He entered King's College, Cambridge, in 1631 and won his B. A. in 1634 and his M. A. in 1637. He became Vicar of Leigh in 1644, and was Rector of Gatton, 1646-1666.
- 2. Rev. Edward Shove Jr., b. March 1606 at Leigh; d. on board ship "Welcome" on voyage in 1638 from England to New England; m. about 1629 Margery Sandys, who survived him and was m. 2nd, Aug. 17, 1654, by Governor Bellingham, to Richard Peacock of Roxbury, Mass. She survived him and lived the latter years of her life with her son George at Taunton, where she d. in 1680, and was burthere Apr. 17, 1680.

He entered King's College, Cambridge, 1622 and won his B. A. in 1625 and his M. A. in 1629. He remained at King's College because the King threatened to withdraw the "living" of Non-conformist clergymen. Such clergymen planned migration to New England. The Puritans were wealthy and the King in Council decided to stop such emigration in order to retain their wealth in England. March 30, 1638 the King prevented the sailing of eight ships then in London port and disembarked the stores and passengers, one of whom was OLIVER CROMWELL. Thus, by preventing that emigration, Charles I held close to him the man who later dethroned him and cut off his head. April 1, 1638 Charles I forbade all such sailings

¹ "The Shove Family" (Benjamin Jay Shove, 1941).

from the port of London to New England. April 6, 1638 he made that order general for all English ports, and permanent unless special license was obtained by each individual.

That persecution of men of God in order to keep money in England was not justified on moral grounds, and the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, A. M. King's College 1610, who had been suspended in 1637 as clergyman at Rowley, Eng. met Mr. Edward Shove Jr. who was "in residence" at Kings, and they evolved a plan to (practically) transfer his church to a new Rowley in New England, of which he would be the Pastor and Rev. Edward Shove Jr. would be the Assistant Pastor. Under that plan they proceeded secretly to organization of a company of 60 original proprietors of Rowley, Mass., which with nearly all the parishioners of Rowley, Eng. and necessary artisans, farmers and employees (with families) totaled about 300 passengers for a secret sailing of several ships.

The Puritans had control of the Virginia Company and "The New England

Council."

The Sandys Family, headed by Sir Edwin, Archbishop of York, was liberal, and one of the principal moving forces for colonizing America in a liberal way. The Sandys Family ranked high in the estimation of the Puritans and of all Non-conformists. George Sandys, the youngest son of Archbishop Edwin, took especial interest in the English colonization of America. He was Colonial Treasurer of the Virginia Company from 1621 to 1631, after which he lived in London as a friend of those who desired to emigrate to America.

Probably Rev. Edward Jr. arranged with Mr. Henry Sandys, a merchant and ship owner of London, for transportation. It was in his ship "Welcome" that Mr. Henry Sandys and his wife Sybil; and Rev. Edward Shove Jr. with wife

MARGERY (SANDYS) and children sailed for America.

Rev. Edward Shove Jr. died on the voyage. His wife Margery and children,

GEORGE, aged 4, and ELIZABETH, 8, survived.

Widow Margery Shove and children, with Henry Sandys and wife Sybil, arrived in Boston about Dec. 1, 1638 and after a probationary period were admitted as a group to membership in the Church of Boston in a ceremony Dec. 30, 1638.

Great influence was used to persuade those Puritans to settle in Rhode Island, and some did, including Mr. William Brenton, a member of the Sandys Family. As a member of the Sandys Family, Rev. George Shove was the recipient of bequests in the will of Mr. William Brenton, made Feb. 9, 1673 at Newport, R. I.

Before embarking, Rev. Edward Shove Jr. Waived his rights of inheritance under the law of primogeniture, and thus raised sufficient funds for the voyage and

settlement.

The children of Rev. Edward and Margery (Sandys) Shove were:

I. ELIZABETH, b. 1630 in England; d. Aug. 8, 1711; m. May 26, 1653 John Mills Jr. of Braintree, son of John Mills, immigrant in 1631, and who moved to Braintree in 1641. The male ancestors of John Jr. for four generations were ministers.

Children of John and Elizabeth were:

i. ELIZABETH

- ii. Sarah
- iii. EDWARD, b. June 29, 1665; graduate at Harvard, 1685, and for 40 years was a teacher in the schools of Dorchester and Boston.

 There were 6 other children.

(3) II. George

3. Rev. George Shove, b. 1634 in England; d. Apr. 21, 1687 at Taunton, Mass.; m. 1st, July 12, 1664 Hopestill Newman who d. March 7, 1673; m. 2nd, Feb. 18, 1674-5 Mrs. Hannah (Bacon) Walley who d. in Sept. 1685; m. 3rd, Dec. 8, 1686 Mrs. Sarah () Farwell, wid. of Thomas Farwell, one of the original Proprietors of Taunton.

George came as a small child with his parents from England in 1638. After loss of his father he remained with his mother in Boston until she moved to Rowley in 1640. His mother and Mrs. Sandys and others took letters from the Boston Church to the organizing church in Rowley. There she exercised the proprietorial rights of her late husband. It must have been a great comfort and help that her close relatives, Mr. Henry Sandys and wife Sybil, were living in Rowley.

In due time George was educated at Harvard and became a close friend of his classmate, the later Gov. Winslow of Plymouth Colony. After college days George became Assistant to Rev. Samuel Newman at Rehoboth, and helped him revise the Cambridge Concordance. Nov. 17, 1665 he was ordained Minister of the Congregational Church at Taunton, then in Plymouth Colony, which pastorate he filled with great credit to himself and benefit of all who came near, even up to his death.

He owned a large estate of many parcels. He was one of the 53 purchasers of the large tract called "The North Purchase," June 6, 1668. It comprised the present towns of Norton, Easton, and Mansfield. Nov. 12, 1677 he and four others purchased Assonet Neck, a tract of land lying between Taunton River and Assonet Bay. It was added to Taunton, later to Dighton, and still later to Berkley. As an in-law member of the Sandys Family he was the recipient of the bequest of 625 acres of land from Mr. William Brenton who signed his will Feb. 9, 1673 at Newport, R. I. March 16, 1683-4 he was one of 77 purchasers of a tract called "The South Purchase," comprising a large part of the present town of Dighton.

Apr. 4, 1687 he made his Will¹ He bequeathed back to his wife Sarah the estate which she brought to him at marriage, and gave her life tenure in his homestead in Taunton. He bequeathed all of his part in the North Purchase to his daughters, in the following language:

"Item. I doe give and bequeath unto my daughters (viz.) Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Johanna, and Yet Mercy Shove all my household goods together with all other my movables and chattels, my debts being paid first. Item. I doe give unto my said Daughters all of my whole of the North Purchase in the Township of Taunton afroesaid and until they come to be of age all of which to be disposed of by my wife and my son Nathaniel for their good; By this clause I mean that my debts are to be paid out of my Movables; for their good

¹ Suffolk Co., Mass. Probate Records, Vol. X, P. 141.

is meant for the good of said daughters * * * Item. I doe nominate and appoint Sergt. Nathaniel Williams and Sergt. Henry Hodges to divide unto or among my daughters aforesaid those goods bequeathed unto them together with the advice of my dear wife Sarah Shove."

The records of the division and title to parts of the North Purchase have been preserved. In the division or choice of areas the word "Pitch" is used apparently with the ancient meaning, "To fix one's choice; settle or decide; to choose."

May 14, 1706 the said land was laid out to Joanna Shove and her sister Yet Mercy Shove, as apparently the other sisters had died (North Purchase Proprietors Records, Vol. I, Page 57).

"8 Sept. 1711. Josiah Howland for his wives dew doth Pitch between the first ministry Lott and Briants first Lott." (Vol. V, Page 16, North Purchase Proprietors Records).

"20 May 1714. Josiah Howland for what Land is due Joannah the wife of John Howland whose maiden name was Shove, Pitches to take it Joyning to what he hath already Pitch for that is due to his wife between the first Minister's Lot and Briant's Lott." (Vol. V, Page 20, North Purchase and Proprietors Records).

"17 May 1715. John Howland and Josiah Howland May the 17, 1715 Pitches for what Land that may conveniently Have Joyning to what they have already Pitcht for near the ministry Lott on the sixty acre division." (Vol. V, Page 34, North Purchase Proprietors Records).

The above identifies Joanna Shove, a sister of Yet Mercy Shove, as the wife of a John Howland.

This John³ Howland made his will Feb. 8, 1737-8. There were two daughters, Mary and Joanna, by his 1st wife, who were single. Concerning them he made the following special bequest:

"to my Other two Daughters Mary and Joanna all the household goods that came by their own Mother to be Equally Divided between them."

The above identifies Joanna Shove as the 1st wife of John³ Howland.

Children were all born at Taunton.

Children by the 1st wife:

I. EDWARD, b. Apr. 28, 1665; bur. Aug. 7, 1666.

II. ELIZABETH, b. Aug. 10, 1766; d. before May 14, 1706; m. MALACHI HALLOWAY, a s. of WILLIAM HALLOWAY, one of the early 12-share Proprietors of Taunton in 1637. They had children.

III. Seth, b. Dec. 10, 1667; d. Oct. 3, 1735; m. 1st, (); m. 2d, Abigail, dau. of Francis and Hannah (Seymour) Bushnell, and granddaughter of Francis Bushnell, a first settler of Guilford, Conn. and a signer of the Plantation Covenant.

¹ Probate Records, Barnstable Co., Mass., Vol. V, pp. 326-328.

Young Seth was placed by his father under the care and instruction of the able Judge Sewell of Boston, Dec. 14, 1676, who, Apr. 9, 1677, placed Seth under Mr. Smith as tutor. Seth entered Harvard, 1683, and won his B. A. in 1687 and his M. A. in 1690. He was a clergyman in Simsbury, Conn. in 1693 and was ordained the first Pastor of Danbury, Conn., Oct. 13, 1696, which pastorate he held even unto his death. Child by 1st wife:

i. Dorothy.

- IV. Nathaniel, b. Jan. 29, 1668; d. Apr. 12, 1693. His residence was Taunton. Shortly before death he made his Will and gave his inherited property in the South Purchase to his sister Elizabeth.
- V. Samuel, b. June 16, 1670; d. before 1700; m. Nov. 16, 1693 Dorothy, dau. of Henry and Elizabeth (Stedman) Thompson of Charlestown, Mass. Child:
 - i. ELIZABETH, m. BENJAMIN BAGNALL of Boston. They had children.
- VI. SARAH, b. July 30, 1671; d. May 13, 1693. Children by the 2nd wife:
- VII. Mary, b. Aug. 11, 1676; d. before May 14, 1706.
- VIII. Joanna, b. Sept. 28, 1678; was an orphan after death of her father, Apr. 21, 1687. As her stepmother Sarah evidently did not long survive her late husband George, she lived with her maternal relatives at Barnstable. She met there John³, (John², Pilgrim John¹) Howland and they married.
 - IX. Edward, b. Oct. 3, 1680; d. Oct. 12, 1746; m. July 6, 1704 Lydia, dau. of Serg. Theopolis and Mary (Parker) Witherill and granddaughter of the Rev. William Witherill who won his M. A. at Corpus Christy, Cambridge in 1619 and who was Pastor of the Second Church of Scituate, Mass. Lydia d. at Dighton, Mass. June 22, 1739. Edward and Lydia Eventually established their home on his inherited estate on Assonet Neck, formerly in Taunton, and then in Dighton.

He was a well-educated man and an able and popular lawyer. As a member of the General Court he took an advanced position for America on the issues that later brought on our War of Independence. The inventory of his estate shows that he had many religious books inherited from his father.

They had four sons and five daughters who have descendants.

(4) X. YET MERCY.

There were no children by the 3d marriage.

4. YET MERCY SHOVE, b. Nov. 7, 1682; became an orphan when her father d. in 1687. Her stepmother Sarah evidently d. soon after her husband George. Then Gen. John Walley, brother of her mother's first husband, took her into his home at Bristol, as he had so kindly done with the children of Hannah by her 1st husband.

After Joanna m. John Howland in 1704, Yet Mercy made her home with her sister Joanna.

The records of the division and title to parts of the North Purchase have been preserved as before quoted. May 14, 1706 the said land was laid out to the only

surviving daughters of Rev. George Shove, who were Yet Mercy and her sister Joanna (Shove) Howland, the wife of John³ (John², Pilgrim John¹) Howland. The part for Elizabeth (who had died) went to her widower, Malachi Halloway. Sarah d. in 1693. Mary d. before May 14, 1706. May 16, 1706 three acres of meadowland were laid out for Joanna (Shove) Howland and Yet Mercy Shove "the above heirs."

Josiah Howland followed her to Barnstable to continue his courting, which was successful, and they were m. Nov. 24, 1709 at Barnstable.

THATCHER (THACHER)

1. Rev. Peter Thacher, b. 1545-9; d. 1624 at Queen Camel, Co. Somerset, Eng.; m. (). He was a distinguished Minister of the Gospel, and from 1574 to 1624 was Vicar of the parish church at Queen Camel.

Children:

- I. Rev. Peter, b. 1587; d. Feb. 16, 1640-1 at Salisbury, Eng. He dissented from the Established Church, and being harrassed by the spiritual courts, planned to emigrate to New England, but the death of his wife altered his plans; m. 1st Anne —; m. 2nd, Alice Batt.
- (2) II. Anthony
 - III. JOHN, b. 1590; d. 1653 at Queen Camel.
 - VI. Giles, b. 1592; d. 1602 at Queen Camel.
 - V. Thomas, d. Aug. 1650; m. 1st, Alice —; m. 2nd, Marie Lokier.

2. Anthony Thacher, b. 1588-9 at Queen Camel, Co. Somerset, Eng.; d. intestate Aug. 22, 1667 at Yarmouth, Mass.; m. 1st Mary () who died 1634 at Salisbury, Eng.; m. 2nd, about Oct. 6, 1634, Elizabeth Jones who survived him.

Anthony Thacher was a Separatist, and by Jan. 8, 1610 was living in Holland. He returned to England, and from 1631 to 1634 served several times as curate for his brother, Rev. Peter, who was Rector of St. Edmunds at Salisbury. He desired to emigrate to New England, and protecting his departure, he, like many other Non-conformists, listed his name on the ship clearance record as "Tayler." With his wife and children he embarked for America Apr. 6, 1635. on the ship "James" of London, and was at Ipswich, Mass. on June 4th following. After remaining a short time at Ipswich, Anthony decided to accompany his cousin Avery to Marblehead, to which place Avery had a call to preach as pastor. Both families (except Anthony's nephew Thomas, who preferred land travel) embarked Aug. 11, 1635 for Marblehead, and were shipwrecked off Cape Ann. All except Anthony and his wife were drowned. They succeeded in reaching a small island at the head of Cape Ann. On Sept. 3, 1635 the General Court of Plymouth Colony appropriated forty marks to be given Anthony toward his great losses. March 9, 1636-7 the Court gave him title to the island upon which he was preserved. Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts records that the General Court gave Mr. Thacher 26 pounds, 13 s. 4d. toward his losses, and divers good people gave him besides. The Plymouth Colonial records state that the General Court gave him a grant of land at Yarmouth, and at other places, Jan. 7, 1638. He remained at Marblehead for a time, but settled permanently at Yarmouth, where he was one of the leading figures and represented the Town at the General Court, 1643 to 1647 (inclusive), 1651, 1652, 1654, 1659, 1663, and 1665.

¹ "Genealogical Dictionary of New England." (Savage).

Children by 1st wife:

- I. WILLIAM, b. before 1620 at Queen Camel; accompanied the family to America, and was drowned 1635.
- II. Edith, b. about Feb. 1, 1621-22; bapt. by her uncle, Rev. Peter Thacher, drowned 1635 in the family disaster.
- III. MARY, drowned 1635.
- IV. Peter, drowned 1635.
- V. Benjamin, b. Apr. 13, 1634; bapt. Apr. 27, 1634 by his uncle, Rev. Peter Thacher. When the family came to New England he was left with his uncle Peter Thacher with a maintenance fund of 20 pounds a year. He died about Sept. 1, 1639. Children by 2nd wife:
- VI. John, b. March 17, 1638-9 at Marblehead, Mass.; d. May 8, 1713 at Yarmouth, Mass.; m. 1st, Rebecca Winslow; m. 2nd, Lydia Gorham.
- VII. JUDAH, b. probably at Yarmouth; d. Nov. 4, 1676 at Yarmouth; m. Mary Thornton.
- (3) VIII. BETHIA, b. 1645 at Yarmouth.
- 3. Bethia Thacher, b. 1645 at Yarmouth, Mass.; m. Jabez Howland.

References: "Genealogy of Descendants of Thomas and Anthony Thacher" (1872, Vineland, N. J.)

WARD

1. WILLIAM WARD, b. 1603 in England; d. Aug. 10, 1687 at Marlborough, Mass.; m. 1st () in England who d. in England before his emigration; m. 2d in England ELIZABETH () who was b. in 1614 and d. Dec. 9, 1700 at Marlborough, Mass. Both WILLIAM and ELIZABETH were bur. in Spring Hill Cemetery, Marlborough, where the original gravestone of ELIZABETH is still in place. A monument was erected to them both by their noted descendant, ARTEMAS WARD.

William with wife Elizabeth, and probably five children, came from England, probably in 1638-9, to Massachusetts, where in 1639 the Proprietors of Sudbury made a grant of land to him. He was made a Freeman May 10, 1643. In 1644 he represented Sudbury in the General Court. He was Chairman for several years of Sudbury's Selectmen. In 1651, under a new division of land in Sudbury, he became the owner of more than 200 acres there. With 13 other Sudbury men, in May, 1656 he petitioned the General Court successfully to establish a plantation about eight miles west of Sudbury. That new plantation was incorporated in 1660 as Marlborough, and in 1661 he moved there. He was prominent in Marlborough's civic and church life, and in 1666 was again in Boston as Deputy. His house was a garrison-house in King Philip's War, in which war he lost much property.

He appointed his wife ELIZABETH executrix of his will, April 6, 1686. He made

bequests to all his heirs.

Children by 1st marriage were all born in England:

- I. John, b. about 1626; d. July 8, 1708 at Newton, Mass.; m. about 1650 at Newton (then a part of Cambridge) Hannah Jackson. Resided in Newton, Mass.
- II. Joanna, b. about 1628; d. Dec. 8, 1718 at Marlborough, Mass.; m. about 1659, Abraham Williams. Resided in Watertown and Marlborough, Mass.
- OBADIAH, b. about 1632; d. Jan. 5, 1718 at Marlborough, Mass.; m. Nov. 28, 1667 at Marlborough, Mass., Mary (). Resided in Sudbury and Marlborough, Mass.
- (2) IV. RICHARD
 - V. Deborah, b. about 1637; d. Aug. 9, 1697 at Marlborough; Sudbury and Marlborough, Mass.

Children by 2d marriage were all born at Sudbury, Mass.:

- VI. Hannah, b. probably in Sudbury about 1639; d. Nov. 3, 1717 at Marlborough; m. March 26, 1657 at Watertown, Mass., Abraham How. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
- VII. Samuel, b. Sept. 24, 1641; d. Nov. 15, 1729 at Marlborough, Mass.; m. 1st, June 6, 1667 at Marlborough, Mass., Sarah Howe; m. 2d, May 25, 1710 Elizabeth Beers. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.

- VIII. ELIZABETH, b. Apr. 14, 1643; d. Apr. 26, 1710 at Marlborough; m. 1st, Jan. 22, 1662 at Sudbury, Mass., John Howe; m. 2d, Feb. 18, 1677 at Charleston, Mass., Capt. Henry Kerley. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
 - IX. INCREASE, b. Jan. 22, 1645 at Sudbury; d. Aug. 25, 1690 at Marlborough, Mass. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
 - X. Hopestill, b. Jan. 24, 1647 at Sudbury, Mass.; d. Dec. 23, 1718 at Marlborough; m. Apr. 22, 1678 at Marlborough, Deacon James Wood. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
 - XI. WILLIAM, b. Feb. 22, 1649 at Sudbury, Mass.; d. Nov. 25, 1697 at Marlborough; m. Aug. 4, 1679 at Marlborough, Hannah (Brigham) Eames. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
- XII. ELEAZER, b. about 1650 at Sudbury, Mass.; killed by Indians Apr. 20-21, 1676 in King Philip's War while riding from Marlborough to Sudbury, Mass.; m. July 10, 1675 at Marlborough, Hannah Rice. Resided at Marlborough, Mass.
- XIII. Bethiah, b. about 1658 at Sudbury, Mass.; d. Dec. 8, 1721 at Marlborough; m. Jan. 10, 1681 at Marlborough, Mass., Daniel Rice. Resided in Marlborough, Mass.
- 2. RICHARD WARD, b. about 1635 in England; d. March 31, 1666 at Sudbury' Mass. by drowning in the Sudbury River; m. Sept. 8, 1661 at Sudbury, Mary, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Whale) Moore, who d. Jan. 10, 1702. His widow and William Ward were appointed guardians of the children during their minority. Elizabeth m. 2d, Deacon Samuel Stone of Sudbury, and bore him eight children.

Children were born at Sudbury, Mass.:

- (3) I. OBADIAH
 - II. Lydia, b. March 16, 1665; d. Jan. 10, 1740; m. John Maynard of Marlborough, Mass. Resided in Marlborough.
- 3. Obadiah Ward, b. Apr. 19, 1663 at Sudbury, Mass.; d. Dec. 17, 1717 at Worcester, Mass.; m. Dec. 20, 1693 at Sudbury, Joanna (Mixer) Harrington who was b. Dec. 14, 1666 at Watertown, Mass. and who survived Obadiah and m. 3d () Whitney.

Obadiah retained real estate in Sudbury, but moved to Worcester, Mass. after 1712, where he built a sawmill on his farm.

He made his will Dec. 16, 1717.

Children were born in Sudbury, Mass.:

- I. RICHARD, d. 1756 at Holden, Mass.; m. Jan. 1, 1719 LYDIA WHEELOCK of Sudbury, Mass. Resided for some time in Worcester, Mass.
- II. OBADIAH, m. EUNICE (). Resided at Worcester from 1724 to 1734.
- III. HANNAH, d. Feb. 24, 1760 at Worcester, Mass.; m. Sept. 25, 1718 DANIEL HAYWOOD of Worcester, Mass.
- (4) IV. DANIEL
 - V. Dominada, b. Nov. 26, 1702.

- VI. URIAH, b. Dec. 3, 1704; d. Aug. 3, 1724. Killed by Indians at Rutland, Mass. while on garrison duty there.
- VII. SARAH, b. 1706.
- VIII. ISAAC, b. March 25, 1707; d. Oct. 1777; m. SIBYL MOORE. Resided in Petersham, Amherst and after about 1775, Leverett, Mass.
 - IX. THANKFUL, b. Feb. 15, 1711-12; m. Jonas Farnsworth of Groton, Mass.
- 4. Daniel Ward, b. Sept. 3, 1700 at Sudbury, Mass.; d. May 21, 1777 at Worcester, Mass.; m. 1st, about 1726, Sarah Moore who d. Nov. 1, 1730 at Worcester; m. 2d, Feb. 20, 1733 at Framingham, Mass. He resided at Worcester, Mass. where he was a Major in the Militia and a man of prominence.

Children were all born at Worcester, Mass.:

- I. Henry, b. Jan. 2, 1726-7; d. in 1769; m. Jan. 2, 1752 Lydia Mower of Worcester, Mass. who survived him and m. 2d, James Trowbridge.
- II. WILLIAM, b. Sept. 27, 1728; d. Oct. 19, 1728.
- (5) III. PHINEAS
 - IV. WILLIAM, b. Nov. 1733; m. 1st ELIZABETH MOWER of Worcester, Mass. who d. 1756; m. 2d, Nov. 7, 1765 SARAH TROWBRIDGE.
 - V. Mary. b. Nov. 8, 1735; m. March 30, 1757 at Worcester, Mass., Samuel Curtis.
 - VI. AZUBAH, b. Oct. 30, 1737; m. Dec. 26, 1758 John Greene of Woodstock, Conn.
 - VII. Samuel, b. Sept. 25, 1739; d. Aug. 14, 1826 at Lancaster, Mass.; m. Dec. 26, 1768 Dolly Chandler.
 - VIII. Daniel, b. July 26, 1741; d. 1815; m. 1781 Damaris Stevens.
 - IX. SARAH, b. 1743; m. Apr. 14, 1767 Moses Baker of Woodstock, Vt.
 - X. URIAH, b. Dec. 8, 1745; d. March 12, 1813; m. Dec. 23, 1767 JEMIMA HARRINGTON of Worcester, Mass.
 - XI. Asa, b. Feb. 17, 1747-8; d. July 2, 1818; m. about 1771 Mrs. Hannah (Chamberlain) Heywood.
 - XII. ESTHER, b. March 7, 1750-1; m. Feb. 26, 1768 at Worcester, Josiah Ball.
- 5. Phineas Ward, b. Oct. 12, 1729 at Worcester; d. Nov. 20, 1808 at Worcester; m. 1st, Apr. 22, 1752 Eunice Cutting at Worcester; m. 2d, Deborah ().

He was a Corporal in the French and Indian Wars, 1756-59, and a Minuteman in Timothy Bigelow's Company, in the Regiment of Artemas Ward.

Children were born at Worcester, Mass.:

- I. Phineas, b. Jan. 11, 1753; d. Aug. 22, 1776 at Worcester, Mass.
- II. SARAH, b. Feb. 1, 1754.
- III. HANNAH, b. Aug. 17, 1755.
- IV. Eunice, b. Dec. 5, 1756; d. Oct. 6, 1782 at Worcester.
- V. Patty, b. Nov. 5, 1758; bapt. as Betty.
- (6) VI. DAVID
 - VII. NATHANIEL, b. Jan. 29, 1762. He moved back East.

- VIII. MARY, b. July 22, 1764; was called MOLLY.
 - IX. Nahum, b. Dec. 11, 1765. Resided in western part of New York State.
 - X. Dolly, b. Sept. 17, 1768; m. by 1793 to Laban Smith of Worcester, Mass.
 - XI. John, b. May 21, 1770; m. Sally Bigelow at Shrewsbury, Mass. and settled in New York State.
- 6. David Ward, b. June 11, 1760 at Worcester, Mass.; d. Feb. 20, 1829 at Middlefield, Mass.; m. Abigail () probably about 1784 at Worcester, Mass.

Children:

- I. PHINEAS, b. Jan. 24, 1785.
- II. Nancy, b. Sept. 9, 1786; m. Nov. 6, 1806 at Worthington, Mass., Ezra Herrick.
- (7) III. NAHUM
 - IV. John, b. July 14, 1790 at Worthington, Mass.
 - V. Mary, b. March 6, 1793 at Worthington, Mass.
 - VI. EMILY, b. Oct. 20, 1795; called EMILA on birth records.
 - VII. Loise, b. Feb. 3, 1798 at Worthington, Mass.
 - VIII. SARAH, b. May 23, 1800 at Worthington, Mass.; m. MARCH 30, 1829 at Middlefield, Mass., Alpheus Prentice.
 - IX. Elmira, b. March 14, 1803 at Partridgefield, Mass.
- 7. Nahum Ward, b. June 22, 1788 at Worthington, Mass.; d. July 14, 1828 at Washington, Mass.; m. Aug. 26, 1808 at Worthington, Mass., Priscilla Herrick who survived Nahum and was granted land Dec. 9, 1828 at Washington, Berkshire Co., Mass.
- The record of their children is found in the petition of widow Priscilla, Sept. 9, 1828 to be appointed administratrix of Nahum's estate. It is believed that all the children, except possibly the last, were born in Worthington, Hampshire Co., Mass. where Nahum lived from birth to at least March, 1823.

Children:

- I. Daughter, b. 1809-10.
- II. WILLIAM, b. 1811; d. after 1880 at Dorset, Ashtabula Co., O.
- III. Welthy, b. about 1812.
- (8) IV. EPHRIAM
 - V. TROWBRIDGE, b. June 16, 1816; d. Jan. 18, 1891 at Wright Township. Hillsdale Co., Mich.; m. Jan. 22, 1844 in Portage Co., O., NANCY A. CAULKINS; both are bur. in the Lickly's Corner Cemetery, Wright Twp., Hillsdale Co., Mich.
 - VI. Isaac, b. May 15, 1819; d. March 4, 1899 at Colebrook, Ashtabula Co., O; m. about 1842 Louisa Roxana; both are bur. in the Dodgeville Cemetery, New Lyme Twp., Ashtabula Co., O.
 - VII. HARLOW, b. 1823; d. after 1880; m. before 1854 MARY J. ROBBINS.
 - VIII. BETSEY, b. 1824-1828.

8. EPHRIAM WARD, b. in July, 1813 at Worthington, Mass.; d. Jan. 6, 1897 at Cleveland, O.; m. about 1835, probably in New York State, Hannah Harder who d. Feb. 3, 1903 at Lenox, Ashtabula Co., O.

He bought land in Lenox Jan. 15, 1857 and three more lots in 1860 and 1870, which he and wife sold in February, 1871. In 1880 he was living at Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O. Before he died in 1897 he gave his residence as Lenox, Ashtabula Co., O.

Children:

- I. Weltha A., b. in 1836 in New York State; d. 1875 in Ohio.
- II. Nahum H., b. Feb. 24, 1838 in New York State; d. Feb. 27, 1916; m. Dec. 20, 1866 at Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O., Polly M. Pease.
- III. HENRY C., b. in 1840 at Mantua, Portage Co., O.; m. Nov. 2, 1871 at Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O., ALICE A. RUSSEL.
- IV. Elbridge E., b. in 1842 at Mantua, Portage Co., O.; d. 1908 at Chanute, Kan.; m. May 31, 1867 Flora Irwin.
- (9) V. Dallas Adelbert.
 - VI. CORDELIA, b. 1846 in Ohio; m. () MEAD.
 - VII. NEWTON, b. 1848 in Ohio; m. about 1872 CORNELIA E. NEAL.
 - VIII. EARL M., b. 1856 in Ohio; m. MARION (). In 1880 they were living with his parents in Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O.
- 9. Dallas Adelbert Ward, b. Feb. 2, 1844 at Mantua, Portage Co., O.; d. Aug. 26, 1923 at Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O.; m. 1st, in March, 1870 Susanna (Cox) Gowdy who d. Oct. 7, 1918 at Jefferson, Ashtabula Co., O.; m. 2d (). The bodies of Dallas and his first wife are in the mausoleum at Ashtabula, Ashtabula Co., O.

He was a soldier in the War between the States.

Child by 1st marriage:

- (10) I. Mabelle Estelle
- 10. Mabelle Estelle Ward, b. Feb. 17, 1876; m. June 1, 1905 William Seth Howland.

References:—
"William Ward Genealogy" (Charles Martyn, 1925).
Ashtabula Co., Ohio records.

YEATS

1. John Yeats was a resident and head of a family in Providence, R. I. by Aug. 1688, where he paid taxes; was chosen Constable June 3, 1695 and juryman Aug. 27, 1707. The last record available is that he and his were were seriously ill Feb. 18, 1722-3.

Children:

- (2) I. John
 - II. MEHITABLE
 - III. ARCHIBALD
 - IV. James, b. 1700 at Providence, R. I.; d. Apr. 7, 1793 in that part of Bristol, Me. called Bremen; m. Jane McNear who was born 1717 and died Dec. 31, 1802 at Bremen. He served in the expedition against Louisburg, 1745, and later in its defense. Under the family custom he divided most of his property among his children long before he made his will, which was proved Dec. 10, 1795. He spelled his name Years, but it was often spelled Yates. James and Jane had 9 children.
- 2. John Yeats Jr., m. Jan. 24, 1708-9 at Providence, R. I., Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas and Martha (Harris) Field. On Dec. 13, 1715 he was appointed appraiser of property, which seems to have been the only public office he held. He died Nov. 27, 1724, intestate. His wife survived him and was administrator of his estate. The inventory shows that he was a man of education, as he had a small library including an "old Bible." He was part owner of a ship, owned a valuable messuage, and had equipment necessary to an officer in charge of a sailing ship on voyage.

Child:

- (3) I. James, b. July 18, 1710 at Providence, R. I.
- 3. James Yeats, b. July 18, 1710 at Providence, R. I.; d. Apr. 1, 1772 from a fall from a horse; m. 1st, Jan. 6, 1733-4 at Glocester, R. I., Taborah Taft of Uxbridge, Mass.; she d. May 4, 1753 at Uxbridge; m. 2nd, Dec. 26, 1753 at Douglas, Mass., widow Elizabeth Titus of Douglas. He made his will 1772 which is filed as Case No. 67944 in the Registry of Wills, Worcester, Mass.

Children by 1st wife:

- I. John, b. Dec. 17, 1734.
- II. ELIZABETH, b. Dec. 13, 1736.
- III. PAUL, b. Jan. 11, 1738-9.
- IV. MARCY, b. Apr. 3, 1741.
- V. JAMES, b. Dec. 11, 1743.

- (4) VI. Abner, b. Aug. 12, 1746 at Uxbridge, Mass.
 - VII. AMARIAH, b. Feb. 28, 1749.
 - VIII. GILBERD, b. Nov. 16, 1751.

Children by 2nd wife:

- IX. James, b. May 15, 1755.
- X. BARZEEL, b. Oct. 12, 1757.
- ABNER YEATS, b. Aug. 12, 1746 at Uxbridge, Mass.; m. Apr. 30, 1770 at Douglas, Mass., Ruth, dau. of John and Mercy (Wood) Emerson of Douglas, who was b. Nov. 24, 1751 at Douglas and who d. there 1812-1813. ABNER survived her and made his will Aug. 10, 1826, which was probated March 3, 1829.

Children:

- (5)I. LUCINA
 - John, of Douglas, Mass.; m. June 28, 1792 Susannah, daughter of LABAN HOPKINS of Glocester, R. I.
 - III. MERCY, m. Jan. 23, 1800, John White Jr. of Uxbridge, Mass.
 - IV. Lydia, m. Oct. 17, 1800, Augustus Wilcox of Glocester, R. I.
 - V. Rev. Amos; m. Nancy Paine of Glocester, R. I. He was a preacher in the Reformed Methodist Church of Douglas, Mass. from 1816 until he was too feeble because of age to continue.
- 5. Lucina Yeats, m. Dec. 15, 1791, Joseph Howland. Both were of Douglas, Mass.

References:

"Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island" (Austin) p. 77.
'Vital Records of Providence, R. I." (Arnold).
Vital Records of Uxbridge, Mass. and Douglas, Mass.





INDEX

Adams, Andrew 90, 91	Arresdale, Elizabeth 206
Candace 213	ATKINS, Elizabeth 186
Richard 206	Mercy 186
Agranta Profile 00 102 103 108 109 110.	ATWOOD, Clarence Fay 61
AGUINALDO, Emilio 99, 102, 103, 108, 109, 110,	Deanne Frederic 61
111, 116, 127	
ALDEN, John 22, 23, 24, 203	Gary Howland 61
Aldrich, Adah 65	Howland Fay 61
Armenias 58	Marjorie Bertha 61
Calvin 67	Phyllis Anne 61
Hannah 66	Priscilla Joyee 61
Jesse 64, 65	Avery, Abigail 212
Lydia 68, 69	Ayres, Esther 242
	,
Martha 56	Bacon, Elizabeth 167
Molly 66	Hannah 48, 167
Pamena 67	
Serena 65	Jeremiah 167
Thomas 67	John 167
Timothy 67	Lydia 229
ALEXANDER 36	Mary 167
ALEXANDRINO, General 110, 111	Mercy 167
ALEXARSON, Anne 168	Nathaniel 48, 167
Alxarson, Marey 168	Rachel 230
Alger, Anna 66	Samuel 167
	(Senator) 87
James 67	Bagnall, Benjamin 252
ALLEN, Captain 145	Bailey, Mary 205
Elizabeth 59	BAKER, Adaline 172
Gideon 240	Alta 172
Jane 175	
Jedediah 11	Alvin 172
Rachel 45	Barzillia Emerson 172
ALLERTON, Isaac 17, 22, 23, 24	Benjamin 47
Allis, Roxanna 210	Blaine, M. 172
ALLYN, Hannah 28	Corwin 172
Isaac 28	David 170
Jabez 28	Ebenezer 171
John 28	Ebenezer Porter 171
Mary 28	Elizabeth 71, 79, 168, 169, 170, 172, 218
Matthew 28	Ellen 172
	Emerson 71, 79, 171, 172, 218, 219, 236
Mercy 28	Everett 172
Thomas 28	Gordon 172
ALMY, John 20	Guy 172
Ames, Charity 188	
Amos, Esther 209	Harriet 172
AMPIL, Exequil 123	Jacob 170
Anorma, Pablo 117, 119, 120	Jane 172
Andrew, Daniel 233	Joan 239
Rebecca 233	John 168, 169, 170, 196
Thomas 233	Jonathan 170
Andrews, Calvin 210	Joseph 170
Thomas 168	Lelia 172
Annise, Polly A. 217	Lydia 172
Antonio, Florentio 117, 118, 119, 120	Martha 168, 169, 170
	Mary 170, 172
Antrim, Obadiah 168	Mary Emerson 171
Appleton, Isaac 169	Moses 258
Aguino, General 105	Newell 172
Archibald, Robert W. 86, 87	
Armitage, Jane 195	Plato 172
Arnold, James N. 36, 56	Porter 172
Arrero, Adriano 115	Priscilla 168, 169, 170
Arres, Samuel 168	Rebecca 169, 170
,	

Baker (continued)	Bigelow, Sally 259
Reed 172	Timothy $\overline{258}$ "
Samuel 170 Sarah 170	Billings, Harriet L. 217
Susan 47	Lydia 221
Symonds 170	BILLINGTON, Abigail 34
Thomas 168, 169, 170, 171	BISHOP, Joana (Boyse) (Prudden) (Willet) 240
Vandalia 172	John (Rev.) 239 Bixby, George Bates 66
William 170	Jacob 66
Baldwin, Aaron 212	James 66
Elnathan 241	Rebecca 66
Eunice 242	Uzzial 66
Sylvanus 240	Black, Lorena 211
Ball, Josiah 258 Bandy 91	Blackman, Nathaniel 60
Bangs, Jonathan 178	BLACKWELL, Patience 183, 187
Mary 178	Blagrove, Nathaniel 42 Blake, Betsey 67
Thomasine 178	Bliss, Chauncey Staples 215
Banks, Charles E. 179	Mary 212
Barker, Elizabeth 174	BLODGETT, Esther 231
George 174	Blossom, Mercy 29
Jeremiah 47	Bogatt, Agnes (Prudden) 238
Penelope 47	Bompasse, Isaac 224
Samuel 44	Воотнву 145
Sarah 7	Bosworth, David 32 Edward 32
Barintz, Albert (Colonel) 172 Bertha Rose 172	Elizabeth 32
Blanche Clare 172	Hannah 32
Mary Emerson (Maidie) 172	Ichabod 32
Barlow, John 182	Jabez 32
Barnard, Abigail 221	John 32
Sarah 221	Jonathan 20, 32
Barreto, Philippino 112	Mercy 32
BARRY, Thomas H. (Major Gen'l) 140, 141	BOULLE, Bridget 168
BARTLETT, Robert 182	Bourne, Meltiah 30 Richard 30, 177, 182
Barton, Anne 61	Sylvanus 27
Thomas 61 Bassett, Elizabeth 177	Thomas 20
Thankful 184	Timothy 187
William 177, 181, 184	BOUTWELL, Mary 195
Bates, John C. 114	Bowen, Elisha 246
Judson 66	Hannah Mason 246
Batchelder, Experience 233	Mary 246 Boyse, Johana 239–240
BATT, Alice 254	John (Rev.) 239
BAXTER, Thomas Sr. 27	Bradford, Sarah 205
BEALE, Hannah 195	William 17, 18, 20, 22 23 24 28 32 33 40,
Beals, Edson 190 Bean, Minerva Whitemarsh 61	_ 179, 206
Samantha 214	Bradhurst, Hannah 230
Beatty, Amelia 211	Bradstreet, Bridget 201
Beauchamp, Edward 199	Humphrey 201
John 180, 199, 200	John 233 Mary 201
Thomas 199	Sarah 233
BEAUMONT, Margaret de 176	Simon (Gov.) 233
Beckwith, Florence 172	Brage, Bethia 43
Beers, Elizabeth 256 Belcher, Edward 47	General 79
Elijah 211	Nicholas 43
Elizabeth 212	Braman, Daniel 211
Bell, J. Franklin (Major Gen'l.) 111, 117	Elizabeth 212 John 211
Bellingham, Governor 248	Sabra 211
Benjamin, Elisha 210	Branch, Hannah 210
Kezia 211	John 19
Perry 217	Brenton, William 249, 250
BENNETT, Jemima 184	Brewster, Elizabeth 193
Joseph 225	Patience 200, 224
Peter 35	William 23, 24, 177, 200, 203, 224
Berthelett, Thomas 1	Bridge, William 229

T) T)	Sarah 175
Briggs, Bennet 182	
Ebenezer 182	Thomas 173, 174, 175
Elizabeth 182	William 173
Hannah 182	Bullocke, Robert 181
John 182	Bunbury, Alice de 173
	Richard de 173
Katherine 182	
Samuel 182	Burgess, Dorothy 177, 223
Brimmer, George E. 156, 157	Elizabeth 177, 223
Brockett, Jessie 244	Jacob 177, 178
John 245	John 177, 178
	Joseph 177, 178
Sir John 245	Martha 178
Julia 244, 245	
Brooks, Eben 189	Mary 178, 185, 186
Brookshire, Captain 146	Mercy 178
Brown, Aaron C. 213	Patience 178
Ann 32	Samuel 178
Anna 195	Burgess, Sarah 178
T	Thomas 177, 178, 223, 22
Benjamin 31	
Betsey R. 212	Burgos, Pedro 130
Colonel 60	BURLINGHAME, James 45
Dorcas 210	Patience 194
Dorothy 32	Burnham 215
Esther 215	Burns, William J. 88
	Burr, Jehu 240
Isaac 31	
Jabez 32, 48	Bursley, Abigail 29
James 26, 31, 41, 239	Elizabeth 28, 29
John 31, 176, 239	Jabez 28
Lydia 41	Joana 29
1 vdia (Hawland) 54 55 1930	John 28
Lydia (Howland) 54, 55, 239	
Margaret 32	Joseph 29
Mary 31, 239	Mary 28
Mary A. 235	Mercy 28
Mercy 32	Temperence 29
Oliver, Jr. 216	Burt, John 46
	Burton, Josiah 212
Peter 203	Theodore 85, 86
Brown, Browne, Samuel 171	
T. 192	Bush, Anna 214
William 31	Barzillai 235
BRYANT, Ruth 33	Mary Jane 235
Bubb, John W. (Major) 100, 101, 102	Moses 214
	Bushman, Susan 197
Buckey, (Capt.) 114	Browner Abigoil 951
Buencamino, Felipe 109, 110, 111	Bushnell, Abigail 251
Buffum, Eliza 235	Francis 251
Bulkeley, Anne 174	Buxton, Arvilla 66
Catherine 174	
	CADWELL, Alonzo B. 235
Daniel 175	Cahoon, Deliverance 222
Deborah 174	Sarah 189
Dorcas 174	
Dorothy 175	Thankful 222
Edward 174, 175	Callies, General 117
Eleazer 175	Caiman, Pulercarpio 115
Elizabeth 174, 176, 193, 195	CALDWELL, (Brig. Gen'l) 145
	CAMPIELD William 238
Frances 174	CAMPIELD, William 238 CAMPDEN, Viscount 5
Gershom 175	CAMPDEN, VISCOURT O
Hugh 173	CAPEN, Mary 169
Humphrey 173	CAREY, Abigail 45, 47
Jabez 175	Bathsheba 46, 47
	David 46
Jane 176	Elizabeth 46
John 173, 175, 176	
Joseph 175	John 49
Judith 174	Nathaniel 46
Lucian (or Lucy Ann) 175	Carleton, Adeline 235
Margaret 174	Carey 235
	Jacob 235
Martha 174	Carlisle, Mary 47
Mary 174, 175, 176	Cappage A - 000
Nathaniel 174, 175	CARPENTER, Agnes 238
Paul 175	Alexander 32
Peter 173, 174, 175, 176	Alice 32
Rowland 174	Edward L. 95
THO MIGHT TAT	

Carpenter (continued)	Jay 70
Elizabeth Woods 95	Moses (General) 215
Frank 95	CLOUD, Captain 151
William Howland 95	Cobb, Jonathan 30
Carrie, Helen 217	Sarah 30
Carter, Jemima 188	Thomas 51, 52
Carver, Katherine 16, 17, 25	Coe, Benjamin 242
John 6, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 21, 33, 35	Enos 242
Casal, Alejandro 118	Coffin, Christian 221
Casbye, Ussabie 6	Dorcas 221
Casey, Charles 77	Lydia 221
Edmund 77	Micah 221
CATESBIE—CASBYE, Robert 7	Peter 221
CAULKINS, Nancy A. 259	Coнoon, Elizabeth 188
CAVERLY, Robert (Dr.) 208	Sarah 221, 222
Снаffee, Adna R. (Gen'l.) 118, 123, 124	Corr, Ruth 230
Chandler, Dolly 258	Cole, Elizabeth 229
Phoebe 204	James 34
Roger 204	Joanna 33
Sarah 204	Margaret 201
Chapman, Erastus 211	Martha 34
Hannah 211	Sarab 246
CHAPPEL, Jonathan 226, 227	Coles, Alice 199
CHARLES I (King) 248	George 199
II (King) 41	Collins, Espery 211
Chase, Abraham 221	Samuel 10
Amasa 65	Colson, Edwin 214
Eleanor 221	Eva 214
Elizabeth 187	Evart 214
John 185	Frank 214
CHESTER, Joseph Lemuel (Col.) 2	Common, M. (Mayor) 142
CHETWOOD, Grace 175	CONANT, George 34
CHILD, Elizabeth 237	Conception, General 105
CHIPMAN, Bethia 30 Desire 30	CONDE, Christian 221
Elizabeth 30	Condit, Bethia 241
Hannah 30	Peter 242
Hope 30	Rhoda 242
John 30	CONKLING, Roscoe 96
John (Rev.) 234	Convers, Deborah 229
Lydia 30	Converse, James 220 Mr. 82
Mercy 30	Cook—Cooke, Elmira 69
Rebecca 234	Enos 69, 72, 73
Ruth 30	Jacob 36
Samuel 30	John 19
CHITTENDEN, Thomas 240	Lucina 70
Church, Benjamin 36, 42	Lydia 207, 208
Israel 46	Olive 70
Churchill, Abigail 34	Polly 70
Elizabeth 184	Cookery, Henry 220
John 184	Coolidge, Calvin 90, 227
Stephen 184	Eunice 227
Winston 10	John 227
CLAP, Stephen 27	Mary 227
CLARK—CLARKE, Anna 187	Coombs, Frances 35
Dorothy 199	Coon, Loren 80
Edward 199	COPPINGER, (Major General) 96
Faith 182	Соттом, John 39, 182
(Governor) (Wyoming) 158 Harriet 172	Nathaniel 51
Mehitable 186	Rowland 184
	Crabbe, Susan 192
Sarah 182 Thomas 206, 240	Craig, Malin (General) 145
William 22, 24	CRAMOND, Elizabeth 214
William (Mrs.) 24	Crandall, Bertha Minerva 61 Crandon, Thomas 33
CLELAND, Nanny 245	Crary, (Colonel) 60
CLEVELAND—CLEAVELAND, Chester 69-70	Crawford, (Lieut.) 152
George 70	Crocker, Benjamin 29
Georgiana 70	Deborah 29
-	

Eleazer 30	DEWEY, George (Admiral) 98
Ephraim 29	DEXTER, William 28
Hannah 29	DIBBLE, Linnie 215
Isaac 29	Dickenson, Elizabeth 30
John 29	Hannah 31 Jabez 31
Jonathan 29 Joseph 29	James 31
Lydia 29	John 30
Mary 29	Joseph 30
Prudence 27, 29	Lydia 31
Reliance 29	Mehitabell 31
Thankful 29	Mercy 30
Crofoot, Joseph 214	Samuel 31
Sarah Mehitable 214	Dickman, J. T. (Major Gen'l) 144, 145 Dickson, Martha 244
Cromwell, Oliver 248 Crook, Jacob 185	Dikeman, Amanda 213
Crouch, Mary 213	Dimock, Desire 27
Crow, William 19, 40	Shubel 30
CROWELL, Elizabeth 225	Dingley, John 20
Fanny 210	Doan-Doane-Done, John 19
Cudworth, James 11, 22	Mehitable 222
Mary 205	Susannah 222
Cue, Robert 234	Dodg, (Governor) 80
Cummings, Lydia 234 Thomas 234	Dodge, Hannah 233 Josiah 234
Curtis, Beriah 210	Robert 235
J. J. 59	Thomas 234
Samuel 258	William 233
Cushing, John 235	Domingo, Bonaventuro 117
Cushman, Desire 34	Donceras, Jorge 130
Robert 14, 34	Doremus, George W. 80
Thomas 34, 61	DOREY, (Brig. Gen'l) 158, 160
Cutting, Eunice 258	Dorr, Catherine 194
DAGGET, A. S. (Brig. Gen'l) 131	Doty, Edward 182 Ellis 182
DAGUHOB 128, 129	Joseph 182
DALY, Adeline 214	Theophilus 182
Elizabeth 214	Thomas 184
Ezekiel 214	Dow, Henry 201
Flora 214	Drake, Daniel 243
John 214	Jemima 243
Osmer 214	Phebe 243
Sarah 214	Dravo, Charles A. (Lt. Col.) 144, 145
William 214	Drew, Mary C. 235
DAMON, John 11 Thomas 195	Duffy, (Major) (Chaplain) 145 Dunнам 24
DARLING, Matthew 194	DUNSTER, (Reverend) 189, 222
DAUGHERTY, Harry M. 87, 88, 89, 90	Durfee, Carrie 214
DAVENPORT, John (Rev.) 239, 245	Ella Rose 214
Davidson, Lavinia 244	Isaac 214
DAVID (Colonel) 152	John 246
George B. 131	Mary 29
John W. 87	William Ray 214
R. P. (Brig. Gen'l) 153 Robert 246	Duston, Hannah 207, 208
Simon 42, 43	DUTCH, Robert 201 DWELLEY, John 188
William T. 40, 47	Dyer, William 34
Dawes, Charles G. (General) 150	2 124, 11 111411 01
DAY, (Captain) 110	EAMES, Hannah (Brigham) 257
Carrie 66	Eastes, Benjamin 221
DAYTON, Betty Jane 77	EASTMAN, Lois 246
DEGOLLIER, Marie L. 59	EATON, Francis 17, 203
Delano, Elizabeth 35	Susanna 231
Jonathan 36	Eddy, Joseph 63 Lillis 67
Rebecca 184 Dennis, Robert 11	Nancy 65
Dennison, George 27, 31	Renew 65
Margaret 31	EHLERS, Joan Gail 77
DERN, George H. 162	O. C. (Dr.) 77

Eldredge, Caleb 62	Samuel 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189
Elisha 185	Sarah 183, 188, 189, 190
Jemima 187 Sarah 188	Seth 187
ELIZABETH, (Queen) 3, 4, 245	Susannah 190
Ellis, Abiel 187	Thankful 185, 186, 188, 190 Thomas 184, 185, 187
Abigail 187	William 182, 183, 185
Annie 188	ELY, Hanson E. (Major Gen'l) 150, 151, 153
Barak 188	Emerson, Abigail 196
Benjamin 183, 186, 187	Alice 192
Bennet 182	Anne 192
Betty 184	Arnold 236
Charity 188	Benjamin 193
Charles 184	Benjamin K. 236
Christopher 179 Cornelius 184, 186, 188, 189	Charles 235 Charles K 226
Daniel 184	Charles K. 236 Cornelius Waldo 196
Deborah 182, 188	Daniel 195
Diadamia 71, 72, 76, 189, 191	Dorcas 196
Dorothy 185	Dorothy 196
Ebenezer 184, 185, 187	Ebenezer 194, 195, 196
Edmund Freeman 185	Edward 195, 196
Eleanor 183, 185, 187	Elihu 196
Eleazer 185	Elizabeth 193, 195, 196
Elijah 187	Ezekiel 194
Elisha 221 Elizabeth 192 194 195 196 100	George 192
Elizabeth 182, 184, 185, 186, 190 Elnathan 187	Hannah 194, 195, 196 James 193, 194, 235
Ephraim 187	Joan 192
Experience 184, 185	Joanna 194
Gamaliel 184	John 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 236, 262
George 184	Joseph 176, 193, 194, 195, 196
Gideon 185, 186, 187	Jude 194
Hester 185	Katharin 194
Isaac 186	Lucyan 195
Isabel 184	Luke 194
Jabez 183	Lydia 193
James 191	Margaret 192 Mark 171, 172
Jemima 187	Mary 170, 193, 194, 196
Joanne 185 Joell 183, 184, 185	Mary Martha 236
John 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 186, 187,	Nathaniel 193, 194
200	Peter 195
John Sherwin 191	Phoebe 194
Jonathan 183	Porter Kilton 172
Joseph 184, 186, 187	Ralf (Ralph) 192, 193
Josiah 183	Ralph Waldo 195
Joshua 187	Rebecca 196
Levi 188, 190	Robert 192, 193 Ruth 58, 68, 194, 262
Lucia 184	Sarah 193, 194, 196
Lucy 184	Susan 193
Lydia 190 Walashi 184	Thomas 192, 193, 194, 196
Malachi 184 Manoah 71, 171, 178, 183, 185, 186, 188, 189.	William P. 236
190, 191, 222, 227, 228	EMERY, David 235
Marcy 185, 186	Jame 235
Mary 179, 183, 184, 185, 186, 191	Sarah 235
Matthais 183, 184	Endicott, (Governor) 232
Mercy 183, 184, 185, 186	ERLINGTON, Francis 1
Mordecai 182, 183, 184, 185	Escamila, Felipe 118
Nathaniel 183	Esty, Isaac 202
Olive 191	Evan, (Capt.) 105
Oliver 191	Evans, George 213 Everett, Mary S. 211
Patience 185 Phospa 184 101	and the state of t
Phoebe 184, 191 Priscilla 184	FAIRBANKS, Huldah 211
Rebecca 183, 184, 189	Joseph 194
Remember 184, 185	Farnsworth, Jonas 258
Reuben 187	Farnum, Josiah 214

FARWELL, Sarah 250	FREYBE, Lesile Thompson 77
Thomas 250	Fuller, Abigail 34 J. 192
FAY, Charles 60 FELIZARDO, Francisco 117, 119, 120	John 27, 193
FERGUSON, Nancy 244	Funstan, Frederick (Gen'l) 115
Fessenden, Benjamin (Rev.) 225	1 011011111) 1 100011012 (01011) 110
FIDDLAR 197	GABRIEL, Ralph H. 150
FIELD, Elizabeth 261	GADAPIA, Ramon 118
Thomas 261	Santiago 117, 120
FIELDS, Eliza 210	Gage, Benjamin 185
FIRESTONE, Clark Barnaby 198	Garcia, Pantaleon 110, 111, 116
Daniel 197	Gardner, Elizabeth 27
David 198	Hannah 233
Flora 94, 198	Polly (Cook) 70
George 197	Simeon 221
Hannah 197	Thomas 233
Harriet 198	GARFIELD, James A. 82
Jacob 197	Garivalles, Gregorio 118, 122 Monico 118, 122
John 197 Loganh 197	GATCHELL, Mary 185
Joseph 197 Katie 197	GATES, Daniel 209
Louisa 197	GAUDEN—GODDEN, David 243
Mary 197	Providence 243
Matthias 197	Juliette 95
Michael 197	Gaunt, Lydia 177
Nancy 197	Peter 177
Nicholas 197	GEER, Cynthia 235
Perry 198	Jepthah 212
Ross Williams 198	Laura 212
Sarah 197	Gibbs, Allison D. 118
Solomon 197	Frank H. 59
Solomon J. 198 Susannah 198	George 59
Walter Scott 198	George R. 59 Mabel G. 59
Fiske, Sarah 234	Mamie 59
FITZWILLIAMS, George 5	Marion 59
Flagler, C. A. F. (Major Gen'l) 144, 145	May 59
FLINT, Ephriam 176	Patience 185
FLOYD, John C. 87	Ruby 59
FOABES, Hannah (Starkweather) (Parks) 212	Thomas 183
FOBES, Caleb 206	Giddings, Joshua 71, 75
FORBES, Elias 210	GIFFORD, Catherine 226
FORD, Thankful 213	Justice 226
Fosserr, Edward 5 Frances 5	Phoebe 226
FOSTER, (Mr.) 89	Rueben 226 Gilbert, Daniel 233
Robert 191	John 233
FOWLER, (Capt.) 111	GLENN, E. F. (Major Gen'l) 143
Joseph 201	GLOVER, Earl W. 77
Franklin, Benjamin 47	F. W. (Colonel) 150
Elisha 57, 58	Gail 77
Hannah 58	Warren 77
Merrobe 57	Goddard, Lydia 66
Freeman, Alice 199, 200	GOMPERS, Samuel 88, 89
Bennett 200	GOODALE, Howard 235
Edmund 180, 182, 183, 199, 200, 223, 224 Edward 177	GOODHUE, Joseph 233
Eleanor 199	GOODWIN, John A. 179
Elizabeth 180, 199, 200	Gorham, Benjamin 27 Desire 27
Frederick 225	Ebenezer 27
Isaac 27	Elizabeth 27
John 180, 199, 200	Elmira 211
Joseph 211	Experience 27
Mary 200, 211, 223	Hannah 27
Nathaniel 200	Isaac 27
Patience 177	Jabez 27
Rebecca 224	James 26, 27
Thomas 199	Job 27
William 199	John 20, 21, 26, 27

GORHAM (continued)	HARDER, Hannah 260
Joseph 27	HARDY, Lottie 217
Lydia 27, 255	HARE, (Colonel) 110
Mary 27 Mahitable 27	HARBINGTON, Jemima 258
Mehitable 27 Mercy 27, 31	Joanna (Mixer) 257
Nathaniel 26	HARRIS, Eben 213
Samuel 27	Martha 261
Shubal 27	HARRISON, John 229
Stephen 27	HART, Anne 4, 5
Sylvanus 27	John (Sir) 4
Temperance 27	HARVEY, Lula Lucile 77
Thankful 27	HASKINS, John 194
Thomas 27	Hатсн, Temperance 226 Hатнаway, Jonathan 242
Gowdy, Susanna (Coy) 260	HATHORNE, Anne 232
Gragg, Lois 235	William 232
Grandidge, Isaacke 168	HAUGH, Atherton 174
Granger, Gideon 70, 71	HAWES, Elizabeth 167
GRANT, Frederick D. (Major Gen'l) 115	John 27
U. S. (General) 149	Mary 167
GRAVE, Elizabeth 193	HAWKINS, (Capt.) 220
GRAVELY, Elizabeth 223	Elizabeth 220
Graves, Mary 202	Hamilton S. (Col.) 96
GRAY 27	HAYDEN, Lucy 194
Green-Greene, John 181, 258	HAYES, Rutherford B. 82
Mary 43 William 174	HAYMAN, Nathan 48
GREENWAY, Anne (Agnes) 2	Priscilla 48
John 2	HAYWOOD, Daniel 257
Ralph 2	HERNANDEZ, Raimondo 115
Gregg, Israel 217	Herrick, Abigail 209
GRIDLEY, Daniel 77	Asa 211
Donald 77	Barny 210
Jackson H. 77	Eunice 210 Ezra 259
Jean Gail 77	Harvey 210
Judith 77	Lydia 233
Lawrence J. 77	Myron T. 85
Margaret 77	Phineas 209
Mary Ann 77	Priscilla 259
R. C. 76	Rufus 212
Griffin, John 169	Heywood, Hannah (Chamberlain) 258
GRISWOLD, Mary M. 211	Hicks, Elizabeth 30
GROSVENOR, Elizabeth 174	Ephraim 30
Randall 174	HIGGINS, Eunice 211
GUARDO, Leon 130	HILL, Abraham 220
Guitterez, (General) 116	Beatrice 173
HALE, Rebecca 234	Ebenezer 205
Hall, Daniel 193	William 173
Sarah 204	Hinckley.—Hinkley, Joseph 27 Sarah 167
W. P. 123	Thomas (Governor) 167
Hallet, Joseph 27	Hinds, John H. (Lieut.) 160
HALLOWAY, Malachi 251, 253	Hines, J. L. (Major Gen'l) 157
William 251	Hizon, (General) 105
Halsey, Banjamin 242	Hocking, John 23
$\mathrm{Ruth}~242$	Hodges, Henry 251
Hamblin-Hamlin, Alice 29	Hodsoll, Bennett 199
Isaac 34	Christian 199
Joseph 29	Hoffman, Josiah 213
Sarah 29	Holden, George J. (Colonel) 150
Seth 29	Holderness, (Lt. Col.) 142
Southworth 29	Holloway, Elizabeth (Shove) 50
HAMMATT, Abraham 33	Malachi 50
HAMMOND, Benjamin 181	Holmes, Sarah 183
HANDLEY, Elizabeth 30	William 19
Hanny, Desire 225	HOLZBAUER, Velma 77
Hannibal 225	Honorio 118
Job 226 Hanson 9	HOOPER, Elizabeth 204
LIANBUN J	Susannah 204

William 204	Edward 5
Hoover, David 235	Eliza (Mewton) Woolsey 34
Hopkins, Laban 58, 262	Elizabeth 1, 2, 5, 11, 28, 30, 32, 33, 34, 35,
Martha 56, 58 Oziel 64	43, 44, 45, 46, 61, 62, 66, 95, 239 Emily Lythors 57, 66
Patience 59	Emily Luthera 57, 66 Emma 59
S. B. 76	Enoch 66
Stephen 24	Erastus 57
Susannah 56, 58, 64, 262	Esther 94
Tabitha 58	Eunice 57
Hotchkiss, Lucina 210	Experience 29, 34, 46
Hough, Jedediah 212	Financy 57
Hovey, Abiah 34 How—Howe, Abraham 256	Florence H. 67
John 257	Floyd R. 76 Franklin B. 59
Sarah 256	Freelove 45, 55, 56, 57, 59, 61, 62
Howes, Thomas 183, 185	Geoffrey—Jeffrey 2, 5
Howland, Abbie 59	George 8, 9, 29
Abigail 10, 11, 46, 60	George W. 59, 67
"Agnete" 1	Georgia 67
Agnes-Anne 1, 3, 6, 8	Gerald Firestone 95
Alanson Seelye 57, 66	Giles 3, 4, 5
Aldrich 67 Alice 5	Glenn Crandall 61
Allen 66	Hanna 9, 57 Hannah 29, 32, 34, 35, 57, 60
Alzina 60	Harriet Minerva 61
Amanda 66	Hartley H. 59
Aminda 66	Helen 59
Andrew V. 67	Henry 8, 9, 10, 11, 47
Anne 5, 7, 8, 9, 29, 56	Henry H. 58, 59
Anson Perry 94, 198	Hope 30
Aretus B. 59	Huldah 45, 57
Aretas H. 59 Arthur 9, 10, 11	Humphrey 7, 8, 9, 10, 11
Asabel 55, 56, 61, 62	Inez 59
Asaph 60	Irene 59 Isaac 19, 20, 28, 34, 35
Ashil 61	Jabez 20, 24, 25, 28, 29, 34, 36, 39, 40, 41,
Banister 58, 59, 69, 73	42, 43, 44, 48, 49, 50, 67, 73, 74, 255
Barnabas 59	Jael 35
Barnice 67	James 6, 32, 34, 57, 61, 62, 64, 65, 66, 68
Benjamin 5, 34	Jane 60
Benjamin Franklin 59 Renten Menech 76	Jennie E. 59
Benton Manoah 76 Bernice 57, 60, 66	Jeremiah 35 Jessie Lucina 76
Bethia 34, 43, 44, 49	Joana 29, 34, 251, 253
Burt Joseph 77	Job 29
Caleb 56, 58, 59, 60, 61, 67	Johes 1
Cecely 2	John 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 20, 27,
Charles 35, 60	28, 29, 34, 35, 39, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 51,
Charles Roscoe 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102,	52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 60, 63, 65, 66, 68, 70,
103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 123, 124, 125,	251, 252, 253 Labo (Bilewire) 6, 7, 8, 0, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16
126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134,	John (Pilgrim) 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28,
135, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145,	31, 32, 33, 35, 39, 40, 45, 47, 48, 54, 55,
146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154,	61, 75, 84, 95, 203, 239, 252, 253
155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163,	John Sir 2
164	John C. 59
Charlotte, Lowilla 57, 66	John Leonard (John) 95
Christina 6	Joseph 10, 19, 20, 28, 32, 33, 34, 35, 39, 40,
Christopher 70	46, 47, 48, 57, 64, 65, 68, 69, 70, 74, 262
Clara 59 Consider 33, 34	Joseph Manoah 76 Josiah 23, 34, 39, 44, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53,
Crawford 66	54, 59, 251, 253.
Cynthia 66	Judah 45
Deane Orvis 61	L. M. 2
Deborah 11	Lama 70
Desire 20, 21, 26, 27	Leander 70
Dorcas 67, 70 Eddy 57	Laura A. 67
	TAILIFO G. IN

Howland (continued)	Susan 9, 57, 59
Leonard Paul 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 90, 91, 92, 94	Susanna 5, 35, 45 Tabitha 46, 56, 64
Lois 57	Thomas 33, 34, 44, 52, 55, 56, 57, 60, 62, 63
Lois (Lucy) 45	64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 72, 73, 202
Louis 56, 66	Thomas Southworth 34
Louisa 60	Uranah 66
Lucina 76 Lucy 33, 46	Valorons 61
Lydia 13, 25, 29, 31, 32, 33, 47	Walter James 61 Willard F. 59
— Lydia 11	William 3, 4, 5, 45, 57, 66, 67
Margaret 6, 7, 8, 9, 10	William Perry 67, 71, 75, 76, 78, 79, 80, 81
Marjorie Eliza 61	_82, 83, 84, 191, 219
Martha 11, 34 Mary 5 0 10 11 28 22 24 42 45 46 56	William Seth 92, 93, 94, 260
Mary 5, 9, 10, 11, 28, 33, 34, 43, 45, 46, 56, 57, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 66, 67, 251	Yet Mercy 23, 34, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 62, 63 Zacheus 29
Mary A. 59	Zoeth 10
Mary Ann 60	Hubbard, Lucins 211
Mary H. 70	Hubbell, Jane 213
Matthew 5	Richard 240
Mehitable 46 Melvin 57	Huckens—Huchins, Hannah 27
Mercy 29, 43, 57	John 30 Thomas 30
Minnie 76	Hughes, Charles Evans 91
Miriam 45, 57	Hugo, Victor 91
Munion 57	HULETT, Frances 215
Nancy 65, 67	HUNT, Daniel 63
Nancy Ann 60 Naomi 66	Dorothy 45, 46 HUNTLEY, Ezekiel 73
Nathan 35, 66, 67	Hiran 217
Nathaniel 9, 19, 23	Louisa 217
Nicholas 6, 7	Lydia 217
Olinda 57	Milo 76
Olive 57, 69, 72, 73	HURLBUT, John 194
Oliver Charles 61 Orvis Silas 61	Hussey—Huzzey, Puelia (Priscilla) 27
Patience 44, 51, 53, 67	John 10 Rebecca 10
Paul 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 79, 95,	Ingolby, Anthony 174
189, 191, 218, 2 45	IRBY, John 174
Paul Russell 76	Olive 174
Paul William 70	Inwin, Flora 260
Pearl Leon 77 Phebe 46, 57, 70	Ivory, John 238
Phylena Maria 57, 66	Jone 238
Polina 57	Jackson, Genevieve H. 77
Polly 57, 59	H. S. (Rev.) 84
Prince 57	Hannah 256
Priscilla 35	James S. 76
Ralph 4	James W. (jr.) 77
Rebecca 57, 65 Reuben 57	James Waterman 77 Margaret E. 77
Rhoa 57	Shadlee Ann 77
Rhoda 57	Vera Lucina 76
Richard 1, 3, 4, 6, 76	William H. 76
Robert 4, 5, 57, 76	Jacobus, Donald Lines 176
Robert S. 70 Puth 23, 24, 50, 61, 67	JAMES, (King) 3
Ruth 33, 34, 59, 61, 67 Sabin 59	JAVIER, Caledonio 117, 118, 119, 120
Samuel 2, 11, 39, 42, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51	Jefferson, Thomas 71 Jenkins, Joseph 33
52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 67, 61, 11, 24, 43, 60, 67	Jenes, Nathaniel 32
63, 64, 67, 69, 247	JENNE, Calista Howland 67
Saran 9, 10, 11, 54, 45, 60, 67	Calvin Aldrich 67
Sarah Jane 57, 66	Jacob 67, 70
Seth 35, 45, 46, 70, 74, 92 Shubael 29	John 19
Silas Charles 60, 61	Ochrey 67, 70 Stanban 67
Simon 8, 9	Stephen 67 Timothy 63
Solomon Paul 77	Jennings, Hannah 204
Stephen 57, 66, 67	Rose 183

Arthur 218	Kinne, Buel 212
Hiram 88	Prentice 212
Laura 212	Kinney, Hutchins 211
Lizzie Jane 70	Kirby, Richard (Jr.) 11
Samuel 235	KLINE, Jacob 127
Tom L. 85	Knapp, Florella 215
Jones, Christopher 16	Knowlton, Thomas 201
Elizabeth 254	Knox, Henry (Commander) 109
Hannah 221	Turn Olive 044
Thankful 221	Lake, Olive 244 Lampson, William 344
Thomas 221 Joyce, Hosea 30	Langley, Grisogan 2
Judson, Grace 240	John 2
Joseph 240	Lanman, Samuel 184
O O O O P A M I O	Lassiter, William (Major Gen'l) 152, 157
KEEN, James 242	Latham, Robert 28
Sarah 242	William 17
Keifer, J. Warren (Major Gen'l) 97	LATON, (Miss) 242
Keller (Congressman) 87, 88, 89, 90	Lawrason, George C. (Lt. Col.) 156
Kellogg, Phoebe Augusta 216	Lawrence, Charles H. (Lt. Com.) 149
Kelso, Elizabeth Ann 77	George J. (Major; Surgeon) 145, 146
Fred A. 77	Lawton, (General) 99, 100, 103, 105, 108, 110 111, 124
Marie 77 Phyllis 77	Isaac 43
Steven Marcus 77	Lea, Homer 133
Kemp, Patience 18	Leach, Paul R. 140
Kempe, William 18	Le Baron, Isaac 34
KEMPTHORN, Simon 220	Le Bird, Nicola 173
Kendall, Elizabeth 230	Thomas 173
Kenly, (Lieut.) 101, 103, 104, 105	Lee, Fitzhugh (Major Gen'l) 97
Kennedy, Noah 69	Jesse M. (Major Gen'l) 139
William 70	Mary 28
Kent, Henry 237	Robert 28
Joseph 32	Legarda, Benito 112 Leнман, Rose 76
Samuel 34 Kerley, Henry 257	LEONARD, Achsah 211
KERWIN, Arthur R. 112	Alanson 211, 213
Kibler, Emily 61	Alexander 214
Kilham, Elizabeth 233	Alice Deborah 215
Kimball, Aaron 202	Alice Lillian 219
Abigail 201, 202	Almira 217
Alice 57	Amos 209
Asa 64	Amy 210, 213
Benjamin 201, 202	Andrew 215 Andrew H. 211
Caleb 201, 234 Daniel 202	Annice 213
Dean 202	Anson 71, 78, 79, 171, 172, 216, 218
Elizabeth 201	Asa 71, 171, 212, 214, 215, 216, 218
Eunice 202	Asabel 211
Hannah 201	Bartlett 211
Henry 201	Benjamin 205, 212
John 56, 57, 58, 64, 201, 202	Betsey 212
Joseph 202	Bird Anson 219
Joshua 202	Byron Stephen 219
Lavina 235 Martha 201	Caroline 210 Charles 215, 217
Mary 58, 62, 64, 65, 69, 201, 202	Charles Edwin 212
Mercy 202	Charles Ezekiel 215
Moses 202	Charles F. 211
Nathaniel 202	Charlotte Ann 212
Philemon 202	Charlotte Perley 218
Rebecea 201	Clara Evangeline 217
Richard 201	Daniel 212, 213
Sarah 201, 202, 234	Deborah 206
Stephen 56, 58, 202	Deliverance 205
Thomas 201, 233	Diana 214 Fibonagar 200, 212, 212
King, Samuel 204	Ebenezer 209, 212, 213
Susanna 204	Edmund D. 211

Leonard (continued)	Mehitable 212
Elbridge 216	Mercy 206
Eleazer Cary 209	Milton Asa 217
Elisha 210	Milton D. 211
Elizabeth 204, 206, 209, 212	Moses 204, 209
Emeline 211, 213 Emerson Baker 219	Myra Maria 218
Enoch 204	Nathan 209, 210, 213, 215 Olive 209, 210, 211, 212
Ephriam 205	Orville 214, 215
Erastus 214, 216	Phineas 210
Ernest H. 218	Phoebe Ann 217
Esther 71, 79, 80, 84, 209	Polly 212
Esther Adelaide 217	Porter 215
Esther (Brown) 171, 216	Prentiss 210
Esther Elizabeth 78, 219	Rachel 210
Eunice 210	Richard 213
Experience 205	Roa 211
Ezekiel 215	Rose Antoinette 215
Ezra 210	Roxa 210
Fannie Sophia 213	Rufus 210
Florence Augusta 217	Sabra 211
Franklin 217	Sally 212, 213
Fred Anson 219 George 215	Samuel 203, 204, 206, 207, 208, 209, 211, 212, 213, 214
Hannah 205, 209	Sarah 204, 205, 206, 209, 212
Harriet Abby 212	Simeon 211
Harriet Augusta 219	Solomon 203, 204, 205, 206
Henrietta 217	Spicer 210
Henry 213-217	Stephen 214, 216
Herbert A. 218	Sumner 211
Isaac 205	Susanna 205
Isabel 213	Tamma 214
Jacob 204, 205	Temperance 211
James 212	Truman 210
James Gains 211	Tryphena 211
Jane 209	William 211, 212, 213 William Anson 219
Jeane 215 Jemima 209	William Elbridge 217
John 204, 206, 212, 213, 214, 231	William Wallace 213
John Sumner 211	Wyman 214
Jonas 210	Ziporah 209
Joseph 204, 205, 212	Leslie, George (Rev.) 234
Joshua 209	Lester, Maria A. (Belcher) 212
Josiah 204	Leverich, William 177
Keziah 211	Lewis, Alonzo 172
Laura 211, 213	Alvin 172
Levi 211, 218	Amanda 219
Lewis 213	Anna 210
Lewis D. 211	Corwin 172
Liberty 213	David C. 219
Lillian Porter 219 Lodawick Alanson 213	Dora 172 Edith 172
Lois 210	Emerson 172
Louisa 217	Essie 172
Lovina 213	Mary 219
Lucy 211, 212	LIFFITT, Christopher 60
Lura 218	LILLIE, Blanch 218
Lydia 208, 209, 211, 212, 214	Lindsey, Isabel 213
Lyman 211	Moses 213
M. A. 76	Robert 211
Manning 212	Sophia 213
Maria 213, 217	William 213
Martha 205	Lindsley, Demas 242
Marvin 210, 212	John 242
Mary 203, 205, 206, 209, 212, 213, 215	Sarah (Rainor) 242
Mary Florella 215 Mary L. 219	LITTLE, (Colonel) 170 Otis 43
Mary L. 219 Mary Lester 212	Samuel 44
Mary Louisa 218	Lock, Sarah 194

McCormick, Mary 218
Ruth (Hanna) 141
McDuffee, Mary J. 236
McKnight, Lovina 213
McNab, Alexander (Col.) "Sandy" 146
McNEAR, Jane 261
Madison, James (President) 159
Madockes, Richard (Rev.) 174
Maker, Deliverance 222
Maloney, Charles Hiram 219
Florence Elizabeth 219
Forest D. 219
Hiram 218
Malvar, (Gen'l) 116, 117
Manes, Sally 244
Manley, Elizabeth 205
Hannah 205
Ichabod 205
Mary 205
Nathaniel 205
Rebecca 205
Manter, Joseph 221
March, Peyton C. (Major) 110
Mariano 116
Marsh, Abigail 194
Hannah 210
Isaac 212
Parma 172
Marshall, John 213
(Major) 142
N. B. 131
Martin, Charles H. (Brig. Gen'l) 143
Christopher 14, 15
Sarah 234
Martindale, Isaac 43
Marvin, Charlotte 218
John 218
John Leonard 218
Marguerite 218
Mary Elizabeth 218
Mary Ophelia 198
Stephen Anson 218
Mascardo (General) 105
Massasoit 15, 35, 36
Masterson, Blandina 179
Mary 180
Richard 179, 180
MATHER, Cotton (Rev.) 240
MAY, Dorothy 18
Maynard, John 257
Mayo, Hannah 167
John (Day) 167
John (Rev.) 167
MEAD, Cordelia 260
John 172
John Andrew 172
Mark Baker 172
Mary Emerson 172
Meader, William 214, 215
MEANY, (Capt.) 145
MEECH, Lucy 209
MEECHAM, Phoeba 213
Mellano, Baletin 115
Mellowes, Abraham 174
Mengote, Damiano 130
Menter, Mary 236
MEREHEW, Mary 11
Merrill, Mary 29
Transferring Tracery 20
Mignel, (General) 105

MILLER, Alexander 210	Thankful 187
Joannah 242 Mills, Edward 250	NIGHTENGALE, family of 8
Elizabeth 249	Blanche 1, 2
John 249	William 1
Sarah 250	Noel, Baptist 5 Henry 5
MINER, Charlotte 211	Nofies, Francisco 130
MINTER, Desire 17, 26	Norris, George W. 87
MITCHELL, Jacob 24, 39	Norton, Thankful 227
Mixer, Joana 257 Moncare, Mamerto 130	Nowell, Elizabeth 234
Money, Jonathan 182	Noye, de La, Philip 184
Monroe, William 44	NUNAMAKER, Eva Catherine 197
Monson, Jose 117	NUTMAN, James 241
Montances, Antonio 130	NyE—Nie, (——) 178
Pablo 120	Benjamin 177 Mary 177
Gomes 130	Mercy 183, 184
Montenegro, (Colonel) 110	1120103 100, 104
Montesinos, S. M. (Major) 156	Oaks, Josiah 186
Moody, Mary 195 Moon, Abigail 46	O'Brien, L. M. (Major) 103, 104
John 46	Udding, Margaret 232
Moonanum, Wamsuta 36	Olds, Emeline 211
Moore, Charles L. (Dr.) 245	ORCUTT, Jacob 205
Cynthia 211	Martha 205
John 257	William 205
Nathaniel 241	Otis, (General) 98, 99, 102, 103, 108, 112, 11- John 167
Sarah 258	Mary 27
Sybil 258 MORE Joseph 17	Ovenshine, (Colonel) 160
More, Jasper 17 Morgan, Daniel 211, 212	(General) 99
John Hunt 79, 80	OVERTON, Rose 174
Morris, Mary 242	Hannah 236
Morrison, John F. (Gen'l) 133	
Mary Starr 198	PADDY, William 199
Morse, Ophelia 70	Page, Florence Leonard 217
Morton, Ephraim 183, 185	Frances Augusta 217
Nathaniel 22	Grace Almira 217 John Melancthon 217
Moulton, Cecily 173 John 173	Paine, Nancy 262
Mower, Elizabeth 258	Nathaniel 49
Lydia 258	Thomas 40
Muir, Charles H. (Major Gen'l) 144, 197	Palmer, Isaac 34, 53
Munson, Samuel 242	Lucretia B. 211
Murdock, Capin 66	Nathaniel 53
Murphy, Julian Harold 61	Yet Mercy (Howland) 34, 53
Priscilla Mayme 61	PARCEL, Phebe 243
MURRAY, Lydia 235 MUSE, John 244	Stephen 243 Parker, Bethia 195
Mode, John 211	Mary 252
Naber, William H. (Sergt.) 149	Tabitha 229
Nauce, (General) 141	PARRATT, Elizabeth 238
Nebrida, Ignacio 130	Partridge, Amy 213
NEFF, Mary 207, 208	Elizabeth 19
Nelly, H. M. (Colonel) 153	George 19
Newcomb, Mary 244 William 184	Mary 209
Newell, Harriet 235	PASAY, Timoteo 123
Newland, Mary 10	Patch, Caroline 235
NEWMAN, Hopestill 250	Edmond 234 Electa 210
Samuel (Rev.) 250	Flavia 211
Newton, David 205	PATERNO, (General) 110
Edward 206	PAYN, James 217
Lydia 205	Peabody, Abigail 169
Mercy 204	Elizabeth 169
Nichols, Alpheus 215 Randall 229	Jacob 169
Nickerson, Nicholas 178	Martha 169
Sarah 178	Nathaniel 169
	Priscilla 169

Rebecca 169	PHILIP, (King) 24, 25, 27, 31, 33, 35, 36, 40, 181,
Thomas 169	193, 205
Peacock, Richard 248 Pearce, George 43	PHILIPS—PHILLIPS, Ann 10
PEASE, Polly M. 260	Benedict 10 Catherine M. 235
PECK, Harriet 60	Evelyn 61
PECKHAM, John 46	Experience 204
Peliet, Jerusha 231	Hannah 205
Perkins, Abigail 204	John 10, 50
Elizabeth 205	Margaret 10
Joseph (Dr.) 230	Richard 10
Katharine 168	Rufus 235
Sarah 233 William 169	Saraye 10
William 168 Perky, Daniel 197	Thomas 10 William 10
Perley, Martha 235	Pickering, Izette D. 235
Mary 169	Pierce, Abel 230
Ruth 233, 234	Abigail 229, 230
Sarah 234	Benjamin 230
Perry, Abigail 225, 226	Ebenezer 230
Abraham 226	Elizabeth 229, 230, 231
Alvin 227	Ezekiel 230, 231
Anthony 223	Ezekiel Baker (Major) 230
Arthur 223, 225, 226	Hannah 230
Benjamin 224 Chlor 226	Isaac 230
Chloe 226 Content 226	Jabez 230 James 230
David 226, 227, 228	Jedediah 230, 231
Deborah 223, 224	John 229
Diadamia 78, 190, 223, 226, 227, 228	Joseph 229
Edmund 224	Lydia 230
Edward 180, 191, 200, 223	Mary 229, 246
Elijah 225	Nathaniel 230, 231
Elisha 225	Persis 229
Elizabeth 224, 226	Phoebe 230, 231
Eunice 227	Rachel 230
Experience 225 Ezra 177, 191, 223, 224, 225	Robert 229 Ruth 230
Fear 226	Samuel 229
Freelove 224	Sarah 213, 229, 231
Hannah 224, 225, 226, 227	Stephen 229
Jacob 225	Thomas 229, 230
Joana 225, 226	Timothy 230
John 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228	Willard 231
John Sherwin 228	William 179, 203, 229
Lucy 226	Pierson, Abraham (Rev.) 241
Lyman 226 Margaret 200, 223	Pigslee, Elizabeth 187
Mary 224, 226	PINKHAM, Elizabeth 221 Place, Rhobe 56
Matthew Calbraith 223	PLATT, Andrew 171
Mehitable 225	Chloe A. 211
Oliver Hazzard 223	Harriet H. 172
Patience 224	Jennie 172
Phoebe 226	Plum, Abby 67
Polly 226	PLUMB, H. A. 76
Rebeeca 224	Pollard, Ann 206
Remember 224, 226, 227	John 206
Ruth 226	William 206
Salmon 227 Samuel 224	POOLE, (Capt.) 142 POPE, Seth 224
Sarah 224, 226	PORTER, Abraham 235
Silas 226, 227	Benjamin 232, 233
Temperance 226	Benjamin F. 235
Timothy 187, 225	Charles C. 235
William 226, 228	Ebenezer 234
Zachariah 226	Elizabeth 171, 218, 232, 233, 235, 236
Perseing, John H. (General) 143, 144, 146, 147,	George W. 235
148	Hannah 233, 234, 235
Peterson, Hazel M. 77	Hazabiah 234

PORTER (continued)	Joseph 239, 241, 242, 243, 244
Israel (Capt.) 232	Katherine 237
John 232, 233, 234, 236	Kezia 241, 242
Jonathan 233, 234	Margaret 237, 241
Joseph 232	Martha 244
Lydia 233, 234 Mary 232, 232, 234, 225	Mary 240, 241, 244
Mary 232, 233, 234, 235 Mehitable 234	Mehitable 242
Nehemiah 233, 234, 235	Mildred 239, 240
Pierce 235	Moses 242 Potor 228 220 240 241 242 245
Polly 235	Peter 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 245
Rodney 235	Peter (Rev.) 239, 240, 245 Providence 242, 243, 244
Sally 235	Rachel 242, 243
Samuel 232, 233, 234, 235	Robert 238, 239
Sarah 233, 234	Rupert 245
William G. 235	Samuel 240
Posov, Leonardo de 120, 121 123	Sarah 240, 241, 242, 244
Potter, Elizabeth 233	Steven 244
John 201	Thomas 237, 238
Lizzie 67	William 237, 238
Lydia 233	PRUNTY Rose 197
Prado, Vicente 114	PUTNAM, Elizabeth 233
Pratt, Elizabeth 195, 196	Israel (General) 232
Jacob 190	Jonathan (Capt.) 233
Mary (Osgood) 196	0 11 0
Thomas 196 Proven Flineboth 11	QUARLES, John 2
Prence, Elizabeth 11	Quincy de, Saher 176
Mary 11 Mercy 200	Dargmost Mr. 90
Rebecca 177, 200, 224	RALSTON, Mr. 89
Thomas (Governor) 11, 23, 35, 200, 223, 224	Randell, Mary 205 Rasin, Robert 238
PRENTICE, Adelbert Cyrus 215	RATHBURN, Thomas 67
Alpheus 259	READ—REED, Abigail 206
Ira 210	Ammity 206
Rufus, (Jr.) 212	C. Augusta 235
Prescott, Charlotte A. 236	Dernice 77
Preston, Elizabeth Baker 235	George 230
Hannah Porter 235	Isaac 206
Hiram 235	Josiah 206
William 235	(Lieut.) 153, 155
PRUDDEN—PRUDEN, Abigail 240, 241	Margaret 11
Adoniram 242	Mary 230
Agnes 238	Reeve, Alice M. 76
Alexander 244	REMINGTON, Elizabeth H. 211
Alice 237, 238	Revell, Emme 6, 7, 13
Ayers 242 Reniemin 242, 242, 244	Nicholas 6
Benjamin 242, 243, 244 Boise John 242	REYES, Alfonso 117
Caroline 244	Ciriaco De Los 115 Reynor, Elizabeth 32
Clere 238	John 32
Christian 237, 238	Rice, Daniel 257
David 244	Elizabeth 190
Edward 238	Hannah 257
Elizabeth 240, 243, 244	Mary 194
Ellen 238	Nicholas 194
Eunice 243	Paul 190
Francis 244	Sarah 190, 194
Grace 241	RICHARD, (King II) 173
Harrison 244	RICHARDSON, Lydia 234
Isaac 242, 244	Mary 229
Jane 238	RIVEIRA, (General) 116
Jennie 245	Rivers, Elizabeth 4
Jessie Frances 84, 91, 245	John (Sir) 4
Joan 237, 238 Joans 240, 241, 242	Roach, G. H. (Capt.) 104
Joana 240, 241, 242 John 237, 238, 244	ROBBIN, Laura J. 70 ROBBINS Mary J. 250
John (Rev.) 241	Robbins, Mary J. 259 Nicholas 177
John Stevens 243	Roberts, Alice 219
Jone 237	David 230

Thomas 5	Jonathan 247
Walter 5	Josiah 247
Robie, Sarah 235 Robinson (Capt.) 60	Judith 247 Mary 59, 60, 246, 247
ROBINSON, (Capt.) 60 Daniel 234	Naomi, 247
John (Rev.) 6, 13, 14, 179	Nathan 247
Susanna 234	Noah 246
ROCKINBACH, (General) 158	Rosamond 247
Rogers, Ezekiel (Rev.) 249	Ruth 246
Joseph 19	Susannah 246, 247
Root, Elihu 91	Tabitha 246
Kezia 227	Thomas 246, 247
Nathaniel 227	SEARLES, Samuel 213
ROUKE—RUCK, Robert 3, 9 Rouke 9, 10, 11	Sears, (Colonel) 213 Severance, Joseph 185
Round, John 246	Martha 186
Rounds, Sarah 32	Sewell, (Judge) 51, 252
Rous, Thomas 111	SEYMOUR, Andrew 214
Roxana, Louisa 259	Caroline 214
Rudd, Charles Hiram 217	Charles 214
Charles Leonard 217	Fanny 214
Clara Augusta 217	Freddy 214
Laura Esther 217	Hannah 251 John 214
Paul Elbridge 217 Russel, (Mr.) 48	Libbie 214
Alice A. 260	Lydia 214
Sabin, Thomas 194	Shaffer, N. L. 217
SAFFIN, John 42	Shafter, (General) 97
St. John, Oliver 175	Sharp, F. D. (Capt.) 96
Salisbury, Benjamin 63, 65	Samuel (Rev.) 232
Ephraim 246	SHEPARD—SHEPPARD, (Mr.) 162
Henry 45	Priscilla 231 Susanna 230
Susannah 246 Sandford, Robert 11	Sherley, James 179
Sandys, Edwin (Archbishop) 249	SHERMAN, Prudence 34
Edwin, (Sir) 249	Sherwin, Desire 191
George 249	Hannah 227
Henry 249, 250	Jacob 228
Margery 248, 249	Shove, Benjamin 248
Sybil 249, 250	Dorothy 252
SANGER, (General) 132	Edward 53, 248, 251, 252 Edward (Rev.) 248, 249
SAN PABLO, Atanacio 117 SANTA ANA, Atilano 117	Elizabeth 50, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253
Santos, Arcadio De Los 117	Frances 248
Ciriaco Sandi de los 117	George 248, 249, 250, 252
Pastor 117, 118, 119, 120	George (Rev.) 29, 50, 51, 167, 249, 250, 252,
SARGENT, John 30	253
Joseph 169	Hannah 51, 252
Ruth 30	Hopestill 51
William 30	Joana 29, 48, 50, 250, 251, 252, 253 Joseph 248
SAUNDERS, Anna 225 SAWYER, (Capt.) 60	Margaret 248
SAY & BROOK, (Lord) 23	Margery 249
Schwab, Eva 197	Mary 50, 248, 250, 252, 253
Schwan, (General) 114, 132	Nathaniel 250, 252
Scott, Humphrey 5	Samuel 252
Thomas 201	Sarah 50, 250, 252, 253
Ursula 201	Seth 51, 251, 252
SEABURY, Samuel 18	Thomas 51 Yet Mercy 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 59, 250, 251,
SEAGER, Barzillia 172 Hattie 172	252, 253
Jennie 172	SIMMERS, Abigail (Warren) 229
SEAMANS, Caleb 246	Simond, (Mrs.) 230
Charles 247	Skiff, James 30, 221
Freelove 53, 54, 57, 246, 247	Mary 30
Gilbert 247	Sarah 221
Hannah 247	Stephen 181, 184
James 54, 247	Skillon, John 202
John 59, 60, 247	Nathaniel 202

SMART, Thankful 188 SMITH, (Mr.) 252	Wealthy 212
Amanda 66	Woodbury 212
Benjamin 46	STEDMAN, Elizabeth 252
Bennet 187	STEEL, Cynthia 213 STERLING, John A. 87
Dudley 170	Stetson, Lidia 182
Elizabeth 187	STEVENS, Damaris 258
F. O. 129	Elizabeth 230
George 3	Jacob 209
Hannah 230, 234	Lillia 67
Jacob H. (Brig. Gen'l) 105, 106, 107, 108	Lois 230
James 66	Peter 235
John 11, 42, 182, 230	Stevenson, Thomas O. 89
Julia A. 66	STEWART, Adelaide 172
L. 46 Laban 259	Belinda 244
	Lillie 172
Margaret 77 Mary 180	Mary 172
Ralph 180	Orpha 172
Robert 213	Robert 172
Samuel 46	STINSON, Richard 188
Thankful 187, 188	Stone, Edwin M. 39, 47 Ezra 45
Thomas 174	Harriet M. 210
Uranah 66	Nathaniel 188
Uselma 83, 84	Samuel 257
William 66	William 42
Snow, Lois 190	Storrs, Samuel 178
Sobremonte, Louis 130	Sarah 178
Soule, George 203	STOTLER, Ruth K. 77
James 284	Stowe, Joan 239
Southworth, Constant 20, 49	John 239
Edward 32 Elizabeth 32, 33	STRAW, Clara Martha 77
Gideon 184	STREETON, Caleb 221
Nathaniel 35, 36	Strickland, Sidney T. 25
Thomas 19, 32, 33	Wesley 218 Willie Wesley 218
Spaulding, Lydia 230	Sturdevant, Mercy 32
Ozias 210	STURGIS, Beatrice 198
Spellman, Cassy 244	Edward (Jr.) 27
Spencer, (General) 60	Hannah 27
Spooner, Sarah 205	Samuel 186
Sprague, Polly Maria 59	Sarah 27
SPRATT, William E. 147	Sudduth, (Lieut.,) 163
SPROUL, Mary F. 236	SUMMERALL, Charles P. (Gen'l) 153
STACY, Sarah 32	Suzan, Cecily 5
STAFFORD, Patience 43	John 5
Stage, James 211 Stanborough, Elizabeth 243	Swain, Eliakim 221
Standish, Ezra 212	Priscilla 221 Sweet, Owen J. (Col.) 125
Josiah 206	Swift, Dinah 224
Myles 19, 22, 23, 24, 203, 206, 224	Ephraim 224
STANTON, Isaac Wheeler 214	I. P. (Colonel) 142
John 211	Johanna 184
(Lieut.) 153, 155, 156	Josiah 186
Lydia 211	Symonds, (Deputy Governor) 193
Sarah 212	Priscilla 168
STARK, Philip 235	Ruth 193
Samuel 235	Taber, Esther 224
STARKWEATHER, Belcher 212	John 47
Elizabeth 212	Penelope 47
Ezra 212 James 212	TAFT, Joseph 193
John 212	Taborah 261
Leonard 212	William Howard 132, 193
Mary 211, 212	Taggart, E. F. (Major) 114 Tanner, Almira 244
Mehitable 212	Tarbox, Mary 227
Olive 212	Taylor, Abigail 187
Samuel 212	Anne 29
Thomas 212	Edward 29

Sarah 220	Townson, Polls, 211
Tecson, (Colonel) 115, 116	Tourgee, Polly 211
	Thomas J. 211
TERRY, Anna 214	Tourrillor, Abraham 60
THACHER—THATCHER, Alice 254	Towner, Joseph 170
Anne 254	Townsend, Nathan 45
	Rose 30
Anthony 39, 254 Avery 254	Tracy, Abial 212
Benjamin 255	Asahel 209 Treat, Salmon (Rev.) 209
Bethia 25, 39, 43, 255	Trias, (General) 116
(Dr.) 48	Trimmer, Francis 76
Edith 255	Trowbridge, James 258
Giles 254	Sarah 258
John 27, 254, 255	TRUANT, Morris 204
Judah 255	Tubbs, Clara T. 219
Mary 27, 254	Tucker, Asa 227
Peter 255	Tufts, Peter 229
Peter (Rev.) 254, 255	TUPPER, Bethia 224
Thomas 254	Samuel 187
William 255	TURNER, David 190
THAYER, Phoebe 194	Ely 190
THICKENS, Ralph 6, 13	Hamilton 190
THOMAS, Bethiah 29	Jeptha 190
Ebenezer 29	Lion (Sion) 189, 190
Elizabeth 29	Manoah 190
Jane 239	Myer 190
Jedidiah 29	Perry 190
Jeremiah 29, 35	Ruth 190
Lydia 29	Silas 190
Mary 29	Susan W. 74
Nathaniel 29	Susannah 189
Priscilla 29	Zaphthah 74
Sarah 29, 35	TUTTLE, Samuel 210
Thankful 29	Sarah 244
William 34, 239	Tyler, Henry 67
Thompson, Clark W. (Major) 158	Lydia 234
Dorothy 252	Mehitable 211
Henry 252	Moses 233, 234
John 211 John W. 70	Sarah 233 Tymmys, Thomas 237
Phoebe 244	Tyrell, Justus 244
Stephen 236	I IREDD, JUSTUS ZEE
THORNDIKE, Hepsibah 170	Underhill, Ann 235
THORNHILL, John 59	David 235
Thornton, Mary 255	Untermeyer, Samuel 88
THOROGOOD, Gunnora 1	Uster, Ann 9
THROOP—THROPE, Beatrice 59	0 × 1 = 12 0
John 46	Vaughn, Betty 35
Lida 172	Elizabeth 34, 35
William 50	George 34
Tiffin, Esther 59	Vellaneuva, Francisco 115
TILDEN, Samuel Jones 82	Von Berg, Olga 76
TILLOTSON, Master 142	· -
TILLEY—TILLY, Catherine 17, 18	Wade, Benjamin 72, 75
Elizabeth 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 24, 25,	Hannah 211
28, 31, 32, 39, 40, 41, 44, 48, 54, 61, 239	Sarah 170
John 17, 18	WAITE, Elizabeth L. 211
Tinan, Sarah 244	WAKEMAN, Elizabeth (Woodruff) 211
Tinio, (General) 110	WALCOTT—WOLCOTT, Elizabeth 194
Tinkham, John 35	Waldo, (Deacon) 195
TITLEY, Audrey 173	Rebecca 195
John 173 Timus Elizabeth 261	WALKER, Elizabeth P. 244
Titus, Elizabeth 261 Tobey, Samuel 187	John 11, 28 Joseph 240
Seth 226	Mary 11
TOBIE, Thomas 181, 182	Zachariah 240, 241
Tompkins, Elizabeth (Bridge) 242	Wall, Thomas (Sir) 192
John 243	WALLACE, Henry Agard 160
	,

Walley, Elizabeth 51	WARREN, Francis E. 154, 155
George 51 Hannah 51	Frances E. (Mrs.) 154
Hannah (Bacon) 250	Fred 154 Mony 182
John 42, 48, 252	Mary 182 Reuben 79
Thomas 51, 167	Richard 24, 182
WALTON, Roland 213	Warwick, Earl of 22
WARD, Abigail 259	Washburn-Washburne, Abigail 204
Artemas 258	Jonathan 224
Asa 258	Marjorum 204
Azubah 258	Samuel 205
Bethiah 257	Thomas 204, 205
Betsey 259	WATERMAN, Margaret 76
Cordelia 260 Dallas Adelbert 92, 260	Watson, Elkanah 25
Daniel 257, 258	WAY, John 221 WEAVER (BEAVER?), Mary Ann 197
David 258, 259	Webster, (Lieut.) 101
Deborah 256, 258	Michael 189
Dolly 259	Welby, Richard 174
Dominada 257	Weller, Jonathan 213
Earl M. 260	Wells, Briant H. (Brig. Gen'l) 144
Elbridge E. 260	W. B. (Captain—Navy) 152
Eleazer 257	West, Samuel 34
Elizabeth 256, 257 Elmira 259	Weston, Sutherick J. 235
Emily 259	WHALE, Elizabeth 257 WHALLEY, William 220
Ephraim 259, 260	WHEATON, Lloyd (General) 84, 96, 97, 98, 99,
Esther 258	100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108
Eunice 257, 258	109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117
Hannah 256, 257, 258	123, 124, 126, 139
Harlow 259	WHEELDING—(WHILLDEN), Joseph 27
Henry 258	WHEELER, Mary 230
Henry C. 260	Wheelock, Lydia 257
Hopestill 257	Whippey, James 221
Increase 257	Whitpele, Mary 32
Isaac 258, 259 Joanna 256	WHITE, G. W. Howland (Mr.) 23 Gideon 34
John 256, 259	Jane 6
Loise 259	John 262
Lydia 257	Lucy 67
Mabelle Estelle 92, 94, 260	Martin 67
Marion 260	Peregrine 48
Mary 256, 258, 259	Resolved 18, 19
Naham 259	Samuel 65
Nahum H. 260	T. Howland (Rev.) 23
Nancy 259 Nathaniel 258	William 18, 19
Newton 260	WHITNEY, Joanna 257 WHITTEMORE, Thomas 229
Obadiah 256, 257	WHITTINGHAM, Richard 174
Patty 258	Wickman, C. P. 96
Phineas 258, 259	Wiehl, Fred 197
Richard 256, 257	Wilbraham, Ellen (Hellen) 173
Samuel 256, 258	Thomas 173
Sarah 258, 259	Wilcox, Augustus 262
Susanna 92	Jirah 69
Thankful 258	Norman 210
Trowbridge 259 Uriah 258	WILDER, Roger 17 Stowe 95
Weltha 260	Wildes, Sylvanus 170
Welthy 259	WILDMAN, Caroline 244
William 256, 257, 258, 259	Wilkerson, (Judge) 89
Wardell, Joseph 44	Wilkinson, William 48
Martha 44	Willard, Frances 83
WARDWELL, John 46	WILLET, Thomas 31, 239
Joseph 46	WILLIAMS, Alice 217
Martha 46	Anne Elizabeth 198
Stephen 46 William 46	Abraham 256 Bothshola 205
William 46 Warner, Sarah 202	Bathsheba 205 Betsey 215
IT AMILIA, DAIAH AUA	Detacy 210

(Colonel) 127 Daniel 209 Mercy 194, 262 Mercy 194, 202
Priscilla 246
Susanna 44, 54, 246, 247
Tabitha 54, 246
W. O. 112
William 44, 54, 246
Woodbury, Thomas 233 Deborah 215 Edward 217 Elisha 215 Frank 217 Frederic 217 Hiran E. 217 WOODMANSEY, Elizabeth 193 WOODMANSEY, Elizab Woods, Hannah 204 WORDEN, Mary 178 Peter 178 WRIGHT, Caleb 30 Jane 172 WYATT, Alice 192 WYKE, Peter 1, 2 Israel 210 Joseph 217 Lewis 217 Louise 217 Margaret 217 Nathaniel 251 Nicholas 207 Roger 31 Ruth 214 YATES-YEATS, Abner 58, 64, 68, 194, 262 Ruth 214
WILLIAMSON, Timothy 11
WILLIS, Benjamin 205
WILLMOTE, Margaret 220
WILMOT, (Capt.) 60
WILSON, Archibald B. 117
John M. (Brig. Gen'l) 132
WINCH, Lucy A. 213
WING, Edward 185
WINGE, John 19 Amariah 262 Amos 69, 73 Amos (Rev.) 262 Archibald 261 Barzeel 262 Chester 58 Elizabeth 261 Gilberd 262 James 261, 262 Winge, John 19 John 58, 64, 261, 262 Winslow 178 Edward (Gov.) 10, 11, 22, 23, 24, 34, 35, 250
Jonathan 30
Rebecca 255
Winson, Rosaline 215
Winter, Christopher 20 Laban 58 Lucina 64, 67, 68, 73, 262 Lydia 262 Marcy 261 Mehitable 261 WINTER, Christopher 20
WINTERDE, (Governor) 254
WITHERBEE, Hannah 204
WITHERILL, Lydia 252
Theopolis 252
William (Rev.) 252
Wood, Abigail 206
Daniel 247 Mercy 262
Paul 72, 261
Susannah 56, 58
YENDES, Catharine A. 215
YONG, Alice 238 Young, (Colonel) 133 (Géneral) 132 John 11 Youngs, Bethia 242 Daniel 247 Ephraim 35 Freelove 44, 54 James 257











3- -

